







T H E

L I F E

And entertaining

A D V E N T U R E S

O F

Mr. CLEVELAND,

Natural SON of

OLIVER CROMWELL,

Written by HIMSELF.

Giving a particular Account of his Unhappiness in Love, Marriage, Friendship, &c. and his great Sufferings in *Europe* and *America*.

Intermixed with Reflections, describing the Heart of Man in all its Variety of Passions and Disguises; also some curious Particulars of *Oliver's* History and Amours, never before made publick.

V O L. II.

D U B L I N:

Printed by S. POWELL,

For WILLIAM HEATLY, Bookseller,
at the *Bible* and *Dove* in *College-Green*.

M D C C X X V I.

1736

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Getty Research Institute



THE
L I F E
O F
Mr. *CLEVELAND*,
N A T U R A L S O N
O F
Oliver Cromwell.

B O O K V.



E A C E, tranquillity, and an exact order, being now so happily establish'd among the *Abaquis*, I did not think of multiplying their laws and obligations; but apply'd myself wholly to make them strictly observe those which were already enacted. This was the

only method to secure the fruit of my labours, which would have been very uncertain after my departure, had I not taken care to thus bind, as it were, the savages by the chains of habit. We spent some months in repeating our usual exercises, and in expectation of the re-

turn of the savages whom I had sent to *Virginia*, with the person whom Mrs. *Lallin* had sent to me. I post-pon'd, till their return, my forming such a resolution, as might bring us to a certainty with regard to the viscount's fate; hoping always that they'd hear where he was, and what had befallen him. I cou'd not judge exactly, of the length of the voyage he had undertaken, or the time he'd be oblig'd to spend in it. This circumstance perplex'd me more than any thing else; I had been frequently determin'd, particularly after my wife's delivery, to set out with my whole family; and endeavour to find out the way to *Carolina*. 'Twas not but I expected that the *Abaquis* would oppose this strongly, as they now lov'd us more than ever: but then I possibly might have deceiv'd them, by assuring them that we would soon return among them. We should have taken a guard along with us, which would have made 'em conclude, that we did not design to abandon 'em; and these we might have easily got rid of, had heaven been propitious to our design, by directing us to some *English* or *Spanish* colony.

How dangerous soever this resolution might be, yet this was the only one we cou'd think of taking, in case we should have no news of the viscount. At last I yielded to it, but in the same manner as a sick man does to swallow a nauseous potion, which he dreads very near as much as his sickness. I even communicated it to my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who immediately approv'd it, and were resolv'd to venture, whatever might be the consequences. We were now detain'd by no other motives, than the faint hope we entertain'd, that our savages might happen to arrive when we least expected them. We were not disappointed, for word was brought me one day, that they were come. My surprize was so great, that I cou'd scarce support myself; but it increas'd prodigiously, when I saw my wife seiz'd with fear, and fall into a swoon.

If the reader considers, how uneasy we must be, after having liv'd fifteen months among savages, and not heard a single word of the viscount for upwards of a twelve-month; that the least glimmerings of hope must work after an extraordinary manner upon our minds. But in case

case it were not joy, 'twas at least our uncertainty with regard to the news we should hear, that occasion'd these unusual tumults. However, we were seen to feel emotions of a less dubious nature; they were those of a deadly fear, and consequently of the deepest grief.

The savages had first arriv'd in *Pawhatan*. There they had seen Mrs. *Lallin*, who had procur'd them a guide to accompany them to *Carolina*. This man being a *Virginian*, and understanding *English*, they had travell'd along the sea-coast, enquiring, as they went, whether any one had seen the viscount, or knew what was become of him. But all this being to no purpose, and despairing ever to find him, they had return'd towards the valley of the *Abaquis*, in the midst of innumerable dangers, and not knowing in the least whither they were going. At last chance, or rather providence, who wou'd not suffer us to be any longer in the dark with respect to our misfortunes, and prepar'd us others of a much more grievous nature; brought into their way, as they were crossing a vast desert, one of those brave *Abaquis* who had guarded the viscount. Him they had brought along with 'em, and we heard from his mouth, the sad accident which had happen'd to my lord and his companions.

That unhappy nobleman was not advanc'd above four or five days in his journey, before he was attack'd by a company of savages, about the same number with the people he had with him. These he had put to flight with very little loss on his side. However, these wandering barbarians, that inhabited the large desert of *Drexara*, who pass for the most cruel people in all *America*, were not discourag'd at their defeat. Remembring that the viscount was mounted and cloath'd, and also the *Englishmen* who attended upon him, they resolv'd to fall upon them again, in hopes of plunder. They had, however, very much increas'd their numbers, and intercepting the *Abaquis* in their way, at some distance from the place where they had fought; they fell upon them with so much fury, and shot such a shower of arrows, that they kill'd several on the spot. The rest terrified to see themselves surrounded in a moment with enemies; and finding it impossible for them to fly, had laid down their arms, in hopes of obtaining quarter. These, accord-

ingly, remain'd prisoners, and also the viscount. The victors having divided the spoil, separated, and took different ways. Most of the savages of the desert of *Drexara* are man-eaters; at least they devour their prisoners. These have no fix'd dwelling, but are incessantly hunting after beasts, and after men, whom they look upon as their best game. The only reason why they are call'd savages of *Drexara*, is, because as they ever seek out for mountains and woods, as the places where game most abounds; they therefore are fond of this vast desert, which is full of wild beasts, because 'tis cover'd with forests of a vast extent.

I trembled and was in the utmost consternation, while I listned to this first part of the savage's relation; and did not dare to desire him, to inform me of what I wanted most to know. So dreadful an opening, made me conclude that his lordship had come to some fatal end. My wife, on the other side, was in such distress, that the bare sight of her must have awak'd the most tender sensations of pity. We continued very attentive to the savage, without daring to speak a single word. Happily, says he, my lord, and twenty of our companions, of whom I was one, fell into the hands of a band of wild people, who are the least cruel, and not so greedy as the rest of human flesh. Not but they devour'd six of our companions, to satisfy their carnivorous appetites; but they are us'd to go every year on the bank of a great river, where they meet with white men who are cloath'd; and with these they exchange their prisoners, for such things as they may have a fancy to. Myself and fifteen others were kept alive for that purpose, and were made to travel a very long way to the river side; but the white men did not come this year. Upon this, we were carried back towards the desert of *Drexara*, in order to wait till the next year. However, says the savage, I am sure that all my companions won't live so long; for four out of the sixteen have been eat since our return from the river. He afterwards told us in what manner he had escap'd, and how he was so happy as to meet with three of his countrymen, after having wandred for two months, without knowing whither they were going.

I have since heard, that those white men, with whom the savages traded for their prisoners, were the *Spaniards* of *Pensacola*, who go up, at a certain season, the great river of the *Holy Ghost*; and purchase slaves for an inconsiderable quantity of brandy, or some merchandises of no value.

I order'd the *Abaquis* to withdraw, after he had ended his relation; and the deep affliction with which I was seiz'd, not permitting me to attend to my wife's grief, I did, in an instant, what I not only had never done, but what I thought it impossible for me to do. I conceal'd in my heart, the deepest pangs; and tho' I was ready to sink under the weight of my own anguish, I yet had so much strength of mind as to assume an air of tranquillity; and thereupon endeavour'd to comfort my wife as well as I cou'd. But 'tis on this occasion that I am afraid, no one will henceforwards pity me. Such a part as I have been able to act, and which I shall now exhibit to my readers, will be look'd upon as so strange a one, and possibly so extraordinary and uncommon, that in case my readers are so good as to indulge me their belief, they will undoubtedly think that it merits admiration rather than pity. Before a person can be sensible to the tender emotions of compassion, he must either have been tortur'd with the pangs which another feels, or else know that his mind is capable of being affected by them. But no man, sure, ever labour'd under such calamities as mine and indeed few will be able to comprehend them.

The resolution I therefore form'd that instant, of suppressing the inward pangs which tortur'd my heart, became a rule to me; and I have since observ'd it with a surprizing strength of mind. However, I did not perceive the prodigiously difficult task I had set myself: But the great affection I had for my wife, whose soul I desir'd to fortify by my example, engag'd me to make this kind of vow in secret, which perhaps was too rash a one. I yet have been so much master of myself as to put it in execution, but then what pangs has it cost me! and how imbitter'd is the remembrance of it! Dearest *Fanny*! says I to my wife, we are to thank heaven for even suffering us to know what is become of your father. Providence can never fail to assist innocence and virtue. The truth

of this he himself has prov'd, by thus falling into the hands of savages, who are not so barbarous as their companions; and the same protection will be indulg'd him to the end. Perhaps he may e're this time, have been deliver'd up to those whites, whom the *Abaquis* mention'd. These must either be *English*, *French* or *Spaniards*; and of what part soever of *Europe* they may be, he'll be safe, in case he's got out of the hands of the savages. Yes, says she, arguing but too justly on the subject of our fears; yes, provided he is got out of the hands of the savages; but what probability is there that he has got out of the hands of those bloody-minded wretches? 'Tis not above two months, according to the relation of the *Abaquis*, since they return'd from their great river; they won't return to it till next year, and who knows whether they'll spare my dear father's life so long? She burst into tears as she spoke these words; and her great tenderness representing the thing she fear'd in its most dreadful shapes; she seem'd to be under as great terror, as tho' she had seen his lordship really devour'd by savages. To comfort her, I observ'd, that as those savages were us'd to barter their prisoners, there was no room to doubt but they'd still continue to do it; besides, that I'd prevent the effects of their cruelty, I being resolv'd to put myself at the head of two thousand *Abaquis*; and to set out, by the direction of the savage who had accompanied the viscount, for the desert of *Drexara*; that heaven would conduct me in this enterprize, as it so nearly concern'd his goodness and justice; in fine, that I hop'd to meet with the viscount which was the only difficult point; and that I wou'd rescue him with the greatest ease.

My wife had too much judgment to delude herself with false hopes. She was as sensible as I cou'd be, how difficult it wou'd be to put my design in execution; and this was the resolution she took that instant. I am persuaded, says she to me, that you'll never abandon my father, and that you'll perform your promise in all it's extent; but I am sure, that an attempt like this, will be very dangerous and uncertain. You cannot leave me here behind you. Consider what may happen to me in your absence? not to mention, that if you once abandon

don me, 'tis a thousand to one, whether ever we come together again. The only thing I cou'd then do, wou'd be to accompany you in your expedition; and then, we'll either meet with my father, or die in our search after him — How impracticable soever this proposal might be, I yet cou'd not, with any shadow of reason, oppose it. However, I laid down several reasons, which made it almost impossible, as we had not coaches, horses, &c. for either herself and my daughter, Mrs. *Riding* and our women. This appear'd to me an insurmountable difficulty. She answer'd, that she was sensible it was so, but assur'd me, that she was not any ways terrified upon that account; that they would travel on foot, as long as they were able to walk; that in case they should happen to be weary, they might easily make a kind of litter, which our *Abaquis* should carry; and that in case I set out with two thousand, they might carry it by turns, with very little trouble to themselves. I then mention'd provisions as another great difficulty; but that she assur'd me, she would run the hazard of wanting; and resolv'd, in like manner as I did, to depend on the prodigious number of wild beasts which are found in all parts of *America*, of which our savages, says she, may kill as many as they please.

We'll set out, says I, clasping her in my arms; we'll set out, dearest of creatures. I admire your courage, and will persuade myself that heaven wou'd not have inspir'd you with it were we not to succeed. I acquainted the *Abaquis* with our resolution a little after; but mentioned it only as an expedition, which I was desirous of undertaking, purely to deliver the viscount from his captivity, and revenge the death of our companions. The whole people accepted of the offer with the utmost joy; but as I depended more on bravery and an exact discipline, than numbers, I told them, that I wou'd have those only march under me, who had learn'd the military arts under Mr. *Youngster*; and of these, I wou'd form a body of about 2000 strong and resolute fellows. Those whom we left behind us in the settlement, seem'd very loth to have me and my whole family leave 'em; but they did not once suspect, that this was the last time they'd ever set eyes on us more. Upon any other

occasion but this, we cou'd not have left this good people but with the utmost regret; who, during our long stay among them, had discover'd the utmost docility, submission, and affection. I can never forget the great kindness they shew'd us; and I have besought heaven, ever since I was among them, to increase the knowledge and love of virtue, with which I endeavour'd to inspire them.

Tho' I had fix'd upon a number who were to follow me in our expedition; I yet could not refuse some particular persons who had always given me the highest testimonies of their affection, their desire of accompanying me in it. I was heartily sorry that I cou'd not gratify old *Iglou* in this particular; who, not considering his great age and weakness, offer'd to follow me round the world. However, I permitted his daughter *Rem* to attend upon my wife; not to mention that her great fondness for us merited this recompence; I consider'd that she might be of great service to *Fanny* upon a thousand occasions; at last, we set out, after having besought God to smile upon our journey, and poured out our hearts before him in a most devout manner.

Heavens! what a setting out was this, and what an undertaking! I hardly knew whither to bend my steps. All I suppos'd, was, that as I was in *Florida* beyond the *Apalatian* mountains; the gulph of *Mexico* was to the south of me, and the coasts of the north sea to the east. I believ'd, that very probably the white men whom the savages had mention'd to me, were *Spaniards*, who came up some great river from the gulph of *Mexico*; for I did not know of any as far as the point of *Tegesta*, which was as broad as that the savage spoke to me of. With regard to the desert of *Drexara*, which is the name of it translated, I had never once heard the least mention of it: The only idea I cou'd have of its situation, was, from comparing his relation, with the opinion I entertain'd that the white men the *Abaquis* told me of, were *Spaniards*; and I concluded from thence, that this desert must be situated to the south of us, or a little more to the right, westward. Indeed, this did not agree with the way which the three savages whom I sent into *Carolina*,

lina, had gone; and with their meeting with the prisoner: But then I knew by their own discourse, that they had often travelled at random; and I judg'd by the great number of miles they travell'd, that they had gone prodigiously out of their way. Such were the lights, or rather the profound obscurity, which was to guide us in our unhappy voyage. I must nevertheless confess, in order that I may not give too terrible an idea of my perplexity, that I entertain'd another hope, without which it would have been the utmost folly for me, to have thus thrown myself into a labyrinth; and this was, that I should meet with several nations who would set me in the way; and being accompanied with so great a body of men, I was not under any apprehensions from their cruelty and barbarity.

We travell'd for the first week with no manner of difficulty. Tho' the weather was prodigiously hot, our *Abaquis* did not seem to faint. They carried the four litters in which the women were, without the least reluctance; and as they reliev'd one another, upon the least sign or symptom of weariness, they did not seem to be in the least fatigued. I encourag'd them as well as I cou'd, by marching at their Head; and finding that I stood in the greatest need of their assistance, I put on an air of resolution, purposely to animate them. Nevertheless, whether they were not as much inur'd to fatigue, as the wandring savages who are ever upon their feet; or that the heat and change of air might take away their spirits; a great number of them were on a sudden attack'd with a dangerous illness, which oblig'd us to stop. I thereupon made choice of an agreeable meadow, in which I resolv'd to continue for some days. This meadow was at a very little distance from a river, whose banks were cover'd with tufted trees, which afforded a most grateful shade, and kept off the burning rays of the sun. But notwithstanding this precaution, yet thirty of the bravest of my savages died in two days. The swift progress the disease made, shew'd but too plainly, that it was of a contagious nature. I lost fifteen men the day after; and word was brought me continually, that a great many others were brought to death's door. In less than seven days near two hundred were carried off, and there were eight

eight hundred in a very languishing condition. As I was under the most terrible apprehensions, for fear my wife should catch the infection, I oblig'd her and her women, to retire at a distance from the main body; and forbid any savage, upon pain of death, to go near 'em. I order'd Mr. *Youngster* to take care of them; and in the mean time, I endeavour'd to find out some remedy against a disease, which made such sad havock among the poor *Abaquis*. But the brave, the faithful *Youngster*, was himself seiz'd with this deadly distemper; and I saw him breathe his last, two days after, in the most dreadful agonies.

The wrath of heaven pursued me. I was undoubtedly more to be pitied, than the many unhappy wretches who expir'd before my eyes; altho' my constitution was so good, as to preserve me from the infected air which I breath'd every instant. I was continually in the midst of the *Abaquis*, exhorting, comforting and enquiring into the nature and symptoms of their several distempers. I separated the sick from those who were not yet infected; I caus'd the dead bodies to be carried off, for fear they should spread the contagion; I flew up and down in all places, I myself assisted in the most laborious part of the work, and took more pains than the meanest of the savages. However, I would often consider, that the inconsiderate zeal I show'd, might prove of fatal consequence to my wife. I was always afraid, at my going home to her in the evening, of infecting her with the contagious air I had breath'd. Upon this, I resolv'd to wash myself every day in the river before I went home to her; and not to wear the same skins with which I cover'd myself when I visited the savages. How dreadful wou'd have been the consequences, had I myself catch'd the distemper! dreadful fear! I diverted my mind from that reflection, in the same manner as a criminal who is sentenc'd to die, does the thoughts of his execution. I wou'd assume, tho' this was the greatest pain to me, a chearful countenance whenever I went to my wife; and so far from acquainting her that the disease spread more and more, so as to carry off twelve, fifteen, and sometimes twenty *Abaquis* every day; I on the contrary told her

her that all our people grew better. She would feign as tho' she believ'd me; and at the same time that I thus palliated our evils, purposely to prevent her taking them too much to heart; she, on the other side, wou'd pretend an entire ignorance in that affair, for fear of giving me pain.

In this dreadful calamity, 'twas a great happiness that herself, our little daughter, and the women, continued in perfect health. We spent three weeks in this place, and did not once see all that time, the least likelihood that our miseries wou'd be lessen'd. Near four hundred of my savages were dead, and as the infection still continued to spread, I was justly apprehensive that it wou'd sweep them all away. I therefore resolv'd to try what a change of air wou'd do; and accordingly order'd the camp to remove to an eminence, which did not appear to be above a day's journey, from the wide-extended plains where we then lay. I commanded the savages to march off with all imaginable dispatch, but perceiv'd that they were not pleas'd with the news. Tho' the place I directed them to, lay at no great distance from us; yet as it wou'd carry us farther off from the valley of the *Abaquis*, some of them gave me to understand, that they were absolutely determin'd to return home as soon as possible. This was a fresh subject of uneasiness to me; however, I wou'd not insist upon their removal the way I directed, purposely that I might be the better able to find out directly how they might be dispos'd. I soon found, that they had assembled for several nights together, in order to consider what resolution it wou'd be proper for them to take; and as they were grown much more unruly since Mr. *Youngster's* death; they had murmur'd against me, as tho' I were the only cause of all their calamities. I therefore found 'em so exasperated, and so little dispos'd to obedience, that I was afraid they wou'd rebel in a little time against me. This must necessarily be of very fatal consequence. The least, and that which I must naturally expect, was, that they all would abandon me at once; and by that means expose me and my whole family, to the mercy of wild beasts, or savages, who are equally cruel. I spent some days, in soliciting and entreating those whose fidelity I least suspected; and be-
sought

sought them to do their utmost, to bring over their companions. This they endeavour'd, but to no purpose. Even the sight of five or six hundred of their countrymen, who were still sick; and whom consequently they wou'd be oblig'd to leave behind 'em, did not make the least impression on the rebels; and cou'd not engage 'em to stay, at least, till they were recover'd. None of the reasons I gave were any ways effectual, and they refus'd to listen to any of 'em; like to a flock of sheep, who run impetuously together towards the same place, when they are excited by some impulse, the cause of which is even unknown to 'em. In a word, the once submissive, obliging *Abaquis*, were now a multitude of capricious and inflexible savages.

I now look'd upon the evil as past all cure. The only remedy I cou'd think of, and which I resolv'd to try, ruin'd the whole affair; as it gave those worthless wretches an opportunity of executing their resolutions at once. I caus'd them to assemble round me; when reproaching them, haughtily, with their inconstancy and perfidy; I added, that I was nevertheless assur'd that these were few in number, and that great numbers among 'em were dispos'd to continue faithful; that I was desirous of knowing 'em, and distinguishing 'em in the honourable manner they deserv'd; and was very willing to let such as were otherwise, depart forever from my presence, and return immediately home. I had flatter'd myself, that the fear of passing for a set of perfidious creatures, would force them against their wills, to be obedient. Upon this I gave immediate orders for all such as were for abandoning me, to draw off to the left; and desir'd those of a different resolution, to go on the right. Having said these words, I look'd stedfastly upon 'em; and during some moments, not one of 'em offer'd to stir from his place. They gaz'd upon one another, with an air of astonishment and uncertainty. At last, some of the most rebellious running off to my left, they were soon follow'd by the greatest number. Scarce had they stood a moment, to see whether or no they might depend upon one another, but setting up a great shout, they turn'd their backs upon me, and flew like lightning towards their valley. There still remain'd about three hundred

hundred on my right, who I imagin'd wou'd adhere to me; but these seeing their countrymen take to their heels; and having look'd upon them as they were flying, as uncertain what they shou'd do; they made off likewise, and cou'd not be perswaded to come back a moment; tho' I begg'd, reproach'd, and did all I cou'd to engage their stay.

How wou'd it be possible for me to give an idea in this place, of my sorrow, and the surprize with which I was seiz'd! I was now left quite alone in the midst of the meadow. As the two *Englishmen* who surviv'd, were with my wife and the women; and as the place where the sick lay, was a quarter of a mile off, and shaded by trees; not one savage was left with me, from whom I cou'd obtain the feeble consolation which is found when we reveal our woes to another. I had no design to acquaint my wife with these sad reverses; she wou'd have divided 'em with me, and her uneasiness wou'd only have fill'd me with despair; for which reason I was forc'd to conceal 'em, deep in my bosom, tho' this was a mortal pain. Upon this I seated myself on the grass, in the very place where I stood. Tho' heaven seem'd to pour all its wrath upon me, I yet lifted up my eyes, and besought the creator to commiserate my sufferings. I begg'd of God, in case he did not think fit to indulge me the consolation which might lessen my sorrows; however to point out to me how I should act; and give me, at least, some little glimmerings of hope, in the deplorable state I was reduc'd to; and to which, I believ'd, no man but myself had been ever brought. Gracious God! says I a thousand times, thou canst not delight to see thy creatures in despair. If thy works were the effect of all goodness, how canst thou take pleasure in destroying 'em? What is to be my fate? What will become of the viscount, my unhappy wife, and our innocent daughter? To what purpose is it to invoke thee, if thou art always deaf to my prayers? My God! hear me, and take pity of thy unhappy creatures.

However, after having been thus tortur'd for some time, I summon'd up all my spirits, in order to draw from the circumstances of our misery, such weak resources as methought it afforded. I at first suppos'd, that we had no
other

other course to take, but to return back to the *Abaquis*. After I had duly consider'd the necessity there was that we shou'd do this, I repented from my heart, that I had not yielded to the impatience of the fugitives. But as this was to no purpose, I examin'd whether there was any probability of my being safe among the savages, after they had so basely abandon'd me. I imagin'd they would be afraid of my punishing 'em; and either a dread of shame or punishment, sometimes makes those complete villains, who were but partly so before. Nevertheless, I flatter'd myself that it would be possible for me to recover their esteem by gentle treatment; but there were two difficulties which perplex'd me infinitely more. The first was, the dangers to which we should be expos'd in the journey. We were now going to be obnoxious to the insults of all those whom heaven might think fit to bring in our way; but 'twas equally dangerous which way soever we might shape our steps; nor should we have been safer, had we continued in the place where we were. All therefore that cou'd be done, was, to submit ourselves to providence, and still to implore its assistance. The second obstacle was, the fatigue which must necessarily be undergone in a journey of ten days continuance, which was more than the two ladies and the women cou'd go through. Besides these, there remain'd *Rem* only and the two *Englishmen*; and as for the great number of savages who lay sick, I cou'd not hope for the least assistance from any of them. The two women wou'd be forc'd to walk on foot, how fatiguing soever this might be; and I resolv'd, in conjunction with *Rem*, to carry my wife's litter, and that the two *Englishmen* shou'd do the same service to Mrs. *Riding*.

I then began to think what wou'd become of the unhappy savages, whom we should be forc'd to leave behind us. The disease with which they were seiz'd, made 'em so weak and feeble, that they cou'd not so much as stand upon their legs. Death continued to make a havock among them daily, and my presence cou'd not afford them the least relief. Nevertheless, after having long ponder'd this matter, I found humanity would not suffer me to leave so many poor wretches, in so melancholy a condition. I cou'd not, indeed, as was observ'd above,
contribute

contribute in any manner to their cure; but then I observ'd that my visits were some consolation, which they even assur'd me in their expiring moments. This sufficiently determin'd me to stay with 'em so long as any should continue alive; and do them all the good offices I possibly cou'd. I consider'd, farther, that they had undertaken this journey purely for my sake, and in compliance with my commands; and therefore I thought that gratitude oblig'd me to do, what tenderness and humanity prompted me to indulge 'em. We were not afraid of wanting provisions. Our perfidious deserters, having hunted after wild beasts for three weeks together, had left us a prodigious quantity of these; and also eggs of different sorts of birds, of which we made our most delicious repasts.

This was the most rational plan that heaven cou'd possibly have inspir'd me with, in so difficult a juncture; and the only one it was proper for me to fix upon. But my evil star was to get the better of all my schemes, either to destroy, or turn them wholly to my ruin.

I resolv'd not to visit my wife sooner than I us'd to do; for fear she shou'd be alarm'd, to see me more uneasy than usual. I therefore did not go to her till the evening, after having visited the poor, sick *Abaquis*; and inform'd 'em of the perfidy of their countrymen, which fill'd 'em with the highest indignation. They were so strongly affected with the promise I made to stay with 'em, that they assur'd me they cou'd almost die with pleasure for my sake; and these testimonies of their gratitude, made so deep an impression on me, that I thought this alone overpaid all I had done, or cou'd do, for them. Night being come, I went to my wife, who did not yet know that the savages had left us; I having fix'd her in a by-place. It stood behind a little hill, which separated it from the meadow; and being shaded by very lofty trees, the pestilential air did not annoy them in the least. I made her a hut of the branches and leaves of trees, in which she cou'd sit commodiously enough with her women; so that they were in no fear from infection. I still continued to wash myself every evening in the river, and to change my clothes a little before I came into the hut. Tho' I was again prey'd upon by my wonted anxiety, at my leaving
the

the sick; and had not one soothing reflection till I saw my wife; I nevertheless assum'd a chearful countenance upon my coming into her hut. She immediately enquir'd how I did, and whether the savages were better. They have left us, says I, with a very compos'd air. Had they staid, not one of 'em wou'd have escap'd; we ourselves shall be forc'd to return back to the valley, as soon as our sick are either dead or recover'd.

Notwithstanding I had deliver'd myself without the least apparent uneasiness, she yet was prodigiously surpriz'd; when looking stedfastly upon me, in order, if possible, to read my soul thro' my eyes; and as tho' she were perswaded that this was owing to some extraordinary accident. Mrs. *Riding* seem'd no less astonish'd; and they both endeavour'd to make me explain myself farther. I continued, however to conceal the truth from 'em; and even confess'd that there was some justice in the reproaches they made me, for not being so prudent as to oblige a few of the *Abaquis* to stay behind, in order to serve as a guard. In this manner I was oblig'd to sustain the whole weight of this terrible event; and I accusom'd myself, more than ever, to put on a philosophical countenance, even when prey'd upon by the most cruel pangs.

'Twas five weeks, which was to me like a continual martyrdom, of so many years, before the sickness abated among the savages. The perpetual reflections which I made on my ill fate; my fears which cou'd not lessen, so long as I did not see any glimmerings of hope; the struggles I made to conceal my anxiety; tortur'd me more during that short time, than all the past misfortunes of my life. At last the infection ceas'd; and there scarce were left threescore of the *Abaquis*, among five hundred who lay sick when the rest ran away. I yet thought to set out with these few who had escap'd the wrath of heaven; and desir'd my wife to give me her opinion of it, who shed tears when I mention'd it to her. I imagin'd, as she did, that her grief proceeded wholly from the necessity we were under, of laying aside our search after the viscount; a reason, which justified both her sorrow and mine. But she has since confess'd to me, that her heart was then tortur'd with sharper pangs, than it was natural for our present

sent woes to excite; whether it were, that the uncertainty of what would become of us, rais'd such tumults in her breast as she cou'd not account for; or that it arose from some thing which whisper'd to her the dreadful calamities we should undergo, before we left the *West-Indies*.

The incident I am going to relate, shall be told with the utmost simplicity; and is of so tragical a nature, that it does not require to be heightned by ornaments, to move a reader, who is not a barbarian; and is not ashamed of being a man, that is sensible to the tender emotions of pity and compassion. However, I shall not pretend to describe what I felt. Expression was invented by art; a faithless mirror, which can represent but very imperfectly, all the strong, the intimate sensations of nature.

We set out. My wife trembled as we were going away; she carried our dear little daughter in her arms. I embrac'd, with the utmost tenderness, these dear objects of my affection; and recommended them to the superior powers, who are appointed to watch over innocence. Notwithstanding the *Abaquis* were so weak, they yet wou'd not suffer me to assist in carrying 'em; but shar'd this fatigue among themselves, and reliev'd one another by turns. Mrs. *Riding* was also carried. I walk'd at my wife's side, always deeply involv'd in thought; but especially on the reception we might expect to meet with from the *Abaquis*.

We had now travell'd two days, and easily found the way by which we came. Some of my savages, whom I had bid to go on before for our greater safety, and order'd to cast their eyes incessantly round them, stopt on the top of a hill. After having gaz'd a few moments about them, they came running towards us with prodigious speed. As they were near a quarter of a mile from us, I waited for their coming up; hoping, in case they brought ill news, that I should have time to retire either to the right or left with all my people. I kept my eyes continually upon my scouts. Scarce were they got to the bottom of the hill, when I saw thirty or forty persons on the top of it, who seem'd to pursue 'em; but stopt on a sudden, when they saw so great a number; all my savages being now got round me. As it wou'd be an easy matter for us to engage
twenty

twenty or thirty men, I did not think it prudent to discover the least symptoms of fear; especially as they had discover'd us; and that it would be impossible for us to escape 'em, in case they should resolve to come up with us. I even resolv'd after a moment's deliberation, to detach part of my savages, who should advance towards 'em with the two *Englishmen* at their head, to prevent an attack, in case they came upon a villainous design; and I myself stay'd behind to guard my wife, having fifteen of the *Abaquis* with me, who were to be as a *corps de reserve*. Whilst I was thus dividing my savages, I saw a much greater number of men advance upon the hill; so that I believ'd there might be at last near five or six hundred of them. I then found that I stood in need of the protection of heaven; and that it would be impossible for me to get out of this danger, either by stratagem or force of arms.

Thou knowest my God! with what warmth I invoc'd thy aid. The several deep sighs that came from my heart, were so many ardent prayers, by which I begg'd for thy powerful succour. I conjur'd my wife not to stir from the litter; and confess'd to her in one word, that we were in the utmost danger. However, says I, my dear, don't let fear overcome you, and let us not do any thing imprudently: Heaven does not sometimes indulge its succour, till the danger is extreme; and perhaps it has reserv'd it for us till this instant. My heart was so oppress'd as I spoke these words, that I was not capable of entertaining the least hopes. I clasp'd her for a moment to my breast, when she begg'd me not to endanger my life, but to remember that I ow'd it to her, and our dear daughter. I made her no answer, for fear of heightening her sorrows, by letting her see mine; and squeezing her hand, I left her fully determin'd to advance in person against our enemies.

This I was prompted to from two reasons; first from the fear I was under, that in case we should fight too near the place where the women stood, they would be in danger from the arrows; the second was, a strong desire I had to try the disposition of these savages before we engag'd, or suffer'd them to come nearer. My scouts could not tell me any thing more than what I myself had seen.

They

They had taken to their heels, as I before observ'd, upon finding themselves pursued. Having therefore not one moment to lose, I left the *Englishmen* with my wife; and commanding my sixty *Abaquis* to follow me, I march'd towards the enemy with an air of resolution, who advanc'd in much better order, than savages are us'd to do. Being perhaps surpriz'd to find us so intrepid, tho' we were so few in number, they halted at about an hundred paces from us. I still advanc'd forward; intending to go off from the rest and present myself before 'em, in such a manner as shew'd I sued for peace. But scarce had we advanc'd a few steps farther, when one of the *Abaquis* told me we were undone; the savages before us being the *Rouintons*. These words fill'd me with inexpressible terror. Heavens! the *Rouintons*! I was motionless like a statue, not knowing what course to take. The enemy who presently discover'd my companions to be *Abaquis*, discharg'd a shower of arrows upon us. My savages had hitherto stood their ground, being persuaded that my great skill in war, wou'd make 'em victorious; but the instant they saw what enemies they had to engage with, they immediately took to their heels. If the smallness of their number, made their flight excusable, it yet was not of any service to them; for their cruel enemies pursued 'em so closely, that not a soul of them escap'd.

When they began to run away, I was come within thirty paces of the *Rouintons*. Possibly, I myself shou'd have fled, had my wife, my child and Mrs. *Riding* been out of danger; but as matters were otherwise, I was determin'd to offer mine as a sacrifice, to preserve those who were dearer to me than myself; and in case I cou'd not make it of service to 'em, the only happiness I cou'd wish, was, to lose it. A moment's reflection suggested, that resistance wou'd be vain; and thereupon I threw down my arms, to shew the *Rouintons* I did not intend to make use of them. Some of these took me prisoner, while the rest were pursuing the *Abaquis*. They soon perceiv'd that I was not born among the people, whom they hated with so much inveteracy; they gaz'd for some time upon my dress, and did not discover the least signs, as tho' they intended to use me ill.

Tho'

Tho' their language differ'd pretty much from that of the *Abaquis*, I yet found it bore so much affinity with it, that I flatter'd myself I cou'd make them understand me. Brave people, says I to 'em, in a most submissive tone of voice, I am not your enemy. I am an unhappy stranger, whom chance has conducted into this desert; and who was coming to you with the *Abaquis*, purely to sue for your protection and friendship. I implore your pity for my own life, and for that of my family who are going to fall into your hands; suffer your hearts to be touch'd with compassion, for a man that never did you the least injury. These merciless savages look'd upon one another with a grin, or rather gnash'd their Teeth in a most dreadful manner. Their glances were strong and sparkling, but cruel and malicious, like those of a tyger. They were short of stature and squat; and their mouths were frightfully wide. I judg'd that they had not yet discover'd my wife; for having turn'd my eyes towards her leafy hut, as soon as I had done speaking to them, they ran towards it. The most nimble soon got up to her, during which a few of 'em led me after 'em, holding me fast by my two arms. My heart then sunk within me; and I thought the fatal moment was at hand, when, what I valued above all things, would be unmercifully butcher'd.

I was now come up to the litter, when I found that my dearest creature was fallen into a swoon, with our sweet babe in her arms, just ready to drop from 'em, and to have its brains dash'd out. Perhaps the savages thought my wife was dead, for they did not offer to succour her; but were taken up with gazing upon Mrs. *Riding* and the two women who had not fainted away, but then the fright they were in, bereav'd them of their speech. As I did not value what became of me on this dreadful occasion, I forc'd out of the hands of those who held me; and threw myself upon my wife's face, in such an excess of grief as it wou'd be impossible to describe. I supported the dear Infant with one hand; and endeavour'd at the same time to revive my wife, by putting my lips to hers, as it were to inspire her with a little of the strength with which I was still inform'd. At last she open'd her eyes. Where is my daughter, says she? and seeing the babe in my arms; Alas! my dear Mr. *Cleveland*, says she
with

a sigh she scarce had strength to vent ; give me my child ; don't leave me ; my heart can bear up no longer ; are we not undone ? I had but just time to speak a comfortable word or two. God, says I, cannot abandon us, without being guilty of the greatest cruelty. Take a little courage ; the savages have not yet us'd me ill ; and who knows but they may commiserate our distresses ?

While this was doing, those who had pursued the *Abanquis*, having soon overtaken 'em, return'd in triumph with their prey ; and as they came forwards, broke into such shouts of joy, as chill'd the blood in my veins. These were got up with us in a moment, when so many of 'em crouded about my wife, out of curiosity, to see her, that they drove me at a great distance from her. However, they did not once attempt to use her ill ; but then she was almost frightened to death, to see herself thus become the gazing stock of a multitude of hideous savages ; some of whom took her hands and view'd them, darting their fierce eyes upon her at the same time. I still held our dear infant in my arms. 'Twas to no purpose to employ entreaties, nor cou'd we be once heard, amidst the tumultuous joys of those furious savages. To which among them could I have directed myself ? They seem'd to despise me, and to look upon me as a cowardly, mean-spirited wretch, seeing me carry the child in my arms, with so dejected an air ; insomuch that they wou'd not so much as look upon me. I at last got nearer to my wife ; and the croud moving off, I sat down by her litter. I know not yet, says I, dearest creature, what providence intends to do with us ; but let us hope that heaven will be still gracious : consider it has already wrought almost a miracle in our favour, by suffering these barbarians to spare us, in the first transports of their fury. My wife was so oppress'd with grief, that she cou'd hardly make me one word of answer. Give me, my dear babe, says she ; which I did. Upon this, her tears, which sorrow had suppress'd till this moment, began to stream from her eyes, as soon as she had got the infant in her arms. She hugg'd it, as tho' she were resolv'd never to part from it. O Lord ! says she, how happy should I be were I once out of this vale of miseries ; but take pity on my husband, and my poor helpless daughter. 'Twas some consolation, to see Mrs. *Riding* and her

her women about her, they not being deny'd that liberty.

I trembled to think how all this would end. The savages were assembled round, at about seven or eight yards from us; the unhappy *Abaquis* also standing in the middle, whose fate the *Rouintons* seem'd now deciding. At last the crowd began to wheel off, and divided themselves into six bands: The threescore *Abaquis* were likewise divided in the same manner, and each band took an equal number of them. Immediately they searched for wood round about the forest; and made other preparations which I suppos'd to be the prelude to a dreadful sacrifice; for I did not doubt but the *Rouintons* intended to burn their enemies alive. This made me bewail their fate, and I was seiz'd with the most cruel pangs, when I found I should be a spectator on this shocking occasion.

But a circumstance which surpriz'd me prodigiously, was, to see 'em not only chearful, but even so gay as to sing; tho' they had appear'd so dejected but a moment before, and cou'd not but know the cruel death they were to suffer. One wou'd have concluded, that they were determin'd to insult their merciless victors; and that being lost to all hopes, they were unanimously resolv'd to brave their enemies, and not discover the least tokens of weakness or fear. I even heard these ill-fated wretches cry aloud, that they themselves had treated the *Rouintons* after the very same manner; and had either cut to pieces, or burnt, a multitude of 'em in their last wars. At last, the fires being lighted, the *Rouintons* of each band took only three of their prisoners; when instead of throwing them into the flames, as I imagin'd they wou'd have done, they tied 'em to stakes which stood very close to the fire; so that these unhappy *Abaquis* were tortur'd with the heat of the fire, which soon chang'd the colour of their skin. Thus were they roasted alive by slow degrees, which, however, had not the power to shake their resolution. Their companions, tho' they waited the like doom, did nevertheless exhort them to behave manfully; at the same time that their barbarous enemies shouted for joy, and dancing round, treated 'em in a most injurious manner,

This

This was but the opening of a scene, the conclusion of which was to be infinitely more terrible. When that the three *Abaquis* out of each band were quite dead; the *Rouintons* loos'd their bodies from the stake, which being quite roasted, they sat down in a ring, and prepar'd to distribute these dreadful eatables among themselves. Accordingly the carcases were cut up, a piece of which were given to each of them, when they began the most horrid of all feasts, in the utmost raptures of joy. We, till now, had preserv'd so much strength of mind as to look upon all they were doing; but this last sight was so prodigiously shocking, that we cou'd not view it any longer, and thereupon we hung down our heads and shut our eyes. We continued in this posture, till they had ended their execrable meal; and had not the power to once open our lips, to express the horror with which we were seiz'd.

I know not what my wife thought of all this; but as for my own ideas, they were confus'd beyond imagination. The judicious reader will believe, that my anguish did not proceed altogether from the sight of so barbarous a scene; and that, at the same time, as a bare sensation of humanity, made me so deeply concern'd for the sad fate of the *Abaquis*, I was tore to pieces with reflections of another kind. Altho' the treatment which the *Rouintons* had hitherto shewn us, was far from barbarous; besides my knowing certainly, that as it was not their general custom to devour men, but only on those occasions in which most of the *Americans* are cannibals, I mean with regard to the prisoners they take in war; I therefore cou'd not conclude that they would put us to death, because they had us'd the *Abaquis* in so cruel a manner; yet notwithstanding this reflection, my fears were as great as ever. 'Tis in vain for the mind to arm itself with fortitude; our fears are not always proportionable to the greatness of the danger, but to the value we have for those things which we are afraid of losing. Had I not just reason to be seiz'd with the most terrible apprehensions; considering the barbarity which threatned those who were so dear to me? Were we not in the hands of a multitude of cruel savages? Wou'd it be possible for us to make the least opposition, in case they shou'd take

it into their heads to use us ill? — I then would say to myself; no, they'll never have such an inclination.— Alas! my reason was not strong enough, to calm so dreadful, so natural an apprehension. But farther, supposing that the example of the *Abaquis* ought not to have alarm'd me; cou'd I yet say what might happen the next moment? Among the numberless things I had to dread, was there one which could naturally inspire me with the least hopes? What could we expect from the greatest indulgence of fortune, but the extremes of misery?—In this manner I view'd my evils in all lights. So far from feeding myself with imaginary hopes, I daily represented to my imagination, the worst that cou'd possibly happen; and after I had thus consider'd things in their most dreadful shapes, it so happen'd, that the blow with which I was threatned, was more terrible than any thing I had yet figur'd to myself.

The six bands of the *Rouintons*, had posted 'emselves in such a manner, that they almost surrounded us. After the bloody execution was ended, the greatest part of them fell asleep. I found, however, that they had sense enough to observe some order and take a few precautions. I observ'd that they appointed a guard to watch over the prisoners. Some of these came up to me. I took that opportunity to beseech them, in the softest terms, to tell me what was to be our fate. But, whether it were that they did not rightly understand me; or had our little company in the utmost contempt; they answer'd me only by a horrid grin. I then endeavour'd to move 'em by my prayers and entreaties, but 'twas all to no purpose. When night was come, we were guarded as strictly as the *Abaquis*; and the next day, the same cruel feast was again made, which was to last till all the *Abaquis* were devour'd, and this happen'd four days after. By good fortune we still had our provisions, and these they did not touch. But I cou'd scarce persuade my poor dear wife, to eat a little, in order to support nature.

At last, our enemies having nothing farther to do in the place where we then were, my blood curdled in my veins when I reflected on the fate which perhaps attended us. I observ'd all their motions; they now were preparing
to

to set out, when twenty-five or thirty of 'em coming up to me, bid us rise and follow 'em. We obey'd the command instantly. I intended that the two *Englishmen* should carry Mrs. *Riding's* litter, and *Rem* and I my wife's; but the barbarous wretches seeing this, took the litters from us, which they broke to pieces, and forc'd us to walk. I then took up the child in my arms, and supported my wife with the other. I bid the two *Englishmen* lend the same assistance to Mrs. *Riding*, who was so far advanc'd in years, and so corpulent, that she cou'd not walk an hundred steps without a support. We walk'd for about half an hour in this manner, when Mrs. *Riding* declar'd, that it would be impossible for her to go a step farther; and thereupon, venting a deep sigh, she told me, that as she was not able to go any farther, she was resolv'd to die in the place where we stood. Immediately something seem'd to whisper to me, that her death was at hand, and thereupon I besought her to summon up her spirits, but 'twas in vain. But as she cou'd not be prevail'd with to rise up; or rather, as she had not strength enough to do it, the savages came up. They view'd her for some time, and having consulted together for some time, they all shouted after they had taken their resolutions, and thereupon most of them came and seated themselves round us. Unhappily my arm was so much tir'd with carrying my dear little girl, that I was forc'd to give her to one of my wife's women. This the *Romintons* took notice of; and possibly occasion'd her being included in the dreadful sentence which was pass'd on Mrs. *Riding*. As they wanted to make all the haste possible, they therefore were resolv'd to rid 'emselves of every thing that wou'd retard it.

I seek for reasons to justify their barbarity. Alas! I seek for some; for who otherwise cou'd ever believe, that there were monsters under a human shape, capable of perpetrating such bloody crimes? Mrs. *Riding* was immediately seiz'd by a dozen of those inhuman brutes. She cried aloud for mercy, but as she was soon surrounded with a multitude of these butchers, their shouts soon drown'd her voice, and I presently lost sight of her. A moment after, some of the savages tore my dear, harmless infant, out of the hands of the woman who carried her. Alas!

knowing their design but too well, I flung my self upon 'em in a transport of grief; I threw down several of 'em who offer'd to stop me, and got at last to my unhappy child. But what could I do after all? She was carried away in an instant, and stopping me, they beat me to the ground. They likewise stopt my unfortunate wife, who had rush'd with no less fury than myself on our barbarous enemies. They likewise stopt our *Englishmen*, and the two women; and as I still continued to struggle tho' I was on the ground, they tied my hands and feet, and did the same to all the rest of us.

It was now impossible for me to stir. My reason, which seem'd to be darkned by the violent tumults of my soul, abandon'd me so far, that I gnaw'd the ground in the first transports of my rage; and now considering no longer, what I ow'd to my wife any more than my self, I was incapable for some moments of once thinking or reflecting. A violent throbbing at my heart, bereav'd me even of the power to breathe one single complaint. A few interrupted words broke from me, such as oh! my daughter! Alas! my child! O! barbarous villains thus to tear her from me! My face, which I prest against the ground, was bath'd in tears; and the racks, the scourges which tore my heart to pieces, were a thousand times more painful, than the pangs of death are thought to be.

Nevertheless, my wife lay, at a little distance from me, in much the same posture. More happy than myself in these first moments of horror, she had fainted away, and was equally motionless as tho' she had been in the arms of death. It was not long before I began to think of her, and to consider how much she wanted my assistance. I open'd my eyes, when I saw her in the condition I just now mention'd. Let the reader figure to himself, in case this be possible, my sore affliction; divided equally, between the impulses of paternal tenderness, and those of conjugal love. I recover'd my voice, when I address'd her in the most tender, the most melting expressions. She was pale, and seem'd to have lost all her vital warmth, and 'twas a long time before she recover'd from her swoon. The *Rouintons* who stood round, gaz'd upon us without shewing the least pity, or
once

once offering to assist us. As she did not discover the least symptoms of life, I concluded she was really dead, and immediately resolv'd not to survive her long. I threw myself down by her, and begg'd of heaven to put a period to my torments, by discharging me of the intolerable burthen, life ; and thereupon shut my eyes, with a firm resolution never to open them more.

When I begg'd of God to take me out of this vale of miseries, 'twas a favour I sued for, which however was not indulg'd me. 'Twou'd have been a great happiness, both for my wife and myself, had the earth open'd, and swallow'd us up. But we were sentenc'd to live many years more, and to a long course of sufferings. I continued above a quarter of an hour in the posture above mention'd. Having so often call'd upon death, I was firmly persuaded it was not far off; and the reflection that my torments wou'd be at an end, did possibly lessen them. However, as my wife discover'd, by an almost insensible motion, that she was not yet dead; I rous'd from this sad lethargy which for some minutes had benumb'd all my faculties, in order to assist my dear wife, so far as it might lye in my power. I call'd her by her name; she answer'd me by mine; and a moment after ask'd me, with a most melancholy tone of voice, what was become of our daughter? Love still stronger than all our evils, soon shew'd that she did not think our misfortunes so great as they really were. I resolv'd to heighten the error, by diverting her fear from that which should naturally be the object of it; and being pleas'd with myself for hitting upon this thought, as it might prevent her being plung'd into a fresh excess of grief; this alone enabled me to strengthen the tone of my voice, and to form such an answer as ought to sooth her imagination. You know, my dearest, says I, that God has suffer'd the *Rouintons* to force away our babe; but whithersoever they may carry it, be persuaded that the divine protection will never forsake the tender innocent. This is a misfortune which is not to be remedied at this time. They have hurried away Mrs. *Riding*. Probably, as they design to carry us farther, they thought proper to send 'em both to some neighbouring hamlet, in order that they might not retard our journey. Alas ! says she, what

have they done with our daughter? I won't live a moment longer, in case they don't restore her to my arms. I interrupted her, in order to confirm her still more, in the opinion I perceiv'd she still entertain'd. I reproach'd her, but in the most tender terms, for talking of dying, in case the child was not brought back. You love her then, says I, more than you do me? and will not be prompted to live, from my presence, and the never-dying affection which I bear you? Be assur'd that the child will be restor'd to us; a happy chance, such as we have been favour'd with a thousand times, may give her back to us, at a time when we least expect it. But what will become of me, in case you should obstinately persist in your resolution of dying? And what construction can I put upon your love, in case it does not engage you to prefer living for my sake; to death and the grave? I added a great many other very cogent reasons, without allowing her time to answer them; and made her at last confess, that in what manner soever heaven might please to dispose of our daughter and all that belong'd to us, we ought to comfort ourselves with the reflection, that we were sure of being dear to one another; and to consider it as a very great happiness, that the barbarians had not separated us from one another.

Nothing less than an extraordinary assistance from heaven, could have inspir'd me with resolution sufficient to lessen my wife's despair; for having turn'd my head as I was speaking to her, I perceiv'd about an hundred steps from us, a flame that rose above the heads of the savages who were seated round it; when I did not doubt but my dearest child, and poor Mrs. *Riding*, were then roasting, in order to be afterwards devour'd by our enemies. Let a father, in case there is any one whose heart is as tender as mine, fancy himself for one moment in my condition; let him consider my torments, and then form a judgment of 'em; and in case he feels, that he is mov'd to compassion at the bare recital of this story, let him think how great my torments must be; and then let him allow me the sad advantage I claim; that of being the most unhappy man that ever liv'd.

I therefore put so great a constraint upon my self, as not only to disguise the excess of my anguish from my wife,

wife, but even to prevent her discovering the dreadful flames above mention'd, a circumstance which very possibly wou'd have fill'd her with alarms. I seated myself down in such a manner, that I hindred her from seeing any thing on that side. I even gave her to understand, that the savages were assembled at some distance from us only to pitch upon those persons who were to convey our daughter and Mrs. *Riding* to the hamlet that lay nearest to us. With regard to the manacles wherewith both our hands were fastned, and which had been put upon hers while she lay in a swoon; I confess that the savages had done this, in order to prevent our escape. In fine, I spoke with so much composure of mind, and answer'd all her objections with such an air of tranquillity; that in case I did not lessen her grief, I prevented those transports of despair, with which she would have been seiz'd, had she known the inhuman scene that was then going forwards.

Our people stood very near us. These saw the fire as plain as I did, and had the same sad apprehensions as myself; however, they saw that I did my utmost to conceal, what I believ'd those cruel butchers were about. 'Twas not till two months after, that she was inform'd of our unhappy babe, and poor Mrs. *Riding's* death; and I took care not to let her hear the dreadful circumstances of it.

I lay by, and talk'd with her, till such time as the return of the savages, show'd that they had satiated their horrid appetites. I then held out my arms, as tho' I besought 'em to take off our manacles, which they thought proper to do. I then oblig'd my wife to take a little sustenance, which however I was some time before I cou'd prevail with her to do. I was afraid she wou'd now be so weak, that it would be impossible for her to walk; which could not but fill me with the most dreadful alarms; but it happen'd fortunately for us, that the savages had resolv'd to spend the night in the place where we then were. I employ'd part of it in soothing her grief; and I did not exhort her to take a little sleep, till after she had promis'd me to endeavour as much as possible to be chearful. 'Twill hardly be believed, that as she was in so ill a state of health, and of so delicate a

constitution, she yet had strength enough to bear up against so much grief and fatigue, particularly during the six weeks which we spent in this manner among the *Rouintons*; oblig'd to undergo almost every day a painful march, and be expos'd in the night to the inclemencies of the weather. But what might she not go through, considering the two motives which animated her; her affection for a father, and love for a husband? My wife lov'd me as dearly as it was possible for woman to love. A bare word, the most insignificant expression from me, wou'd alone call up her spirits, and make her intrepid in the greatest dangers. She had very near as great an affection for the viscount her father. The uncertainty of his fate; the dangers which she trembled to think he was perpetually expos'd to; the hopes, but faint and remote ones, which she entertain'd, of meeting one day with him again, supported her daily in the midst of her fatigues and anxieties. That was the perpetual theme of our discourse, till the unhappy day on which we lost our daughter; and tho' this pierc'd her to the heart, she yet combated her grief with the utmost resolution. Moreover, altho' the *Rouintons* were such barbarians, they did not hinder us from employing the greatest endeavours, particularly in the night, to procure her such conveniences, as our unhappy state permitted. We had brought some skins from the habitation of the *Abaquis*: With these we made a bed for her: and the assistance of her women, and the two *Englishmen* who were ever ready to serve her, prevented her from doing any thing that might endanger her health. If I may presume to speak it, without lessening the merits of what my dear wife suffer'd for me; I was infinitely more wretched in our common misfortunes. I don't speak of the pains and fatigues which oppress the body, for mine seem'd season'd to them. But what idea will not the reader entertain of the torments of my soul, when he considers that I was rack'd by my own pains; by those of others; and that I was constrain'd, not only to suppress them all, but also to summon up all my reason, to enable me to counsel others; tho' I myself was forc'd every instant, to struggle prodigiously in order to support myself.

As the savages did not acquaint us, what their intentions were in this rambling up and down, we were carried about for a long time, entirely in the dark, as to what they intended to do with us; and without the least appearance of our ever being extricated from our miserable condition. I pass over a thousand difficulties which we encounter'd and got over. Providence, which had hitherto treated me with so much rigour, was however very indulgent to me, in thus preserving my wife's health. It likewise prepared me some moments repose, after the numberless evils which had beset me ever since my leaving *France*. I nevertheless was oblig'd to pay very dear for it; and thus suffer, so long as I liv'd, the decree by which I was sentenced, not to taste any pleasure, but what was embitter'd with pain.

After having wander'd about for six weeks, during which it was an easy matter for me to perceive, that the *Rouintons* did not steer any certain course; and that they rambled up and down in quest of prisoners, they now seem'd to be going directly for some place; and observing that they did this for some days, I no longer doubted of it. Seeing that they advanc'd towards the South, I took notice of it to my wife, who was overjoy'd upon that account; because we were both persuaded, that in case we could ever have the least hopes of meeting with his lordship, it would be that way. The *Rouintons* had a considerable number of captives along with them; and we suppos'd that they intended to carry them to the place where they usually made their abode. They therefore made such great diligence, that we soon arriv'd in their new habitation, where they were receiv'd with the utmost joy by their wives and children. We were guarded with the strictest care, during the time that they spent in unbending themselves after the fatigues of their journey. As soon as they had taken some repose, they oblig'd us, at a moment's warning, to set out again with them. Very little time was employ'd in this new expedition. In less than two days we got to a vast forest, into which we advanc'd a considerable way; and were surpriz'd to find ourselves surrounded on a sudden by a numberless multitude of other savages, who receiv'd us with the greatest acclamations. I could never learn the name of

this people, and what kind of traffick they carried on, with the *Rouintons*; but in reflecting on the manner in which we were receiv'd, I judg'd, that these after having been in the countries adjacent to the *Abaquis*, had retir'd to the spot whither we then were; and that they engag'd themselves by a treaty, or by their own free will, to furnish them with slaves. The *Rouintons* went away a little after they had deliver'd us up. Whatever might be our fate in this change of condition, I thank'd heaven for having freed us from our barbarous tyrants. In recollecting the terrors with which I had been fill'd during my abode among them, I started a reflection which would have encreas'd them in case it had occur'd to me before. What cruel usage must I naturally have expected, had the *Rouintons* known that I had been the chief instrument of their ruin; and the person who had caus'd such hard and severe terms of peace to be offer'd them, by Mr. *Youngster* and the *Abaquis*? Heaven, who was determin'd not to quite complete my ruin, undoubtedly prevented their entertaining such a reflection. Besides, as they had found no more *Abaquis* with me, and met with me at so great a distance from the habitation; they cou'd hardly suppose me to be the formidable governor, whose reputation had struck them with terror; not to mention, that as they did not see Mr. *Youngster*, they did not once suspect who I was. Be that as it will, this happy change was a signal favour which heaven indulg'd me. Our new masters treated us with the greatest humanity. They confin'd us, with fifty three prisoners more, in a place surrounded with stakes, of a great height and thickness, and cover'd with branches of trees, which secur'd us from the inclemencies of the weather. We were very well fed. 'Tis true indeed, that their cramming us in this manner, fill'd me with the most baleful apprehensions during some days; and I imagin'd, that they perhaps intend'd to feed upon us, after having fatted us as they thought proper. However, the air and behaviour of the savages, who did not discover the least severity in any of their actions, set my mind at ease in that particular. I even began to entertain a hope, which was afterwards happily fulfill'd. I remember'd that the *Abaquis* had told me of a nation of savages, who trade with the *European* colonies for slaves;

slaves; and not being able to form any other judgment of the kind treatment which we met with from them, I imagin'd that we should be sold with the companions of our captivity. I communicated this reflection to my wife, who was soon persuaded that I had guess'd the very thing; but I cannot say whether I may give the name of joy, to the emotions my discourse seem'd to excite in her. The remembrance of her father, and that of her daughter, employing her whole thoughts; she declar'd, that she could not consider as a happiness, nor consequently wish for a circumstance, which would remove her every day farther from her child; and perhaps make her lose all hopes of our seeing any more our dear babe, or her fond father. I had nothing to object to these just reflections; and was therefore oblig'd to reduce my self to such general motives of consolation, as I drew from the will of heaven, and the necessity we were under of following the unhappy current of our ill fortune, which it was not yet in our power to divert.

At last, the savages thinking we had now enjoy'd time sufficient for our complete recovery, they let us out of our confinement, and gave us to understand that we must follow them: We obey'd, and travell'd four days. At the beginning of the fifth, we arriv'd on the bank of a large river, where we were made to stop. A great number of branches, and trunks of trees, which were scatter'd up and down, shew'd that the place was sometimes inhabited by human creatures. We spent some days here, uncertain what would be our fate. However, I was still confirm'd in my opinion, that we should be sold either to *Europeans* or savages. About a week after our arrival, the savages who guarded us, shouted on a sudden for joy; and turning about to look what might be the occasion of it, I saw five or six large boats rowing towards us. I soon discover'd that they were *Europeans* by their dress, and 'twas now that my heart was sensible to the strongest emotions of joy. Accordingly I lifted up my eyes to heaven; clasp'd my wife to my bosom; and was persuaded that part of my prayers, at least, were heard. The boats came up to us in an instant, and I knew that the sailors in them were *Spaniards*. But of what country soever they might be, they were men, and not a company
of

of brutish and insensible savages; and 'twas a most agreeable reflection to us to consider, that we were now going to be with rational creatures, with whom we might converse.

Nevertheless, my wife put a quite different construction on these appearances of our change of condition. As her Mother was a native of *Spain*, she understood the language of that country; so that, being, no longer in doubt, after having heard the sailors discourse for some time together, that we were just going to leave the savages, and consequently to go farther than ever from the *Rouintons*; she shed a flood of tears, and seem'd inconsolable. We were sitting on the ground, and her head was lying in my lap. I knew what it was that afflicted her to such a degree. Besides, as she call'd upon our daughter a thousand times, I found that she was now afraid of losing her for ever, as we were going to bid adieu to the savages. 'Twas then I thought proper to acquaint her that our dear babe was dead, being persuaded that after this, she'd not only be very glad to leave the savages; but that she'd look upon the death of her child, as an evil much easier to be supported, than to have left her among the *Rouintons*. I observ'd to her, but without carrying matters too far, that she was not so much to be pitied as she imagin'd; that she ought not to be any ways troubled upon her account, since she was now with God; that the only reason why I had not acquainted her with this before, was, my being afraid it would overwhelm her with grief; but that as our Condition was now so happily chang'd, I thought this the best opportunity to inform her of it; and told her, that she ought not to be so much disquieted, since the child was infinitely more happy than we.

These arguments made a surprizing impression on *Fanny's* mind. She look'd upon me stedfastly, when I saw that her surprize had dried up her tears on a sudden. But, my dear, says she, don't you impose upon me? Is the poor babe really dead? I assur'd her that she was by the strongest protestations; but I conceal'd the circumstances of its untimely end; and invented such, both with regard to our dear innocent, and the unhappy Mrs. *Riding*, as I thought most proper to heal her sorrows. She heard me with the utmost attention; but after I had done speaking,

speaking, I observ'd that the tears began to trickle down her cheeks. She wrung her hands and cry'd, gracious providence! take my dear, dear baby, to thy bosom: Be thou to her instead of a mother, and make her happiness perfect. Live, dearest babe, live in the bosom of thy Creator; thou wilt be more happy there than thy ill fated mother. After this turning about to me, with a countenance which shew'd she was a little consol'd; her death, says she, is not so grievous to me as I thought it would have been. I shall not be so much afflicted, because she is gone to heaven before me. I now am no longer troubled about my daughter; for we shall assuredly meet in heaven ——— I confirm'd her as much as I cou'd in these sentiments, tho' I cou'd easily perceive, that this sudden consolation, proceeded less from the happy state to which she thought our daughter was gone, than from the wretched condition, out of which she heard she was deliver'd. The idea of our dear babe, which could not but occur to her mind whenever she thought of the cruel *Rouintons*, and their horrid barbarities, was a perpetual torment from which I had just deliver'd her; and by making her direct her thoughts to heaven, where her imagination was sooth'd with the most happy, the most delightful images; I had rais'd her mind to a delicious situation, in comparison of that it was in a moment before. I had nothing so consolatory to offer her with regard to her father; but I soon brought her to a persuasion, that how severely soever the *Spaniards* might use us, they yet would let us enjoy a little more liberty than the savages had done; and consequently that it would be easier for us to take such measures, as might conduce to the viscount's welfare.

Whilst we were thus discoursing, the *Spanish* merchants were bargaining with the savages about the price of the slaves, which was done wholly by signs. As the things they traded for were upon the spot, it was not a difficult matter for 'em to understand one another. All the slaves were present in order to be view'd; and the riches of the *Spaniards* which consisted in a great number of runlets of Brandy, in looking-glasses, whistles, and little knives, were laid upon the grass, in order to allure the savages. After they had agreed upon the price,
and

and that the merchandise was deliver'd, the savages went away, shouting at the same time for joy. The *Spaniards* then bid us walk towards the Shore, in order to be put on board their great boats. Altho' myself, and my whole family were cloath'd with skins, they yet did not take us at first for *Europeans*. Had they known this, they possibly would not have purchas'd us, from the reflection that we should not yield them any profit. This thought, which had occur'd to me, when we first came in sight of the *Spaniards*, made me strictly enjoin my people not to speak a word, till such time as we were sold. There are savages of various colours and stature in *America*; and besides, the fatigue and perplexity we had suffer'd under, had so chang'd the colour of our skins, that it differ'd very little from that of our companions, except that it was a little whiter.

'Twas therefore just as we were stepping into the boats, that I address'd the *Spanish* merchants in the most civil terms. I spoke their language so well as to make myself be understood. My wife, whom I took by the hand, her two women, *Rem* and my two *Englishmen*, forming a little circle round me, drew the whole attention of our masters upon us: but their surprize was prodigiously encreas'd, when they had heard me speak to them in *Spanish*; which made them gaze upon us for some time, without once opening their Lips. My wife, fearing they did not understand my meaning, because I was far from speaking *Spanish* with propriety; told 'em, in very few words, that we were *Englishmen*; and thought ourselves infinitely oblig'd to them for the service they had done us. At last, they open'd their mouths, when they began to ask us, what chance had brought us into so unhappy a condition? I answer'd them, that we would give 'em all the satisfaction they might desire on that head, as soon as they should have the generosity to indulge us some place, where we might take a little rest.

Altho' they did not seem to be in any manner satisfied with the purchase they had made, of us I mean, they yet could not help treating us with some little civility; and a little after, they separated us from the rest of the slaves. The first circumstance I entreated them to inform

form us, was, in what part of *America* we then were. They told us, that we were on an arm of the river of the *Holy Ghost*, which discharges its self into the gulph of *Mexico*; and that they inhabited the town of *St. Joseph*, which is situated at a little distance from the coast above-mention'd; that it was their custom to advance up in the country several times in a year, in order to trade with the savages for different commodities. That they us'd to trade for slaves with some, for furs with others, and that this traffick was very advantagious to them. I contented myself with what I now heard, as suiting well enough our designs. As these traders did not appear to be wealthy or polite, I depended as little on their civility as their assistance; and therefore resolv'd not to reveal myself to 'em, unless some occasion might make it proper. However, 'twas not long before they perceiv'd, that we were not born to slavery, which rais'd their curiosity to a very great degree; but then I did not think proper to gratify it.

We arriv'd at *St. Joseph*'s after twelve days journey, but did not find it was inhabited by persons of any figure. They cou'd not refuse us our liberty; but then they did not accompany it with any offers of service, or any marks of generosity, which cou'd engage our esteem for those who granted it us. We could scarce prevail with them to give us what was absolutely necessary to keep life and soul together. We nevertheless were forc'd to continue six weeks among 'em, in expectation of some opportunity of removing from among them. This time must necessarily hang very heavy upon our hands, considering how greatly impatient we were to know what was become of the viscount. After a thousand reflections, on every thing that might serve as a foundation to my conjectures; I resolv'd to adhere to a resolution which appear'd to me the most rational. I was destitute of every kind of succour; and yet I stood in need of more than one, in order to render myself capable of serving his lordship. I was resolv'd to go for the island of *Cuba*, it not being at a vast great distance from *St. Joseph*, and beg the governor of it to indulge me some assistance; he being now my grand-father by my marriage with lord *Axminster*'s daughter. Altho' he had refus'd to grant any
to

to the viscount, in order to enable him to annoy the *English*; I was persuaded he would afford me whatever succour I might want, since the occasion was so different. I intended also to leave my wife with him, when I determin'd to ramble up and down the continent in search of his lordship. But I cou'd not execute this resolution; which my wife highly approved, for want of provision and some kind of vehicles or other; till a certain season in which the little vessels belonging to St. *Joseph*, sail for *Carlos*, in order to traffick for slaves. However, as the last mention'd city, stood not far from the point of the peninsula of *Tequesta*, I did not doubt but I should meet every day with an opportunity of embarking for the *Havana*.

We therefore waited for this time, with an impatience which increas'd every day. My wife's tender heart, which had been eas'd of part of its pains, when her affliction for our daughter was suspended; was not yet more easy upon that account. The dread she was under upon her father's account, wou'd not suffer her to think of any thing else. I, on the other side, was continually revolving my own anxiety, and endeavouring to console her. Thus we spent our days and nights, which seem'd to us of a prodigious length. One day, some of the *Spaniards* who had seem'd less hard-hearted than the rest, came to acquaint us that a vessel belonging to *Pensacola* was come into the harbour; and that as her captain had signified he was going for the *Havana*, he in all probability wou'd not refuse to take us on board, in case we continued in the same resolution. Hearing this I went and found him out; notwithstanding the despicableness of my dress, he yet receiv'd me with great civility, upon hearing that I was a foreigner. He spoke *English*. I told him, that being call'd to the *Havana* by affairs of great consequence, and having waited a long time for a passage, I therefore besought him to take myself and six more persons on board with him. Hearing this, he told me, but in the most civil terms, that it would be impossible for him to take so many persons on board. I am, says he, naturally inclin'd to serve the unfortunate to the utmost of my power, and especially foreigners; and indeed I undertook the voyage merely upon that account.

But

But altho' I intend to coast along, as I have hitherto done from *Pensacola*; and that you, possibly, might go along with me without the least danger, so far as the point of *Tequesta*; I would not dare to cross the streights of *Bahama* with you. Upon this I left him, without giving him any farther trouble. I might, however, have accepted of his offer which he seem'd to make me, of carrying us part of the way; but as the vessels belonging to St. *Joseph*, were to set sail in a few days for *Carlos*, I was resolv'd not to put him to the least inconveniency.

Being return'd to the little hut, which had been given us to live in, I told my wife what I have just now related; and added, that as the *Spaniard's* countenance prejudic'd me very much in his favour; I was very sorry he had not an opportunity of taking us on board his vessel. As we were pursuing our discourse; I saw him at some distance from our hut, to which some people were directing him. He came up to the door in a moment, and walk'd in with a very affable air. After having view'd for a little time our persons and our habitation; he recollected that I was the same person he had spoke to a quarter of an hour before. You are surpriz'd, says he, to see me here; but I will own to you, that being heartily sorry I cou'd not take you on board, I therefore have enquir'd farther about your affairs; and what I have heard of your miserable condition, makes me wish that it lay in my power to do you service. I am going to the *Havana*. Have you any friend there? Can I carry any message from you to them, or bring you any from thence? Or can I be of any manner of service to you? He made me this compliment, and put these several questions to me with such an air of goodness and generosity; that not being able to express myself in *Spanish*, in such a manner as might shew the deep sense I entertain'd of his humanity; I desir'd my wife to do it for me. This she did with the utmost grace; and as she spoke the *Spanish* tongue in perfection, he cou'd hardly believe she was an *English* woman. This doubt making him consider her more narrowly, he soon perceiv'd, notwithstanding her tatter'd dress, and the change which grief and fatigue had wrought in her face, that she was not born among the dregs of the people. He was a young gentleman of a very good

good family, who being naturally kind and generous; and having fill'd his imaginations with extraordinary adventures, as most of the *Spaniards* do, by poring so much upon romances; was inspir'd with the most heroick notions, and breath'd the most noble virtues. Overjoy'd, therefore, with what he thought he had discover'd, he told my wife that his eyes could not be mistaken; and that tho' fortune should depress her ever so much, it yet wou'd be impossible but she must discover what she once was. He added to this several offers of service. My wife answer'd, that the only favour she desir'd, was to be convey'd as soon as possible to *Cuba*.

The young *Spanish* gentleman having assur'd us, that he was still more uneasy, upon account of the impossibility it wou'd be for him to give us that testimony of his good will; took an opportunity from this, to acquaint us with the occasion of his voyage. I am, says he, son to the *Corregidor* of *Pensacola*. Some of our inhabitants who trade with the savages for slaves, brought us a great number about a fortnight since; and amongst the rest an *European*, whose name and country I am yet a stranger to. He speaks several languages to perfection. I went to see him arrive, with the several companions of his misery, when I was struck with his air; and curiosity prompting me to go up to him, I soon discover'd that he had merited a better fate. I then offer'd to take him to my father's house, and to entertain him in it, which he accepted. He had not been there above two days, before this sudden transition from misery to abundance, threw him into a dangerous distemper. He is still afflicted with it, but as I did not visit him the less upon that account, I found him so polite, so judicious, and inform'd with such noble sentiments; that I take him to be one of the greatest men in the world. Tho' I have entreated him over and over to inform me of the several circumstances of his life, I have not yet been able to get a word out of him. I have only heard him repeat over and over, that all he wish'd, was, an opportunity of sailing for the island of *Cuba*. I suppos'd that he wanted to go thither himself, and thereupon I offer'd to convey him: But he said, he wanted only to send a letter to the governor, who is his friend. Now, continued the *Spanish* gentleman,

tleman, I have so much love for him, that I have undertaken that commission myself. From some words he let drop in conversation, I believe fate has separated him from some persons who are very dear to him; and that he is afraid of quitting the continent, for fear of leaving them behind.

'Twas impossible for us not to be seiz'd with the most extraordinary emotions, upon hearing the latter part of this discourse, and particularly my wife. Her tears and sighs broke from her, tho' she did her utmost to suppress them. Alas! says she in a faint voice; 'tis my father! 'Tis certainly himself, and I cannot doubt of it. ——— She was for going that instant to *Pensacola*; but I stopt her, when she sat down, holding me by the arm, and continuing still to cry aloud, the tears streaming afresh from her eyes; 'tis my father! Can it, my dear Mr. *Cleveland*, be any other but him? Let us haste, let us fly to him, and not lose a moment. I was as much persuaded as she cou'd be, that it must necessarily be the viscount, and the several circumstances conspir'd to confirm me in the belief of it. However, I had some farther discourse with the *Spaniard*; when having acquainted him who the person was that we were seeking for, and giving a description of him; he then did not doubt but that the unhappy gentleman he entertain'd in his house, was the viscount himself.

This fill'd him with the highest admiration and joy; when he lifted up his hands to heaven, and cried that he thought himself the happiest man in the world, in thus having an opportunity to assist distressed virtue; and thereupon he desir'd us to dispose of his estate; and his life. Never, surely, did the *Spanish* generosity display itself in a more graceful or eloquent manner. I thank'd him in the warmest terms, and said; This gentleman can certainly be no other than my father-in-law. The present you'll hereby make us, will be dearer than life itself. Your generous heart will now have the best opportunity it cou'd ever desire, of gratifying its impulses. But, I must beg you to carry us to *Pensacola*, the very first opportunity you have for that purpose. Be assur'd that the commission you was pleas'd to undertake for the gentleman at your house, is now altogether useless, and that the most grateful service

vice you can ever do him, will be, to bring us together as soon as possible. The generous *Spaniard* wou'd fain have cloath'd us first, but we begg'd him to defer that till we came to *Pensacola*, where we should be proud of accepting any good offices he should please to indulge us; and added, that we did not doubt but it wou'd be in our power, to discover our gratitude in an essential manner.

Pensacola is a pretty handsome *Spanish* settlement, situated to the west of *St. Joseph* on the coast of the same sea. Tho' I did not exactly know the distance of those two places, I yet believe it is not considerable, because we were but two days in our passage. Upon our arrival in the port, our *Spaniard*, meeting with some persons of his acquaintance, ask'd them whether no new thing had happen'd in his absence? Nothing, said they, except that the foreigner you took into your father's house, is at the point of death. This was most fatal news to my wife and I, and immediately chang'd our joy into a deadly fear. We made haste, but trembled at the same time, to reach the *Corregidor's* house. His son first went alone into the viscount's room; a precaution that was necessary, in order to prepare him by degrees for our arrival. We waited at the door; and confounded by the different impulses of joy, fear and sorrow, which warr'd in our bosoms, we clasp'd each other fast, the tears gushing, tho' unheeded by us, down our cheeks. The viscount was told, after a few words had been exchange'd, that we were, near him. Heavens! how tender are the sensations of nature! notwithstanding his excessive weakness, he yet struggled to run out of bed. We heard him getting up, and repeat the name of *Fanny*, but in the faintest voice, which his sighs and tears had almost suppress'd. We ran in, the instant as the *Spaniard* kept him down in his bed, when the viscount seeing us come in, he did not offer to move, but sitting up in the bed, he stretch'd out his arms to us in the utmost extacy of joy. Alas! daughter! Alas! Mr. *Cleveland*! His spirits were in such prodigious hurry, that it depriv'd him of the faculty of speech.

We then fell upon our knees before him. I kiss'd one of his hands, and my wife squeez'd the other, put it to her lips, and bath'd it with her tears. We express'd our
selves

selves in a certain manner; but we did not so much break into articulate sounds, as a tender and plaintive murmur, which shew'd how strongly we were affected. We continu'd thus for some time, the viscount reclining his head upon us, being equally incapable of uttering a single word. At last, I first broke this tender and passionate silence. Are we then met again, says I; we are so happy as to be once more blest'd with the sight of you! Your absence, and the uncertainty of your fate, have afflicted us mortally. But I now forget all the evils I have suffer'd; I excuse fortune for all her cruel treatment. Does fate then give you to our longing wishes! What more dear can we desire? But we meet with you on the bed of sickness, and at the point of death! Alas, will not heaven complete the miracle it has wrought in our favour? Has it brought us happily to you, but only to snatch the blessing away, the instant it was indulg'd us! At least let it permit us to breathe our last with you; let it separate us no more, in case it has brought us together out of mere compassion. I added a thousand other particulars, whilst my wife and our dear father were recovering from their transports. My lord then open'd his lips; and though he was in a very dangerous condition, his fond affection gave him spirits sufficient, to express his joy in the most melting terms. But the words with which he ended, were far from giving us the least satisfaction. I find, says he, that I have but a very little time to live. Death appear'd to me in the most frightful shapes, a quarter of an hour ago; but now it is far from being terrible, since I see you both here. You may very easily get to *Cuba*, where you'll meet with your grandfather, who, no doubt, will be overjoy'd to see you. Let my body be carried thither, in case you have an opportunity to do it; and I farther desire you to take care of my burial. Gracious heavens! says he, with a fresh transport, thou hast then restor'd my dear children, my *Fanny*, my *Cleveland*, to my longing wishes! They shall close my eyes, they shall receive my latest breath, I shall die in their arms! He then embrac'd us again with fresh transports of joy and tenderness.

I could answer only by my tears, to a discourse, every word of which pierced me to the soul. My Wife continu'd

tinu'd also to shed tears in abundance; and was unable to express her melting grief, any otherwise than by a few words, which sighs interrupted every moment. The young *Spaniard* who seem'd touch'd to the very soul at so moving a spectacle; and who knew better than we did, how ill his lordship was, desir'd us to withdraw a moment, in order that he might recover his spirits a little. This I intended to do; I even told him, that he himself cou'd not wish so much to live, as we were desirous that he shou'd; and that we were going to leave him a moment, for fear lest the strong tumults he then felt, shou'd heighten his indisposition; however, he wou'd not permit us to go away. Don't, says he, bereave me of the only consolation I can possibly taste in this life. Don't you plainly perceive that your presence has reviv'd me? I was dying but a moment before? and 'tis you who prevent my soul taking its flight from this weak, this feeble body; and were I not sure that it is impossible for me to recover, I wou'd sooner expect that from your presence, than from the power of medicines. — We therefore were oblig'd to stay with him. He then told us, so far as his weakness wou'd give him leave, the misfortunes which had befallen him since our sad separation. The circumstances of it differ'd but very little from what the *Abaquis*, who had been taken prisoner, told us. *Iglou*, and the *Englishmen* who accompanied him, had lost their lives in defending his. He had suffer'd under a long captivity, and being oblig'd to follow the savages in all their inroads; in which he had been perpetually expos'd to such excessive fatigue and misery, that these had quite ruin'd his constitution, which had before been very much weaken'd by the misfortunes with which he had been oppress'd for so many years. 'Twas but a fortnight ago that the savages had brought him to the river whither we had been carried; and that he had been sold, with a great number of other slaves, to the *Spaniards* of *Pensacola*.

After having thus related all that had happen'd to him, he desir'd us to relate also what had befallen us. This I did in a few words, and omitted purposely all such gloomy circumstances as might increase his illness. He did not know that heaven had given us a dear daughter. My wife

wife look'd upon me with a tender and melancholy air, when I came to that part of our story. I read in her eyes, that she wish'd to inform him of this affecting incident, which must necessarily have pleased him, had it not been attended with such melancholy circumstances. I also took care never to mention Mrs. *Riding's* name, but when I was absolutely forc'd to it.

But although the agitations with which he was seiz'd, had, perhaps, prevented him till now from thinking of her; it yet was not long before he ask'd us what was become of her; where she was, and why we had not brought her along with us? My heart wou'd not now suffer me to put on a disguise; upon which I told him plainly, that heaven had been pleas'd to take her to itself. We then all paid a tribute of tears to her memory: however, the viscount wou'd not suffer his to flow. Wherefore, says he, shou'd I bewail her death, since in less than two days I shall meet her in the region of souls? Alas, says he, your condition will be far more unhappy than ours. I possibly may leave you the wrath of heaven for an inheritance, which has continually pursued me; and which, no doubt, will henceforwards follow you, whithersoever you may fly. God! how can I hope to be easy after death, in case I must be forc'd to die with this sad reflection? But resum'd he, interrupting himself, wherefore, shou'd I afflict myself in this voluntary manner? Ought I not, on the contrary, to give a favourable interpretation to our unexpected meeting; and the exquisite pleasure I taste, in thus embracing you before I die? 'Tis impossible for heaven ever to deceive. It now begins to relent; and I will look upon this as a favourable omen, with regard to my dear children and myself.

I did whatever I cou'd, during the little time he had to live, to confirm him in this consolatory idea; and I observ'd that it sooth'd his latter moments to a surprizing degree. He was undoubtedly not mistaken, in hoping that heaven wou'd bestow the greatest blessings upon himself. His virtue, which had so long been put to the trial, was now going to be rewarded; and this happy presage, which now soothed his agonies, was one recompence. However, his unfortunate children were not included in the

the sentence, which put a period to his woes, and call'd him to immortal blifs.

He died the third day after our arrival. He had employ'd the day before, not only in giving us advice, in what manner we should return back to *Europe*, and what we should do when we were arriv'd in it; but likewise in pointing out to us, how we shou'd act, both to raise our fortunes, to reingratiate ourselves in his majesty's favour; and to recover the estate which he had made over to the lord *Terwill*, and which he was persuaded that generous friend wou'd not fail to give up to us. Towards night he grew much worse; nevertheless as he still had all his senses about him; he, by intervals, wou'd recover spirits enough, to breathe a few tender and melting expressions. He kiss'd his daughter's hands, he squeez'd mine; he besought us every moment to suppress our tears, and to love one another eternally: At last he told us, that he was sensible he was just going to his long home; and indeed he expir'd a moment after, as he had desir'd within his daughters arms and mine.

So violent were the pangs with which I was tortur'd at this sight, that I cou'd have wish'd to fly from the presence of men, and indulge no other sensations but those of sorrow. I wou'd have been glad to be alone, in the most desert part of all *America*; to be there employ'd in silently bewailing my misfortunes; to contemplate my self in this melancholy condition; to ask heaven why it thus pour'd out all its wrath upon me; to sue for its justice or clemency with sighs and groans; in case it wou'd indue me with patience sufficient, not to exasperate it still more by my murmurs and complaints. I put my self for some moments in this deplorable condition, by mere strength of imagination, and found some consolation, even in these hateful images. But now my wife's tears and sighs, having recall'd me from this kind of delirium, I experienc'd by seeing her, that it is possible for the soul to be mov'd at one and the same time, by a variety of Passions, and all of 'em equally violent. She embrac'd her father's pale corps, and her grief was so affecting, that the *Corregidor* his son, and all the persons present, cou'd not forbear bursting into tears before her. It was impossible for me to see her in such distraction, without feeling the most exquisite pangs. Her
innate

innate goodness, which so strongly prov'd how dear I was to her; that air of sweetness which she always wore, even in this affliction, which border'd so much upon despair; the flood of lovely tears, which ran so gracefully down her cheeks; and more than all, my love which was as strong as ever, hurried away my spirits to such a degree, that I abandon'd myself entirely to the impulses of my heart. I then took her on a sudden into my arms, when clasping her to my bosom, I sat down. Come, says I in a tone of voice breathing the strongest passion; come, my amiable *Fanny*; mix your tears with mine, and let not a single one drop, but what falls into my bosom; pour out all your wailings in my bosom. I alone will receive them all, and die a thousand deaths to spare you one. —

Notwithstanding she was prey'd upon by the most violent grief, she nevertheless was sensible to this tender transport. I have now, says she in a most languishing voice, none but you left, my father, my mother, my child! all I ought to love are dead. Alas! did not you survive, life wou'd be quite insupportable, and I wou'd not preserve it an instant! The *Corregidor* and his son, took this opportunity to get the viscount's corpse carried into another room; and after we miss'd it, we beg'd it might be brought back, but to no purpose.

'Tis not without reason, that I thus intermix with a relation of one of the most sad calamities of my life, that of an impulse of love, and some tender expressions which both my wife and my self breath'd. This observation will not be thought indifferent, by such of my readers as have penetration sufficient to judge of the nature of a passion, which two years of marriage, and an uninterrupted series of misfortunes had been so incapable of lessening; that it still had power enough to make itself be heard in so imperious a manner, even amid the transports of the most violent sorrow that ever tortur'd a human breast. Will it then be surprizing, to see it produce after this the dreadful effects which the reader may expect to meet with, and which I have oblig'd my self to relate? I was dearer to my wife than she cou'd be to her self; and was still dearer to her, now she had lost her fond, her indulgent father. Alas! I who thus represent the love she had for me, what words shall I find to paint my own? Will it be enough to

say that I worshipp'd her as my idol? I ador'd her, and she lov'd me with a reciprocal affection. By what charm was it possible for distrust and black suspicions, to succeed so sweet a certainty? This is the only circumstance in this particular that is astonishing; for 'tis well known, that when once a person no longer confides in another, the strongest love is apt to turn to fury, and to produce the same effects as hatred.

I know not what gloomy pleasure I find, in proportion as I proceed in the story of my life, to interrupt my self in the manner I do; and to anticipate my readers with regard to what I am to relate hereafter. Does not every incident of my life abound with circumstances of a most singular nature; and is not each of 'em affecting enough to engage the reader's attention? No; but I consult my own grief, much more than I do the laws of history, and the rules which are prescrib'd to biographers. How numerous soever and various my misfortunes may be, they now act altogether upon my heart; the sensation which now remains to me of them, is not the effect of variety; 'tis now, if I may so express myself, but an uniform mass of sorrow, which oppresses me continually with its weight. I therefore should be glad, were it in the power of my pen to unite in one stroke of it, the several calamities of my life; in the same manner as their effect is united in my soul. Then the reader would be much better able to form a judgment of the state of it. Regularity and order are a constraint to me; and as I am not able to represent all my misfortunes at one view, the greatest present themselves with the strongest force to my memory; and these I cou'd wish at least, that I were allow'd to lay before the reader before the rest.

However, I will still continue to relate the several incidents as they happened. After some days spent in the highest excess of grief, which yet I disguis'd as much as possibly I cou'd, in order to encourage my wife by my example; I resolv'd to leave *Pensacola*, and to get his lordship's corpse embalm'd, in order to take it along with us. The *Corregidor* and his son continu'd still as humane and generous as ever! I thought it wou'd not be improper, to inform them of the viscount's birth and quality, in order

to engage 'em to extend their civilities still more to us, during the last days of his sickness.

Tho' they were naturally generous, yet their letting them into these circumstances, inclin'd them still more in our favour. Both the father and son did not spare either care or expences. We consented to accept of some clothes they gave both to us and our servants, who were five in number; and when the day which we had fix'd upon for our arrival was come; we not only found that a little vessel had been fitted for us, but were greatly surpriz'd to find that our benefactors were dispos'd to accompany us. I did not oppose their resolution, being, on the contrary, very glad to see them in the *Havana*; where I was persuaded Don Pedro wou'd enable us to discover our gratitude in such a manner as was agreeable to our wishes. The only thing that gave me uneasiness at our setting out, was the smallness of the vessel, which cou'd scarce hold us all, being nine in number, and a few sailors: but this was the largest that cou'd be met with in the road of *Pensacola*. I wou'd not for the world have my wife expos'd to the least danger; and therefore I took a resolution to coast it along to *Carlos*, and to dispatch one of my *Englishmen* from thence, to inform the governor of *Cuba* where we were; who, I knew, wou'd not fail to send a good tight ship for us. We arriv'd happily at *Carlos*, when I dispatch'd Dring who was one of my *Englishmen*, who return'd in less than a week with a vessel sent by the governor. This we went immediately aboard of, and having a strong gale of wind, we arriv'd in twenty four hours at the *Havana*.

Don Pedro receiv'd us with the utmost tenderness, as he had lost his daughter, and saw her image reviv'd in my wife. He embrac'd us a thousand times, and declar'd that we must comfort him in his old age. The viscount's corpse, which we brought in a coffin, was a melancholy present. He cou'd not forbear shedding tears when he recollected how strongly he had endeavour'd to prevent his leaving *Cuba*. Had he follow'd my advice, says he, he wou'd have still been alive; he might have commanded every thing here as much as myself; and I wou'd have done my utmost to make life agreeable to him. But his grief was vastly increas'd, when he heard the lamentable scenes we had pass'd through during two years; and how

many misfortunes his lordship had met with, for some time before he died. The good old gentleman cou'd hardly recover from his astonishment. Sometimes he wou'd reproach himself with our calamities, as though he had occasion'd them ; and a little after he wou'd call heaven to witness, that he, so far from endeavouring to increase, had done whatever lay in his power to prevent them. Did not I, said he every moment, employ all the arguments I cou'd think of to detain him ? Did not I even foretel part of the fatal accidents which afterwards befel him ? Was it in my power to assist him with forces after a peace was concluded between *Spain* and *England* ? Did I not advise him every thing for his good ? But why did not he, at least, leave his daughter with me ? As I was his father-in-law, ought he not to have confided in me, sooner than in any other person in the world ? Why did he not, at least, return to *Cuba*, after he had fail'd in his enterprize upon *Virginia* ——— Although these wailings were now ineffectual, they yet showed, that we might expect the greatest indulgence from our grandfather. Of this he gave us, a few days after, the strongest testimonies, by the splendid manner in which he buried his lordship. This sadly-solemn ceremony awak'd all our sorrows. The only motive of consolation I had now left, was, that as I now enjoy'd my freedom and ease in the *Havana*, I was now enabled to return to the study of wisdom, which the many sufferings I had undergone for some time, wou'd not suffer me to pursue, but in meditation only. I now possess, says I, my dear wife and my books. These are two powerful remedies which may contribute to sooth my anxiety, and heal my tortur'd heart.

Don Pedro, from the very moment of our arrival, treated us as though we had been his children, and continued to do so, all the time we staid with him. He first signaliz'd his generosity, by rewarding the *Corregidor* of *Pensacola* for the great service he had done us. He bestow'd very considerable presents on the father, and bestow'd one of the most honourable employments in the island on the son. As I had been married to my wife, only by the reciprocal promise we made, and the consent which her father was pleas'd to indulge us ; *Don Pedro* desir'd it might be ratified by the priestly sanction. This threw us

into

into some perplexity. We were not of the *Romish* persuasion; and there was no probability of our meeting with a protestant clergyman among the *Spaniards*; so that Don *Pedro's* desires, as well as our own, wou'd not have been gratified for a long time, had we not at last consented to receive the nuptial blessing from a priest of the church of *Rome*. But although, properly speaking, I did not immediately profess any religion; I yet was of opinion, that it was our duty to venerate the clergy of all those who acknowledge and serve one only God, merely upon account of the Deity they represent. And thereupon I exhorted my wife not to scruple to repeat her solemn promises in presence of Don *Pedro's* chaplain. The governor and all the inhabitants of the *Havana*, wou'd have been overjoy'd, had we embrac'd their communion; but their worship is so whimsical and superstitious, especially among the *Spaniards*; that it is impossible for a man of sense, who is not blinded by the prejudices of education, to entertain a favourable idea of the church of *Rome*. I therefore begg'd of the governor not to insist upon my turning catholic; promising, at the same time to let my wife chuse for herself.

My dear *Fanny*, notwithstanding the fatigues of the voyage, and the various calamities she had suffer'd, was pretty far advanc'd with child. I had trembled a thousand times, when we were surrounded with dangers, for the dear infant she then went with. But the tranquillity we enjoy'd at the *Havana*, having soon restor'd her to health; she was happily deliver'd of two children a very few months after our arrival. She was first brought to bed of a son; but as the other remain'd behind, I was afraid it would be attended with some unhappy consequences; six weeks after, she was as happily deliver'd of another son. I offer'd up my sincere thanks to heaven for this present, but yet did not dare abandon myself to joy, when I reflected on the sad fate our dear daughter had met with. Indulgent heaven! did I cry in the bitterness of that thought, thou givest me more than thou bereavest me of; but what satisfaction soever I may receive from the birth of my two sons, will it ever outweigh the excessive sorrow which my dear daughter's unhappy death fill'd me with? ——— As

for Don *Pedro* and my wife, they were greatly comforted to see our family increas'd in this manner.

I spent some time in the *Havana* in the most easy manner, and very seldom went abroad. Those hours I did not pass with my wife or Don *Pedro*, were devoted to study. I generally perus'd *Spanish* authors; and tho' I seldom approv'd of their thoughts, or their diction, I nevertheless frequently met with excellent touches in their works, on which I would build the most profound and useful speculations; and all these I directed to the improvement of my conduct, and the strengthening of my mind. My old principles, that precious inheritance which my mother had left me, were not so eras'd from my memory, but I cou'd easily discover the traces of them. Although my imagination had been less employ'd on these for some time, (it having been almost perpetually fill'd with a numerous multitude of other objects, which had divided my attention) yet the footsteps of them still existed in it; and the reader may have observ'd, that they always had a strong influence on my behaviour. These principles I recollected, in the same order that they had been inculcated. I imagin'd my self to be acting over again the same scenes I had pass'd thro', from the time I had left *Rumney-Marsh*, and my mother's grave. I compar'd all my actions, my virtues and weaknesses, my pleasures and pains, my happy and unhappy adventures; the use I had made of them, with those moral precepts, the wisdom of which I once was so sensible of. I examin'd on what occasions, and what were the motives which had made me depart from them; and whether it were their fault or mine? Whether it were weakness of mind, or a hurry of the passions on my side; or on theirs, a want of truth to conduct me, or of strength to support me? I discover'd in a clearer manner than I had ever done, the source of all my impulses, and the most secret springs of all my passions. In fine, I was not satisfy'd with having carry'd, as it were a torch to view the most secret recesses of my heart; every thing I perceiv'd in it of an evil tendency, I endeavour'd to banish from it; or to establish it in a still stronger manner, in case I found it was relative to virtue. Endeavouring even to extend my cares to futurity, I form'd to my self a kind of arsenal of moral and philosophical weapons,

pons, fit for all occasions, and adapted to a thousand circumstances which it was impossible for me to foretel.

I must be oblig'd to acknowledge, to the glory of philosophy and reason, that these two guides were more powerful than all my evils. After so many sorrows as I had been afflicted with, they were able to restore a certain tranquillity to my soul; and to raise it to a height, whence I cou'd perceive happiness, as a state to which I was still allow'd to aspire. Indeed, a melancholy still sat brooding over my spirits, which I cou'd not flatter my self that either time or all my efforts wou'd ever be able to dispel; but I now accustom'd myself to consider it, not so much as an indisposition of the soul, as a change which age brings about; and which most people are troubled with, after a certain number of years are past. Add to this, that the fatigue alone I had gone through in my troubles, and the continual misfortunes I had met with in them, might have wrought this change in me. Though it was not possible for me to forget my misfortunes, I nevertheless had acquir'd so much strength, as to bear 'em so far with patience and resignation, as to afflict myself without trouble; and to complain, if I also may be allow'd the expression, without grief or murmuring. Such was the frame and situation of my mind at the *Havana*.

During my residence there, I had been inform'd of the several revolutions which had happen'd in *England*, since the time I had left *France*. I had heard that the new fabric of the commonwealth was destroy'd; that the Protector's family was ruin'd; that the royal house was return'd, with the several circumstances of King *Charles's* happy restoration, and how propitiously it had been brought about. This happy news made us wish to be in *England*, had it been possible for us to have left the island of *Cuba* in a decent manner; but we were bound to Don *Pedro* by numberless obligations, who still began to shower down his favours upon us. My wife was desirous of living with him, 'till heaven shou'd please to take him out of the world; in order that he might enjoy the consolation, of having some person who was dear to him to close his eyes. I acquiesc'd readily with her wishes. With regard to him, he did not doubt but we intended to continue al-

ways in his house. He indeed was the nearest relation my wife had left; and he'd look upon her, and our children, as though they had been his own. Nevertheless, notwithstanding the great love we had for this venerable gentleman, yet as we were born in different countries, we cou'd not but look upon our selves as strangers in his house; so that we were far from thinking, though the contrary afterwards happen'd, that he would have made us his sole heirs.

I happen'd, before the year was out, to share in an adventure of so extraordinary a nature, that it deserves to be taken notice of in this place, tho' I thereby interrupt the thread of my narration; and I don't doubt but it will be agreeable to my readers.

The captain of a *Spanish* vessel which was arriv'd from *Porto Rico*, being come to pay his compliments to *Don Pedro*; told him, before me, that he had met with a dreadful storm between *Jamaica* and the coast of *Nicaragua*; and had been drove, by the winds, on the shore of a small desert island call'd *Serrana*. He told us that he had spent two days on it, waiting till the tempest might cease; during which, some of his sailors went ashore, and had rambled up and down the island, which is not above three leagues in circumference. Altho' it seem'd to be uninhabited, he nevertheless had perceiv'd the footsteps of a man in several places; and therefore not doubting but they should meet with one, they had search'd the most remote places in it for that purpose. At last, continued the captain, they saw coming out of a hole at the bottom of a deep valley, a man of a tall stature, cloath'd in a pretty rich dress, but dirty and torn; who the moment he spy'd them, struck into a little wood. They soon found him, and having laid hold of him, he was brought to me. I ask'd him in *Spanish* who he was? He answer'd in his own tongue that he was an *Englishman*; and that he was very much surpriz'd, as he had not injur'd any of my crew, why they stop'd him in a forcible manner. I desir'd him to excuse their rudeness, and offer'd to serve him to the utmost of my power. He seem'd to be lost in thought a moment, when recovering himself, he told me that he stood in need of two things; and that he wou'd be vastly oblig'd to me, in case I cou'd procure'em him. The first, was, to furnish him with the
several

several materials which were necessary for writing, that is, paper, pens and ink; the second, was to give him a few books, in case I had any on board my vessel, in order to divert him in his solitude. I immediately promis'd to oblige him in these two trifling favours; but being desirous of knowing who he was, and part of his story; I entreated him to tell me what it was that could engage him to dwell in this solitude, and why he wou'd not take the opportunity of embarking along with us? In case I could be persuaded, says he, interrupting me suddenly, that there was one honest man in the world, I would leave this island immediately. But after the baseness and treachery I have met with, I would gladly hide myself in the bowels of the earth, in order to be remov'd from those who dwell on the surface of it. He absolutely refus'd to explain himself farther; when being urgent with me to give him what I had promis'd; he left me, and begg'd I wou'd not suffer my crew to molest him any more. I pitied him, continued the *Spanish* captain, because he appear'd by his countenance and behaviour, to be a man of honour and a person of distinction. But not being able to force him away from thence against his will, I took advantage of the favourable gale which had sprung up, and immediately made for this place.

This relation, which had nothing in it that should affect me more than it did the rest of those who heard it, struck me nevertheless in such a manner, as show'd I had been vastly more touch'd with it than another person; and indeed I cou'd not put it out of my head, for several days. I was incessantly meditating on that force of reason and bravery, with which I suppos'd the breast of that man must have been inspir'd, who could thus resolve with himself to retire to so deep a solitude. To this I subjoyn'd the motive which had prompted him to it, viz. a hatred of treachery and injustice; and from these two, I form'd to myself a most amiable idea of this unknown. This, says I to myself, is a man I should infallibly love, in case I were so happy as to know him. He would also love me, for he would find that rectitude of soul in me, which he fancies is absolutely banish'd from among men. I have no friend left. Wherefore:

then should I not endeavour to make him one, whose temper and principles seem so suitable to mine? Besides, I shall do a generous and charitable office to an unhappy man, who seems not to deserve his ill-fate, if I contribute to the consolation of his sorrows; and to make him, perhaps, taste a thousand sweets, which he could never have flatter'd himself with the hopes of enjoying in this life. I therefore found myself strongly prompted, to go to the island of *Serrana* for this purpose. I enquir'd after its situation, and how far it was distant from us; and the several particulars I heard, engag'd me still more to visit it. This island lies to the south of *Jamaica*; so that as I had a design for some time to go for *Port-Royal*, in order to be certainly inform'd of the state of *England*; I could go by that city without going out of my way. This voyage wou'd not take up much time; and as the several nations who have settlements in this part of the *West-Indies*, were in a profound peace, I cou'd not apprehend the least danger. My wife was nevertheless very uneasy when I talk'd of going; however, I at last, by the arguments I us'd, made her approve of my enterprize. You wou'd not, says I, be against my undertaking a voyage, in case it would bring me to the possession of a treasure; and can you be against my undertaking one, which is suggested by virtue and compassion? Suffer me to go in search of the riches which I esteem. In case you love me enough to wish me happy, what need you care which way it is brought about, in case I am made so essentially? And then, as you are naturally so good-natur'd and generous, can you think after a different manner from me, what it is that forms the felicity of a tender and upright heart? When I tell you that I am in want of a friend; and that I shall undertake that voyage merely in this view; don't you perceive that such a treasure is worth looking after? My wife made but one objection to this: Am not I, says she, your wife? Am not I moreover, your tender, your faithful friend? Do you hope to meet with something in another, which you cannot find in me? To this I answer'd, that what I call'd the happiness of friendship, ought to be taken in a different sense. With regard to myself, says I, it is so far from supposing that I don't meet with every thing in you

you that is essential to the forming of my happiness; that 'tis on the contrary, because I am infinitely so; that I now want this other felicity which I seek in friendship. Hear me, dear *Fanny*, says I, and comprehend this riddle if you can. You, my charming creature, create my happiness; but then in order that I may be sensible of the happiness which I enjoy by your presence, it is necessary that I should have some person who is not you; to whom I may not only tell this, but in whom I may have confidence enough, to declare it with pleasure; and who may love me dear enough to be pleas'd at hearing it.

I embark'd at the *Havana* on a good ship, which was well mann'd; and the wind was so favourable, that I got to *Jamaica* the day after. I there met with an *English* vessel, arriv'd from the port of *London*, the captain whereof happily confirm'd all that *Don Pedro* had told me, with regard to king *Charles's* restoration. This was not a new event, that monarch having been return'd above two years from his exile; but then I was unacquainted with a great number of circumstances, which I had heard with the utmost pleasure. I afterwards enquir'd, whether any one had heard at *Port-Royal*, of an *Englishman* who had banish'd himself to the island of *Serrana*, where he resided, firmly resolv'd not to converse with his fellow creatures more. No one had heard of him; but I was told several particulars concerning that island, which made me much more desirous of visiting it. They assur'd me, that it borrow'd its name from one *Serrano*, a *Spanish* gentleman, who had liv'd a great number of years in it, in the same solitary manner as the *Englishman* whom I mention'd to them; that it was not only a very difficult matter to get near this island, because of the rocks which surround it; but even dreadful, especially in the night, because it seems to throw out flames, on that part of it which lies towards *Nicaragua*; that this had not prevented several people from having the curiosity to visit it; and that some things had happen'd which shew'd that the flames just now mention'd, were owing to an extraordinary cause.

Thereupon I was told, that Sir *George Ascough*, after having seiz'd in the parliament's name, upon *Barbadoes*, which

which the lord *Willoughby* commanded in the king's name; had intended, on the relation which he had heard of the island of *Serrana*, to go thither, merely out of curiosity. He arriv'd at it very happily, just after it was dark, but was a little afraid at the sight of the flames with which it seem'd to be entirely surrounded. Astonishment succeeded his fears, when he observ'd, as he drew nearer the shore, that the flames seem'd to draw back from him. He then went ashore with his crew, who were as brave as himself; and being resolv'd not to put off till the next day, the searching after the cause of this phænomenon; he advanc'd forward into the island, observing that the flames seem'd still to fly, as it were, before him. At last, when he now began to be persuaded that these flames were not real, but only an illusion of fancy; they stopp'd in such a manner, that it was impossible for him to go farther. But now being prodigiously surpriz'd, he walk'd a great many times round the place whence the flames issued, which seem'd to rise out of the earth, and to have no other fuel but that. He then held out his hands towards the flames, but they scorch'd them so prodigiously, that he was oblig'd to draw them back. The night being spent without any other accident, he observ'd that the flames disappear'd with the darkness. But seeing that a black vapour continued to rise from the same place, he order'd some of his sailors to return to the ship, and to bring back such instruments as were proper for digging. Four of them undertook to throw up the ground; but scarce had they dug up a lay of hot, and almost burning stones, which cover'd the surface; but the ground opening under their feet, they were swallow'd up alive, none of their companions daring to advance forwards, to assist them. Sir *George*, being vastly astonish'd at what he saw, and perhaps terrified, was for returning immediately on board; but both himself and his crew were intoxicated, whether this were owing to the vapour, or some other cause; insomuch that they found it a very difficult matter to get back to the shore. They even felt the most dreadful pains in all their limbs, as they drew farther from the island; and were not recover'd, till after they had repos'd themselves for some days.

Without

Without endeavouring to examine into the truth of this incident, which methought might be accounted for from natural principles, I thought only of setting out for *Serrana* as soon as possible. The wind continuing favourable, I reach'd it in a little time, but did not perceive any flames as I drew near the shore. 'Twas then, indeed, noon; and we were on the north side of it. I found that the banks of the island were very sandy and barren. We saw such a multitude of tortoises on the sand, that I had reason to believe, those who inhabited that solitude, did not want provisions. The island is not above three leagues in circumference, so that I did not doubt but it would be an easy matter for me to go round it before the day ended; and to find in some part or other, what I chiefly came in search of. Nevertheless, after I had gone a little up into the country, I saw so many little woods, and such a variety of soils; that I imagin'd it would not be so easy a matter for me to find the *Solitary* as I at first imagin'd. I rambled up and down, with part of the sailors, a great part of the afternoon. And now the evening coming on, I resolv'd to go to the top of a hill. whence, I saw, not only the surrounding ocean but also a great number of little valleys, which I had not seen before. I had not stood ten minutes upon it, when I spy'd, at about half a mile distance from me, a man who was walking slowly towards the bottom of a valley. I cou'd not doubt but this was the person I was in search of; and thereupon I order'd my sailors to wait there; and taking only one with me, I made as much haste as I could towards the valley, in order, if possible, to come up with the *Solitary*, before it was dark.

I got to him before he had taken any notice of us, and found that he was very near the place of his abode. I stop'd, in order to give him time to enter into it. 'Twas not a hole, as the *Spanish* captain had describ'd it, but a commodious hut, tho' built wholly of turf, rais'd upon wooden poles. I then went to the entrance of it, when the *Solitary* seem'd to be in a prodigious surprize. However, without discovering the least fear, he ask'd in *English*, what had brought me into that island, and if I had any business. As I resolv'd to be a little acquainted with

with him, before I reveal'd myself to him, I contented myself with making him a civil answer, to prevent his being alarm'd at my coming. He then ask'd me several questions; such as, whether I were an *Englishman*? whither I was bound for? whence I came? And having satisfied him in these several particulars, he seem'd to be highly pleas'd, when I told him I intended to go back to *Jamaica*; and thereupon desir'd I would carry him thither. This request surpriz'd me very much. I suppose, says I, that you are now weary of your solitude, and are resolv'd never to return again into this island—I came says he, with an air of the deepest melancholy, into this island, with a design of spending my days in it; but the just cause I have to hate mankind, cannot get the better of the affliction which preys upon me night and day. I am resolv'd to leave the island, and return to *Europe*. The world is fill'd with treacherous creatures; but since 'tis a necessary evil, I must arm myself with patience, and live as well as I can among them.

I gaz'd upon him attentively as he was talking. He had a promising aspect; but then I discover'd something severe in his looks, that did not fill me with the satisfaction, which I had flatter'd myself his presence would give me. He was pale and wan, and his clothes were very much tatter'd. I am surpriz'd, says I, that the motives which prompted you to withdraw to this solitude, should not be strong enough to engage you to continue in it. Are these so absolutely a secret, that you cannot reveal them to me? Upon my saying this, he desir'd me to sit down by him; and after musing a few moments, he said, that he did not know any reason which ought to engage him to conceal his name from me, as I appear'd to be a gentleman and a man of honour; and that the service I was going to do him, by the opportunity I furnish'd him with of returning into *Europe*, deserv'd, at least, that he should reveal himself to me.

My name, says he, is well known in the world. I am general *Lambert*. *Oliver Cromwell*, who ow'd all his fortune to me, and for whose sake I had sacrific'd every thing, abandon'd me in so perfidious a manner; that he was not ashamed, at last, to remove me from all my employments, which I had purchas'd with my blood.

blood and services. *Fleetwood* and *Desborough*, who were never capable of undertaking any thing without my advice; and who must have fallen, the moment I ceas'd to support them; betray'd me in a still more cruel manner; and this at a time when I ventur'd my life and fortune for their sakes. *Ingoldsby*, the most wicked wretch that ever liv'd; and who, nevertheless, was more oblig'd to me than to any other person, has nevertheless carried his ingratitude to such a pitch, as not only to abandon my interest, but even to attack me sword in hand; to seize, and sell me to general *Monk* for a sum of money; and after this to imprison me in a dungeon, where I was loaded with irons. Shall I relate to you, the several treacherous actions of my friends, of my creatures, and servants? I should now enjoy the protectorship instead of *Cromwell*, in case I cou'd have inspir'd those on whom I shower'd down numberless favours, I won't say with a lively sense of gratitude, but with those first seeds of humanity, which ought, at least, to engage people not to betray and ruin those to whom they owe their all. Unhappy man that I am! I have not met with fidelity in one man in the world; I have been abandon'd, betray'd, deliver'd up, condemn'd to die by a most cruel sentence; and afterwards pardon'd, but with such intolerable marks of contempt and disdain, that I cannot look upon life as a favour. The king had banish'd me for life to the island of *Guernsey*. I was divided for some time, whether it wou'd not be better for me to kill myself, than to go and bury myself in this sad solitude. I was in this uncertainty, when I was plung'd again into fresh distresses, by an accident which now fills me with as much shame, as it once did, with joy and sorrow alternately.

During my confinement in the tower, continued general *Lambert*, I had form'd a very strict intimacy with *Venables*, who also was imprison'd in it, after his return from *Jamaica*. Altho' he had succeeded in his expedition, and had subjected this island to the *English*; the protector was not so well pleas'd with this conquest, as he was dissatisfied that he had not seiz'd upon the island of *Hispaniola*. The measures which *Cromwell* had taken at *London*, for reducing that island, appear'd so infallible to him;

him; that being persuaded the ill success in this particular was owing to *Venables's* imprudence; he threw him into prison at his return from the *West-Indies*, where he continued till the king's restoration. I meeting with the same fate some time after, and as we were allow'd to converse with one another, he acquainted me with the secret causes why his enterprize had miscarried. He had sail'd from *England* with five thousand men; and with the protector's orders, seal'd up, which he was not allow'd to open, but when we was got to a certain latitude. A few days after they had lost sight of the *English* coasts, they met a *Spanish* vessel which was sailing for the *West-Indies*; and making themselves master of her, *Venables* found a most beautiful *Spanish* lady on board her, who was returning to *St. Domingo*, the place of her birth. *Venables* was captivated with her charms, when opening the protector's orders, and finding that they were commanded to make themselves masters of *Hispaniola*, and seize first upon *St. Domingo*, which is the capital thereof; he discover'd the secret of the expedition to his mistress. She was an artful woman, and took advantage of *Venables's* weakness, to make him betray his trust. 'Tis true, indeed, that she sacrific'd her charms upon this occasion; and whether it were out of gratitude for his having given her this strong testimony of his affection, or from the love she bore her country, whose ruin she thought it her duty to prevent, even at the expence of her honour; she surrender'd her person to her lover, as soon as he had perform'd his promise. *Venables* therefore neglected upon various pretences, to follow the plan which *Cromwell* had laid down. He made a descent at so great a distance from *St. Domingo*; that before he could put himself into a condition to besiege it, the *Spaniards* had time enough to fortify it so strongly, that it would be impossible for him to take it. He even made but very slight attacks, and merely as a blind. The conquest of *Jamaica* was afterwards the more easy, because he spar'd his sailors till he came upon that island; imagining that in case he could make himself master of it, this would more than atone for his ill success before *St. Domingo*. But he had to deal with a master, who was not to be easily impos'd upon; and who, tho' he was not inform'd of the motives of *Venables's* conduct,

conduct, he nevertheless threw him into prison at his return to *England*. However, the *Spanish* lady whom he brought with him into *England*, consol'd him for this disgrace. During his imprisonment, he put her into the hands of some trusty friends, who restor'd her to him faithfully. Being releas'd from his confinement, he retir'd with her to a house in the country, where she was not seen by any person but himself. I cannot say whether this dangerous creature grew weary of her solitude, or thought of methods how to return to her country; but I cou'd easily discover, the first time I saw her, that her love for *Venables* was very much abated. This was after the king had given me my life, sentenc'd me to perpetual banishment. I was still under the guard of a state-messenger, but had the liberty to visit my acquaintance; and as *Venables* had been one of long standing, I took a ride to his country retirement. I was charm'd with the beauties of his mistress, who perceiving it, and in all probability, thinking I might be of service to the design she had in view; she took such advantage of the inclination she saw I had for her, and which I took an opportunity of revealing, that she impos'd upon me in such a manner, as makes me blush at my weakness and credulity when I think of it. Her beauties made a very strong impression on my heart. Having been less us'd to the pleasures of love, than the intrigues of ambition and the military arts; I was overjoy'd to find her acquiesce so easily with my wishes. I fell desperately in love with her, and thought myself infinitely oblig'd to fortune, for preparing me so sweet a consolation, after the barbarous treatment I had met with from the fickle goddess. I first thought to propose her going with me to *Guernsey*; but she assur'd me, in the most artful terms, that we should be much safer, and spend our days in a more agreeable manner at *St. Domingo*. As I was quite intoxicated with love, I made little or no objection to her proposal, and thereupon she desir'd me to enquire after a ship which might carry us to *Spain*, and I presently met with one that was ready to sail for *Cadiz*. We both stole away so happily, that we were out at sea before any one cou'd have the least suspicion of our flight, or which way we were gone. The artful fair indulg'd the utmost of my wishes;

wishes ; and being arriv'd at *Cadiz*, we went on board another vessel, which carried us safe to *Hispaniola*. Here I was so much enchanted by my passion, that I did not entertain the least suspicion of any treacherous design. Her parents receiv'd her with the utmost joy ; when she inform'd 'em, I being present, that having been taken prisoner, by the *English* and carried to *London*, I afterwards had procur'd her escape from thence. She did not say any thing farther upon this head, altho' we both had agreed, that I should pass for her husband, and consequently that we should cohabit together. I must confess that I was vastly uneasy, when I found she did not mention any thing tending this way ; and therefore resolv'd to reproach her for it, as soon as we were alone : but as I still continued not to suspect any thing, I imagin'd that she chose rather to declare our pretended marriage to her relations in private ; and therefore I withdrew in order to give her an opportunity for that purpose. She, indeed, made her advantage of it, but 'twas to deceive me in a most barbarous manner. She confess'd our whole story to her father and her brothers, who thereupon resolv'd to dispatch me some way or other ; in order to bury in the same grave with me, their sister's adventures, and the scandal these might bring upon their family. I don't relate this merely from conjecture, for I heard it from their own mouths ; and therefore may justly look upon it as a miracle, that I had the happiness to escape out of their hands. The fatal blow would undoubtedly have been struck the following night ; but one of 'em having heard, that a vessel was to set out the next day for *Carthage*, they chang'd their bloody resolution, and thereupon resolv'd to put me on board of her, and to accompany me to that port, whence ships are continually sailing for *Europe*. Their design in going along with me, was, that I might not have a single opportunity of discovering my intrigue with their sister, till I had lost sight of the *American* coasts ; and therefore they resolv'd not to let me be a moment out of their sight. Three of these resolv'd to guard me in this manner. As I cou'd not once get to the sight or speech of my mistress all that afternoon, I at last began to suspect that matters did not go right. At night the three brothers inform'd me of the cause of it ;
and

and being, very probably, afraid, lest I should refuse to yield to their wishes, and by that means put them to some trouble; they declar'd to me, that they had first taken a resolution to dispatch me; however, as they had been so indulgent as to change it, I ought to be thankful upon that account, and embark immediately, in compliance with their desires. This plainly shew'd that my mistress had impos'd upon me, and that her brothers made me their laughing-stock. In the mean time, I was so narrowly watch'd, that I found it impossible for me to make my escape. I was made to leave the city, and walk to the port before day, when I was put on board a ship, which set sail a little after. The reader will naturally suppose that I was exasperated to the highest degree. I begg'd a thousand times of heaven, to sink the ship before we sail'd out of the harbour. The three brothers kept so vigilant an eye over me, that I had no opportunity to throw myself into the sea and swim away. 'Twas now no longer love that tortur'd my mind, but the confusion and shame I felt, to find my self so basely deceiv'd. To increas'e my misfortune, I scarce understood a word of *Spanish*. My guides, indeed, spoke *English* perfectly well; but I wish'd I had been able to express myself in all languages, in order to give myself the consolation, as soon as I should be got out of their hands; to publish a genuine account of the whole adventure, and to throw a lasting shame on the infamous creature who had treated me so cruelly. Whilst I was in this distraction, a strong gale springing up from the east, drove the ship a considerable way out of its course. The three brothers, who affected to treat me with the highest civility, bid me take notice of a great number of little islands, which are scatter'd up and down in this sea. They then, pointing to that in which we now are, gave me an account of one *Serrano*, who had led a solitary life in it for many years; and related so many things to the advantage of this little island, such as the beauty of the climate, and the fruitfulness of the soil, that I was at once determin'd to make it an asylum. I acquainted them immediately with my resolution, and as they had nothing to object to it, they desir'd the captain to let me be set ashore on it. He granted their request, and I was put on board the long boat.

boat. Never, sure, was resolution undertaken with greater eagerness, or executed with so much courage. Scarce wou'd I accept of some provisions, which were necessary for me, 'till such time as I should be a little acquainted with the island; and be able to furnish myself with such aliments as nature indulg'd spontaneously there. I saw those sail away who had brought me in the long boat, and would not so much as look upon them, or bid them farewell. May the whole progeny of perfidious mankind perish! wou'd I cry out an hundred times, in the transports of hatred, which swell'd my bosom; may all the habitable parts of the earth perish, since they abound with nothing but traitors and ungrateful wretches! I will live here banish'd from them all, and by that means shall be secure from treachery. In what other place cou'd I hope to meet with greater consolation? I am excluded my country for ever. Will it be worth my while, to undertake the voyage of the island of *Guernsey*, where I am allow'd to live? I possibly might raise my fortune in some foreign court, and get some honourable employment in the service; but then what constraint must I put myself under, and how must I mask myself, in order to procure friends and patrons? And then, shall I not be surrounded with men, that is, with wicked, perfidious wretches, whose society I so much abhor; and among whom I never enjoy'd the least satisfaction, even when I most endeavour'd to imitate their conduct?

These reflections, continued general *Lambert*, have had the power to support me in this place for some months; and to cheer my solitary hours, notwithstanding the miserable condition to which I am reduc'd. But I must confess, that I every now and then, am out of all patience. I don't find enough within myself, to fill my imagination perpetually; and to stop the restless activity, which makes me incessantly feel, that my heart still desires something more. By a very lucky accident I got a few books; but then, if you consider that war and politicks have been the chief employments of my life, you won't be surpris'd when I tell you, that I am not much delighted with reading; and that I perhaps peruse the finest works that were ever writ, without knowing them to be such; or, at least without tasting that exquisite

quisite pleasure, they would naturally give to a man who is fond of letters. I therefore shall think myself eternally oblig'd to you, in case you will be so good as to receive me on board your vessel, and carry me to *Jamaica*, to which I intend to banish myself. I am sensible that I shall meet with men in it; these will persecute and betray me again: But after I have suffer'd so much by their villainy, methinks I cannot dread it so much. As I know 'em so well, they can never treat me worse than I expect to be us'd by 'em.

Altho' the general had told me these particulars with some emotion, they yet were faint in comparison of those I felt, as he spoke. The very sound of his name, made my blood run cold. I knew but too well, that he had been one of the abominable instruments of my father's cruelties; and in case he really was not one of those, who sign'd the horrid sentence for executing the king; yet 'tis but too well known, that he had a great share in that crime by his detestable insinuations and counsels. So far, therefore, from finding my compassion increase for him, I was forc'd to commit a violent struggle upon myself, to restrain my indignation and the impulses of my hatred. Nevertheless, the relation of his sufferings gave me some anxiety for a moment. What I did not find myself prompted to from inclination, pity would have effected; had I been sure, that his abhorrence of ingratitude and treachery, arose from a love for virtue. He is a man, says I, and unfortunate, both which entitle him to my compassion. In case he has long swerv'd from duty, perhaps a happy repentance brings him again into the right path; and, indeed, his misfortunes ought naturally to produce this effect. As I made these reflections, while he was discoursing to me, it was impossible but I must discover an absence of mind. This he took notice of just as he was ending his story, when he ask'd me with a melancholy air what I thought of his calamities.

I look'd upon him stedfastly, and did not speak till after I had consider'd a moment what it would be proper for me to say. *General*, says I to him with a resolute tone of voice, you have acted imprudently. You ought, for your own sake, to conceal your name, which cannot but fill all those who know you with horror. Be
assur'd,

assur'd, that a man cannot with any grace exclaim against his fellow creatures, and call 'em perfidious wretches, when he himself may be justly reproach'd with the same crimes. But, continu'd I, you little think who I am. Any other man but myself, who detested your wicked attempts, and all those who resemble you; wou'd not, perhaps, let slip so fair an opportunity of ridding the earth of so wicked a wretch as you are. But as his majesty has indulg'd you his clemency, 'tis now the business of heaven to punish you, I wish from my heart, that you may escape the punishment you deserve, by a speedy repentance. Go back to *Europe*, and there spend your days, if this be not an impossibility, in a virtuous and honest way. I won't refuse to give you a cast to *Jamaica*.

The *General* was naturally proud and haughty, and therefore this answer fill'd him with indignation. His eyes darted fire; and thereupon he cry'd aloud, be who you will, you are a base creature, to insult me in the deplorable condition to which I am reduc'd. I am alone and defenceless; but thou art arm'd, and hast many companions. I beg of heaven that I may never set eyes on you more. He then desir'd me to go out of his hut; and added, that he'd sooner die than have the least obligation to me, and therefore bid me leave the island, and not trouble him more. *General*, says I in a mild voice, I did not intend to insult you. I have told you frankly what I think of your past conduct; and shou'd have declar'd my thoughts with the same freedom, were we both in *England*, and you at the head of your forces. You ought to look upon my sincerity as a favour; since after I had reproach'd you with your crimes, I nevertheless begg'd of heaven to change your inclinations. Don't be exasperated without a just cause; and in case you are weary of living in this island, lay hold of the opportunity you now have to leave it. His pride was so prodigiously shock'd to hear me continue to speak to him in this manner, that he was ready to burst. He therefore rush'd out of the hut, swearing that he would find some opportunity of meeting me, when he shou'd be in a happier condition, when he wou'd make me pay dear for the reproachful words I had us'd. I did not attempt to fetch him back,

but

but left his hut, and return'd to my companions. I thought I had done enough for a man of his character, in offering to take him aboard with us.

Nevertheless, in order to make this voyage of some advantage to me, I continued to view every part of the island, particularly the southern part of it; where I was very desirous of seeing, if possible, the phenomenon which Sir *George Ascough* had discover'd. As the night was not so dark, but I could see any thing of that kind, I coasted for a long time the shore opposite to *Nicaragua*; but I did not perceive the flames, or any thing of this nature in that part of the island. All I cou'd see was, a mixture of light and darkness, behind a hill, which perhaps may appear like fire and smoke, to those who sail at some distance from that island in the night. Although there was not any thing extraordinary in this sight, we yet made towards the hill, in order to discover the cause of that appearance. The whiteness or light seem'd to increase as we drew nearer to it; when at last, we found that it was no more than a fat and bituminous soil, on which there did not grow so much as a single blade of grass; and which was divided at certain distances by very deep ditches. Although it grew much lighter, we yet cou'd not discover those ditches perfectly, and therefore resolv'd to stay till day light, in order to view them. We then laid down in a meadow, in expectation of the dawn, which appearing, we plainly perceiv'd smoke issue from several of those clefts, and that the bottom was black and dry, like a place through which fire has pass'd. They were so deep, that we did not dare to go down into any of them; but I conjectured, that whether lightning had fallen on that bituminous earth, and set it on fire; or that the heat proceeded from something under the earth, there had been a prodigious fire in that place, which show'd there was some truth in the adventure that was related of Sir *George Ascough*.

Being return'd on board, the first thing I heard was, that a stranger was just come into the ship, who first ask'd where I was; and hearing I was still on shore, had desir'd to be convey'd to *Jamaica*. This person was general *Lambert*. I was told that he had hid himself in a nook of the ship, where he continu'd alone, deeply involv'd in thought,
with

with an air of gloom upon his countenance; and that all he did, was, only to enquire who I was, and upon what motives I was come to the island of *Serrana*. As the *Spaniards*, to whom he address'd himself, knew nothing of my private affairs; they therefore could tell him nothing farther but that I was an *Englishmen*, and that I was very intimate with the governor of *Cuba*. I therefore suppos'd, that, notwithstanding his resentments, he yet had consider'd matters coolly; and that he chose to be oblig'd to me upon this occasion, rather than continue in his solitude. I resolv'd not only to give him his passage, and use him in a handsome manner, but even not to see him till we came to *Port-Royal*, in order to save him the uneasiness which my presence must naturally give him. I order'd some of the sailors to attend upon him, and to set before him the best provisions we had on board the ship. However, he wou'd not accept of any thing but bare necessaries, and continu'd as reserv'd as ever. After we had spent part of the day in wandering up and down the island, we put out to sea, and meeting with a prosperous gale, we soon arriv'd at *Jamaica*. As the crew were going ashore, the general desir'd to speak with me privately in my cabin, which I readily consented to. He came up to me with an air of civility; when, says he, the service you have done me in taking me aboard, makes me forget the harsh and offensive expressions with which you accosted me. I do not know what reason you could have, to treat me in that manner, as I absolutely don't know you; and reveal'd my name and misfortunes to you, for no other reason but that they might engage your compassion. Nevertheless, I shall leave you without harbouring the least resentment, and shou'd even be proud to return the obligation. These words, being spoke in the mildest manner, made me doubtful for some moments, what answer I shou'd give him: But at last, after having reflected a little, I concluded, that one cou'd hardly expect that a Man of his odious character wou'd ever be reform'd, and consequently that he was not worth my notice. Thus, without explaining matters, I contented myself with assuring him that I did not wish him harm, and was even dispos'd to do him farther service. The only one, says he, I request of you, is, not to reveal my name to any person here; and

to

to order also such of the sailors as may know it, to keep it a secret. This I promis'd to do, and thereupon we parted. I have never seen him since; but I am inform'd, that he is now in *Guernsey*, and there leads a calm, unruffled life.

Tho' I had not any particular motive which cou'd oblige me to put in at *Jamaica*, I yet was pleas'd to be in *Port-Royal*, because I met with many of my countrymen in it. I had no particular friend there; but several persons whom I had spoke with when I first visited the Island, receiv'd me with great civility. I had not acquainted them with my fortune or designs; and all they knew of me, was, that I was their country-man, and had married the governor of *Cuba's* grand-daughter. As I was talking with some of them, they ask'd me whether I had not heard of the lord *Axminster*. The emotion I felt at hearing that name pronounc'd, had like to have made me reveal more than I intended to do. However, having recover'd myself, I thought proper to ask the person who put this question to me, what reason he had for so doing. He answer'd, that he had no other view in it, than only the curiosity of knowing what was become of his lordship, who had made some noise in the *West-Indies* a few years before; but since that time had disappear'd, no body being able to give any account of him: that the general opinion was that a company of barbarous savages had put him to a cruel death; but that the king, since his restoration, had employ'd several persons to find him out, if possible, which yet had been done to no purpose; that since my putting in at *Jamaica*, in my way to the land of *Serrana*, a ship had pass'd before *Port-Royal*, the captain whereof being an *Englishman*, (his crew consisting of various nations) had made great enquiry after that nobleman and his followers; but not hearing any thing satisfactory, had put out to sea again, without saying any thing with regard to the design of his voyage.

I could not doubt, upon hearing this, but that Mrs. *Lallin* had given orders for making this enquiry. I even fancied that she herself was on board the ship they mention'd; and that not being able to hear any news at *Jamaica*, she was, in all probability, return'd to *Cuba*, in order to get some informations from the governour,

whose daughter she knew viscount *Axminster* had married. I thereupon resolved to sail forthwith for the *Havana*. 'Twas a very great pleasure to me, to think that I shou'd, very likely, meet again with a lady, to whom I ow'd so many obligations. This made me think the time very long. At last we arriv'd, when I found two persons coming to meet me upon my landing. But who shou'd these be but my brother *Bridge* and his friend *Gelin*? I was in raptures at seeing them, and immediately forgot our past animosities, not knowing the troubles which wou'd afterwards be brought upon me. I flew to embrace them, and expressed myself in the warmest language which friendship cou'd suggest.

They arriv'd a week before me, and having acquainted the governor and my wife with their names, they had met with the kindest treatment. As we walk'd towards the town, they related their adventures to me. These were a mixture of pleasures and sorrows, as always happens in those incidents which depend on fortune. Having long wandred in search of the island they so strongly wanted to find, they at last discover'd it; but had ow'd that Happiness to a most fatal accident. After they had continued their course for several months since we parted; they return'd to *St. Helena*, forc'd thereto, as much by the despair they were in of ever finding what they sought for; as by the necessity they were under of getting provisions, they having now scarce any left. They had winter'd in that island, designing to put out to sea again in the spring. Whilst they were beginning to prepare for it, they one day saw a little vessel belonging to the colony come into the harbour, with but a few people on board her. As they were equally overjoy'd and surpriz'd, they ran to speak to them, when they caress'd them with the highest transports; but at the same time were resolved to watch them so narrowly, that it shou'd be impossible for them to steal away unperceiv'd. But there was no occasion to use these precautions; for these unhappy people were coming voluntarily to discover their habitation, and to sue for the governor's assistance. A contagious distemper which spread the year before in the colony, had swept away the greatest part of them; insomuch that scarce an hundred of them surviv'd. The few

few who remain'd, had struggled courageously with their afflictions ; they had paid the last friendly office to their companions, and as the infection was abated in the beginning of the winter, they had flatter'd themselves with the hopes of repairing, in time, the dreadful havock death had made. However, as their lands lay uncultivated, and a deep melancholy reign'd ; besides a thousand present difficulties, and the most dreadful fears with regard to futurity ; these made 'em unanimously resolve to leave the country, and to seek for some other asylum. This desire was very much increas'd, after they came to know the situation of the island. Those who were entrusted with that secret, had been forc'd to reveal it in their dying moments ; and in the perpetual uneasiness which the presence of death cou'd not fail of filling every person with ; they had not taken the usual care to prevent its spreading. All the surviving inhabitants were therefore soon inform'd of it ; and the circumstance at last happen'd, which the wisdom and prudence of their ancestors had made 'em apprehensive of in the infancy of their establishment ; I mean that when once they should come to know the place, they would be for leaving it immediately.

In order to clear up whatever may have been found extraordinary in the description I have given of this mysterious colony ; I must relate what I myself saw of it, in my return to *Europe*. The southern part of the island of *St. Helena* is surrounded with rocks, some of which are of a prodigious height, and serve as so many ramparts to that part of the island ; the others, which arise no higher than the surface of the water, keep large ships from coming near it ; and is inaccessible even to the smallest vessels, in case those who steer them are not perfectly acquainted with all the turnings and windings in that part. This is the reason why this coast, which besides is far from appearing beautiful, has been a long time neglected by the inhabitants of the island. 'Twas first inhabited by the *Portuguese* ; but these were but a few, and their settlement towards the north was a very inconsiderable one. But what is singular, is, that those craggy rocks which surround the southern part of the island, have a Plain in the midst of them, seventeen or

eighteen miles long ; and as they surround it not only on that side which lies towards the sea, but also on the land side ; 'tis by that means hid from the sight every way. Whenever any of the inhabitants who go round it, perceive that the rocks lie between them and the plain, they fancy themselves at the extremity of the island, and that there is nothing beyond it but the sea. Those who sail towards them from the south, imagine, on the contrary, that the rocks which they perceive towards the sea, are the boundaries of the inhabited and known part of the island. Thus, on both sides different rocks are seen, in the midst whereof the plain above mention'd is situated ; and which are of so prodigious a height, that they all look to be but one rock, altho' the piece of ground within, is a great many miles wide.

This plain which is so well conceal'd, and so happily defended by nature, is the very place whither providence had conducted the *Rochellers* ; and which my brother *Bridge*, calls in his relation, the island of the colony. The reader may now easily suppose, how it was possible for the inhabitants of this peaceable retreat, to spend so many years in it undiscover'd by their neighbours ; and without knowing that the spot they liv'd upon was part of the island of *St. Helena*. This secret, after having been discover'd by *Drington*, had been preserv'd by a small number of old men, who had kept it inviolably, till the havock made by the infection abovemention'd, had forc'd them to reveal it. As soon as the inhabitants who surviv'd, knew that so many of their fellow-creatures liv'd near them, they cou'd not but desire to have a correspondence with them ; and in the perplexity with which they were fill'd, to see so many of their companions swept away, they consequently must grow weary of this once delightful solitude ; and thereupon had resolv'd to dispatch some of their people, in order to inform the governor of *St. Helena* of their distress, and to implore his assistance.

My brother and his two friends were overjoy'd at the sight of these deputies ; but felt emotions of a very different nature, when they heard that the colony was ruin'd, and scarce had power to ask whether their wives were living

living or dead. My poor brother *Bridge* fear'd to hear the latter, as much as he wou'd to have sentence of death past upon him. It happen'd however, by the indulgence of heaven, that the greatest loss fell on the person who was best able to bear it; I mean that *Gelin* only had lost his wife. My brother made the deputies repeat over and over, that his dear *Angelica* was living; and happy, for ever happy, says he, am I, in that I shall see, and possess her again. *Johnson* was in no less raptures. Their joy was not interrupted till they heard of Mrs. *Eliot's* death, of that of her eldest daughter, and a great many other persons, for whom they had the greatest affection. The three faithless young fellows, who had betray'd their wives and companions, had also left the world. *Gelin* was seiz'd at first with the deepest pangs; but thanks to his complexion, which made him equally incapable of being long afflicted; he soon recover'd so well, that his companions were no longer afraid grief wou'd prove fatal to him. My brother's impatience to see his wife was so great, that he scarce wou'd allow the deputies to declare their commission to the governor. He was of great service to 'em upon that occasion, in so much that they obtain'd whatever they requested. A great many of the inhabitants of *St. Helena*, accompanied them in little vessels, and the governor's curiosity was so great, that he himself went also. Being arriv'd, they found so much of the ancient order and discipline, remaining among the unhappy survivors, as surpriz'd them very much. *Johnson's* and my brother's unexpected arrival, fill'd their wives with inexpressible joy. They now no longer dreaded a tyrannical Ecclesiastic, or severe elders, to oppose their happiness. Love, virtue and even fortune conspir'd together to reward, and make them forget their past woes. Happy husbands! who at last saw their tranquillity founded on a most solid basis, and which was not to be interrupted till death.

The governor having offer'd to convey all the inhabitants of the colony and their effects, to the other part of the island, there to incorporate with those who were under his government; they consented to it, and immediately prepar'd every thing for that purpose. They di-

vided, equally, the monies which were in the store-house; and by that means each of them had a handsome competency for the remainder of his days. However, they consider'd that being protestants, it would perhaps be a very difficult matter for them to live for any time, in a good harmony with the *Portugueze*, as they are such bigots to their religion. A prudent foresight with regard to what might happen, prompted them to entreat the governor to indulge them, at some distance from their habitation, a place convenient for them to form a new one in. They promis'd to submit to his authority, provided he would allow them a liberty of conscience, and allow them the same privileges with the rest of the inhabitants. This was concluded on both sides by a solemn oath; after which, some *Englishmen* who liv'd among the *Portugueze*, joyn'd with their countrymen in order to lay the foundations of a new town. It was soon built, and made regular, and has since been very much enlarg'd by the great number of *English* and *French* refugees who came and resided among them. My brother and his friends had fix'd their abode there; and spent a year in reposing themselves after their toils, and in tasting the sweets of their good fortune. However, my brother was of so excellent a disposition, that he cou'd not resolve with himself to be happier than I was. The unhappy condition in which he had left me at the *Havana*, was incessantly present to his memory, and wou'd not suffer him to take a moment's ease. Tho' he had once abandon'd me for his wife's sake, at a time when he was really as much to be pitied as myself; he afterwards consider'd that I was his brother, and consequently had some right to his assistance. Having acquainted *Gelin* with the resolution he had form'd, of going in search of me; or at least to go as far as the island of *Cuba*, in order, if possible, to hear whether I was living or dead; he engag'd *Gelin* to accompany him. He desir'd *Johnson* to take care of his wife and daughter during his absence; and then going aboard the same vessel, which had carried them before, they sail'd directly for *Jamaica*, and afterwards for the *Havana*, where they arriv'd safe.

I was overjoy'd to see him, and thank'd him a thousand times when he told me what he had undertaken for my sake. I not only met with a brother; I who had always consider'd myself as a branch that was cut away from the trunk, and had no root; but now I acquir'd unexpectedly, what I so earnestly panted after, and what I had sought for in vain in *Serrana*, I mean a friend; a companion of my fortune; one who was witness to my conduct and my sentiments, and the confidant of my pleasures and my pains. I discover'd to him, the vast satisfaction that this was to me. You shall not, says I, clasping him tenderly to my bosom, leave me any more; or in case you should be forc'd to go to some place, you shall let me go along with you. You are my brother; but I feel that you are going to be something still more dear and precious; you shall be my tender, my faithful friend. Fortune may treat me as she pleases; but I shall not fear the utmost efforts of her malice, provided she does but suffer me to enjoy always what I now possess. And indeed, my heart was so easy, and my imagination so agreeably fill'd; that I cannot but consider this instant as one of the most happy I was ever blest with. In the same moment, I united in the same point of sight, the several circumstances of my felicity, and I contemplated them with extasy. I held my dear brother in my arms: I was going to be clasp'd in those of my fond wife; all gloomy reflections on my past misfortunes, were now banish'd from my mind. I now wanted only to have my sister-in-law at the *Havana*; not only from the satisfaction which I propos'd to reap from her presence, but because I foresaw my brother wou'd soon grow weary of the *Havana* unless she were there, and therefore would return to *St. Helena*. This reflection made me advise him to dispatch immediately some person whom he cou'd trust, on board the same ship which had brought me. I soon prevail'd with him to change the place of his abode, and to settle at the *Havana* with us; but could not keep him from going after his wife; he therefore told me, that he was absolutely resolv'd to embark in a few days, and fetch his wife from *St. Helena*.

My wife was overjoy'd to see him, and was much more so with the thoughts of having my sister-in-law soon with her. However, I form'd a design that gave her some uneasiness, which was, to accompany my brother in his voyage. I had been so much us'd to ramble up and down the seas, that I wou'd go any where. My wife was safe at the *Havana* : A few months absence wou'd make us fonder of one another at my return : not to mention, that such is the disposition of our souls, that we sometimes have occasion for this remedy, to prevent our love from growing cold. This I had often reflected upon. A heart that is naturally tender and constant, can never grow obdurate ; but familiarity with what one loves, and a habit of seeing one another perpetually, deadens the fire of love at last. A little art keeps it from falling into a lethargy ; and the assistance, which a man who is us'd to reflection, may draw from his ideas, in order to strengthen his impulses, renders him more susceptible of a strong and lasting passion, than the generality of mankind. In case there was a little experience in this reasoning, it yet did not proceed from a diminution of my affection for my wife ; but I had observ'd, that these little cautions, which I call art in a lover who makes use of his reason, had more than once increas'd both her ardour and mine ; and I concluded, that a circumstance which was capable of heightning a passion like ours, ought consequently to be more able to prevent its dying away.

I frequently, for instance, us'd to spend the greatest part of the day among my books, and not to admit any person into my solitude. Then the image of my wife wou'd present itself a thousand times to my fancy, when I wou'd wish myself with her. I wanted something to be perfectly easy in my mind : But after I had spent the time I had propos'd in study, I return'd to her with all the eagerness of a lover, when I would be infinitely delighted with her fond endearments. My wife did not deny but she found the very same effects ; and I myself plainly perceiv'd that it heightned her ardour. She would complain with a most lovely grace, of my unkindness in leaving her, and shutting myself up in my study. The uneasiness she felt in my abience, made her
desire

desire to be with me, in those hours which I spent among my books. I'll only be in the room, wou'd she say, but I wont interrupt you a moment; I myself will read some good book or other, or write down the trifling thoughts which may come into my head. I consented to indulge her this satisfaction; but found her presence was incompatible with the application which study requires. If she stirr'd but ever so little, my eyes would, involuntarily as it were, be upon her; she wou'd not speak a word upon these occasions; but then a glance, or a smile, would confuse my imagination, more than the noise of a large company of people cou'd possibly have done. Sometimes, it was not in my power to continue in my seat, and check the impulse which prompted me to go and sit down by her. This wou'd fill her with the utmost joy, when she wou'd reproach me; laughing at the same time, at my great weakness, which she said dishonour'd my philosophy. We then wou'd spend the rest of the time in tenderness and toying.

To speak the truth, I cou'd not reflect seriously on this whimsical medley of grave and serious occupations, without being a little asham'd at it. My studies were of so severe a kind, that they merited respect even from love itself; and therefore I begg'd my wife not to come any more into my study, but to let me go on in my usual method. This she at last consented to, but with the utmost difficulty. However she would sometimes come running into my study, and assure me at her coming in, that she'd stay but a moment: Nevertheless, she'd sometimes stay several hours, which she would employ either in entertaining me with trifles, or in buzzing about me, and tumbling over my books and papers. In fine, I at last had so much strength of mind as to tell her one day, that I was absolutely resolv'd not to be interrupted, and that I was vex'd she interrupted me so often. I can't say whether the air with which I spoke these words, was so serious as to persuade her I spoke in earnest; but having continued silent for some time, and finding I read on, she left the room without speaking a word, and withdrew into her own. I did not recollect till a moment after, the manner in which she had left me. This was a pain to me, and

knowing that she was very much affected with every thing of this kind ; I ran to her chamber, in order to remove the uneasiness which this might have given her. I found her seated, her head upon her hand, and the tears streaming from her eyes. She endeavour'd to assume a different aspect when I appear'd ; but when I told her, that 'twas a fear of having offended her, which had made me leave my study, she cou'd not stop her tears, which began again to flow. I prest her to tell me what it was that rais'd such tumults in her bosom ; but it was a long time before I cou'd prevail with her to speak, when she cast her eyes downwards, and complain'd that I was very much alter'd with regard to her ; and that I surely cou'd have but very little affection for her, since her company was so disagreeable, and that of a book so delightful. She added, she saw but too plainly, that in losing her dear father, she had lost the principal tie which bound me to her ; and that in case I continued my indifference, she should be the most unhappy woman breathing.

Altho' I was conscious that I did not deserve such severe reproaches, I yet did not examine whether they were just or not, but endeavour'd to console her, by the most tender assurances of love and fidelity. We then were good friends. So far from being angry with her upon this account, I on the contrary esteem'd her the more for it ; and interpreted it as the effect of a great delicacy of sentiments, which ought to endear her to me the more. I even accus'd her for having till now, entertain'd a wrong idea of one of the principal duties of virtue and wisdom. The scope and end of my studies ought to be, not only to endeavour to procure felicity, and make my self as perfect as possible, but also to make me contribute as much as I cou'd to the happiness of others : For these two obligations affect almost equally a virtuous and reasonable man, who finds that he was form'd for society ; and consequently that he owes almost as much to others, as he does to himself. Now what odd kind of fruit did I propose to reap from my studies, in case that my very application to them, produc'd an effect quite different from what reason ought to make me desire ? I study, wou'd I say, to form my heart to humanity, good nature and affability ; and the labour I employ to this purpose, and by which I fancy I shall

shall attain the last mention'd perfections, remove me still farther from them; and make me be guilty of every thing, it ought to make me avoid. This occupation offends my wife, makes me absent in thought; severe, and even sour and unpolite, since my usage forc'd tears from my eyes; consequently I am far from treading the paths of wisdom and virtue; or rather, I have struck into the true path, but don't walk in it as I ought to do. I am like to a man who should endeavour to please, but who, for want of skill and address in his services, shou'd only be troublesome and importunate; by this means, the method he had employ'd to make himself be belov'd, wou'd only incur hatred.

But, abstracted from this motive, which was drawn merely from the ideas of order; and which acted, if I may so express myself, only on my reason; I needed only to follow the impulses of my heart, which alone would have suggested every thing, that was adapted to please my dear wife. I therefore appointed the hours I should employ in study, in concert with her; I fix'd such bounds to it as she desir'd; and one of the chief conditions which I was oblig'd to consent to, was, that she should be allow'd access to my study whenever she should have a fancy for it; and to intermix a little love with my most serious occupations. But she made an ill use of this liberty; for so strong was her passion, that she cou'd not bear to be a moment out of my sight. I will not scruple to own that I was as weak as she cou'd be, for she had never appear'd so charming to my eyes. The reader may remember, that she was very young when I married her, so that her charms were but just opening: However, she was in that bloom of youth, when beauty triumphs in its greatest perfection. Indeed the fatigues and troubles she had gone through in *America*, had chang'd her prodigiously; but then the ease and repose she had enjoy'd at the *Havana*, had given her flush of health, which diffus'd the utmost grace over her whole countenance. I therefore grew fonder of her than ever. Sweetest *Fanny*! I lov'd her more dearly than I did myself. Why should I blush at so just, so lawful a passion; and how would it be possible for me to describe shortly the extremes of my ill fortune; in case I did not here confess the excess of my love?

Nevertheless,

Nevertheless, as I always watch'd so carefully over my desires, as to keep them in due bounds; I therefore did not abandon myself so entirely to the transports of my present tenderness, as not to reflect often on futurity. As my heart was just as I wish'd it to be; it was necessary for my happiness, that it should always continue so. 'Twas in this view that I would frequently meditate on the nature of our inclinations and fondnesses; when putting my heart to every kind of trial, I endeavour'd to discover what was capable either to heighten or weaken its sensations. Every discovery I made, I immediately verified it by experience. Without acquainting my wife with my design, I try'd, as it were. the efficaciousness of my remedies upon her, like to a physician, who should continually study the health of a person he loves; and who, without waiting till she should be oppress'd with sickness, should examine the nature of her constitution, and consider what cou'd prejudice it; should prepare preventive doses, and some times make her take them; with no other view, but only to see the effects they may produce when they may be wanted; or to prevent a fit of sickness, which certainly is a better method than to stay till the disease begins to make its attacks. I thus employ'd my whole attention and skill, in searching every thing that might fix my love in *Fanny's* heart. These short observations above mention'd, artfully carried on; had prov'd of wonderful service to this purpose; and I had experienc'd the effects of this more than once, even before I went to the island of *Serrana*, and my brother's arrival. Altho' these voluntary partings were almost as grievous to me as they could be to my wife, I yet was determin'd to this by my reason, and buoy'd up by the hopes of meeting with a strong increase of affection at my return.

I therefore persisted in the resolution of accompanying my brother and *Gelin* to *St. Helena*. About six weeks after they had been at the *Havana*, we all embark'd in their ship, which I had caus'd to be well refitted and stor'd with provisions. We put in at *Jamaica*, purposely for the sake of hearing some news from *Europe*. A vessel from *England* was just come into *Port-Royal*. I went and spoke to the captain, who did not acquaint me with any considerable piece of news. But letting me into the motives of

of his voyage, and informing me that he was to sail very shortly for *Virginia*, he made me engage in a design, whence I am to date the æra of the most dreadful of all my misfortunes. I did not fail to ask him whether he intended to go as far as *Pawhatan*, when he answer'd, that place was to be the limits of his course. Hearing this, I desir'd him very earnestly to enquire there after one Mrs. *Lallin*, a *French* lady; and in case he met with her in that town, to inform her that I liv'd in the island of *Cuba*, with the governor of the *Havana*; and that I desir'd her to come to me the first opportunity. The captain not only undertook the commission, but added that he would bring the lady in his own vessel, which was a trader. He had unloaded part of his cargo in *Jamaica*; and as the goods he had brought from *England* were design'd for our countrymen, he intended to sell the rest in our northern colonies. From thence he intended to return, after he had freighted his vessel with the goods of the country, into the gulph of *Mexico*; and there barter them with the *Spaniards*, for merchandise which he design'd to bring into *Europe*. This was so favourable for Mrs. *Lallin*, that I did not doubt but she might be at the *Havana*, before I was return'd from *St. Helena*. After reflecting how easily this voyage might be undertaken, I resolv'd to accompany the captain to *Pawhatan*; and was persuad'd that I might justly pay this compliment to Mrs. *Lallin*, since I had receiv'd so many obligations from her. However I consider'd that my brother and *Gelin* would perhaps be displeas'd to find I had chang'd my resolution of going along with them, altho' my company cou'd not be of any great advantage to them. I then propos'd my design to 'em, which they declar'd to be a very just one; and only seem'd sorry that I was going to leave them. In fine, what shall I say to justify this fatal voyage? In case all events are conducted by the hand of providence, in such a manner that nothing happens without its immediate direction; ought I to ascribe it to any other cause than its will; and is it not manifest that neither wisdom nor reflection, could have chang'd its decrees?

I left my friends, after having agreed upon the time when we should meet again; and was persuad'd that I should

should return before them. I then went on board, highly delighted with considering how agreeably I should surprise Mrs. *Lallin*. In this manner my blind desire led me to destruction, for every step I now took brought me nearer it. I was going to light the fire which was to consume me; and involve my wife, my friends and every thing I held dearest, in my ruin. To what a degree ought I to hate Mrs. *Lallin*! a fury, whose memory I ought to abhor! To her I owe my destruction; and but for her should I not have been happy? Had not fate now softned its rigours, and had I the least reason to suspect a change? Alas! I was so overjoy'd at my condition, that I began to forget my past misfortunes; and now saw them only in distant prospect, when a fatal brand of hatred and discord, came and lighted again the almost dying flames; tore open the former wounds of my heart, and added to these the most dreadful, the most unforeseen shocks which endanger'd my honour, my life and my reason. Nevertheless, at the same time that I accuse this lady of being the cause of all my woes, I yet must confess, that she was innocently so. In what part of the world soever, her despair and unhappy fate may have conducted her steps, this is a piece of justice I owe her. She was affable obliging, kind to my family, of a most peaceable disposition, and incapable of contributing voluntarily to the evils she has brought upon me. She has ruin'd me, but then 'twas undesignedly; however, 'tis not in the power of her innocence to change my wretched condition.

The wind having continued to favour us, till we arriv'd in the mouth of the river *Pamhatan*, we arriv'd happily at the town. I was inform'd by the first person I met with, that Mrs. *Lallin* was still in it, and had liv'd there in a very honourable manner. I got this person to carry me immediately to her house. The sight of me fill'd her with inexpressible satisfaction. I discover'd as much, and heightned her joy considerably, when I protested that I had undertaken that voyage, purely for her sake. She accepted with pleasure the asylum, I offer'd her in the island of *Cuba*; when she besought me to believe, that next to my wife, no person in the world lov'd.

lov'd me so dearly as herself; and that she wou'd always endeavour to behave in such a manner, as might make her worthy my esteem. She gave me a long account of the various adventures she had met with, which mov'd me prodigiously. Captain *Wills*, to complete his villainy, had made her his wife by force; for he oblig'd the chaplain of his ship to repeat the form of words us'd in marriage; but as he had extorted answers from her, it consequently was not valid; nor, indeed, did he himself ever intend to consider himself as lawfully married to her. All he wanted was to save his reputation, by covering his base action with that veil of honesty; and to prevent not only the scandal, but even the punishment, which he might justly dread at his return to *England*. As he was absolute monarch on board his own ship, he forc'd Mrs. *Lallin* to submit to all his brutish laws. He had carried her to *Jamaica* and *Virginia*; and tho' he at last began to treat her a little more civilly, he yet did not use her as a wife, but as a mistress, whom he imagin'd he might dispose of as he thought proper. As for poor Mrs. *Lallin*, who was perpetually bewailing her sad fate, she had made several attempts to get out of the tyrant's hands; but all was to no purpose, so long as the captain's wild passion made him watch over her continually. At last, when it began to cool; and that he, designing to return to *Europe*, wanted, possibly, to leave her in *America*, she found he did not watch her so strictly as before. Captain *Wills* was then return'd to *Jamaica*, where he was to leave part of his forces; and had given Mrs. *Lallin* leave, to go ashore at *Port-Royal*, and stay there some days. Being there, she acquainted an honest gentleman with the barbarous usage she had met with, who thereupon promis'd to assist her in her escape; and indeed found an opportunity to put her on board a ship which sail'd for *Lucayoneca*: 'Twas not till after a great variety of adventures, and a numberless multitude of troubles, that she got to *Virginia*, where she flatter'd herself with the hopes of meeting with viscount *Axminster*, and perhaps me along with his lordship. As she had taken care to keep all the money and jewels she had brought from *France*, she was thereby enabled to lead a very agreeable life at *Pawhatan*; where her prudence and politeness gain'd her so much esteem,

that

that several of the most wealthy gentlemen in the town, were her suitors, and were very urgent with her to change her condition.

Mrs. *Lallin* was so well pleas'd with what I had done for her; and the hopes she entertain'd of living peaceably in my family, and enjoying my wife's company, sooth'd her so agreeably; that she was very impatient to leave *Pawhatan*. The captain finish'd all his affairs in a fortnight, when the wind being fair, we set sail. I had the pleasure, at our setting out, to see all the worthy part of the inhabitants discover the utmost regret at her departure, and give her the highest testimonies of their esteem and veneration.

In the voyage, I found by her conversation, that notwithstanding the calamities she had pass'd thro', her good sense and sweet temper were not any ways diminish'd. So far from it, her sorrows seem'd to have strengthened her reason; and I esteem'd her infinitely more, for having drawn such excellent fruits from adversity. She had a just turn of thinking; express'd herself with the utmost grace; and every thing she said was so judicious and solid, as sooth'd very agreeably my contemplative disposition. I did not conceal from her the pleasure which this was to me. I shall gain, says I, a much greater advantage by our meeting, than you; for you now will very much contribute to the happiness of my life. Those things which I thought myself bound to do for you out of gratitude, I now shall be prompted to from self-interest. Your conversation will be a kind of delightful study, whence I shall reap greater benefit, than it will be possible for me to do from books. I then told her, that I expected to meet with my brother *Bridge* at the *Havana*, whose temper and disposition and mine were very like. What a happy life, says I, are we going to lead! Our life will be a life of wisdom. We shall spend part of it in reading, and the rest in communicating our reflections to one another. My wife too is qualified to have her share in it. Our felicity will now be perfect; for, there is no likelihood that fate will ever persecute us more. Our condition of life is fix'd; so that now we seem to be secure from the malice of fortune. Such was my blindness in the greatest danger with which
I was.

I was ever threatned. I was just on the brink of it, at the same time that I thought myself in the greatest security; and all things conspir'd to confirm me a long time, in in the most fatal of all errors.

We arriv'd at the *Havana*. Some business I had to do for the captain who had brought us, having detain'd me a good while in the port; my return was spread so soon, that Don *Pedro* the governor and my wife, came to me, before I had done the captain's affairs. I was surpriz'd to see the governor's coach; and believing that he was come in it with my wife; I took Mrs. *Lallin* by the hand, and walk'd with her up to the coach. My wife took her at first for my sister-in-law, whom she imagin'd I had brought from St. *Helena*. I immediately undeceiv'd her, and inform'd her that this was the lady who had writ to me when we were among the *Abaquis*; who had left *France* with me, had given me the highest testimonies of her friendship and generosity; in a word, that 'twas Mrs. *Lallin*, whom I presented to her, a lady of the greatest good sense and merit. I then told her in very few words, the opportunity I had met with of going to *Pawhatan*; and that I had desir'd her to live with us, as I had agreed at her leaving *France*. Look upon her as a second Mrs. *Riding*, and I desire you to make her your friend. If the reader recollects what I have said, on more than one occasion, of my wife's temper, and of that uneasy delicacy which inclin'd her to jealousy; he then will easily account for all I am now going to relate. Let him call to mind the deep melancholy which prey'd upon her, when we liv'd among the *Abaquis*; the fears which it was not in her power to suppress even but a few weeks after our marriage; her distraction, her sighs and tears; then whoever peruses this fatal part of my story, will be much better acquainted with the cause of my calamity, than I myself was when it befel me. But who would have found it out, had not I let him into these several particulars? But as I have thus prepar'd my readers, they will clearly see into the obscurity, in which they will behold me walk. They'll have a full view of all my woes; alas! why did not some power whisper to me, that I was running headlong to destruction?

As I did not entertain the least suspicion that this interview would be attended with any fatal consequences; I did not so much as observe what countenance my wife assum'd, when I spoke the above-mention'd particulars; I was wholly taken up with the pleasure which her presence gave me, and the reflection that I had now procur'd her an agreeable friend. Nevertheless, had I examin'd my wife's countenance, I should have perceiv'd, as I since heard, a great alteration in it, as well as constraint in her whole person. The opinion my wife had entertain'd that I lov'd Mrs. *Lallin*, ever since she had known that this lady had left *France*, purely for the sake of accompanying me to the *West-Indies*; and the confirmation she imagin'd she had, by my having so long conceal'd the last mention'd particular; these two reasons, I say, were alone more than sufficient to make her hate Mrs. *Lallin*. When she found that I myself not only desir'd to have her live with us; but that I had undertaken the voyage, purely to fetch her to the *Havana*, and offer her an asylum with us; she fancied it was but too plain, that I lov'd her, and consequently that I had impos'd upon her, even in the very infancy of our marriage; or did not value her, now I had met with her rival. What an unhappy progress did this reflection make, in a person of my wife's character? Tender beyond expression; fearful and easily alarm'd; ever fancying I did not love her enough; prey'd upon, moreover, by a gentle melancholy, which made her fond of solitude, in which she might indulge her meditations in my absence. Alas! the instant of my arrival was the last of her repose. My dear wife now tasted fictitious joys only, a circumstance she nevertheless conceal'd from all; and her habitual disposition was grief, with all the sad effects which accompany it.

I was so far from perceiving this change, that I, on the contrary, thought myself in the happiest period of my life. I now wanted only my brother, and his *Angelica*, and then, methought, I cou'd have nothing farther to wish for. I observ'd this to my wife, who answer'd with her usual tenderness. I desir'd her to use Mrs. *Lallin* kindly; and as this lady seem'd now entirely cur'd of the passion she so long had for me; I did not scruple to be extremely

remely civil to her upon all occasions, which she interpreted as a mark of the great esteem I had for her. My wife would every now and then put so much a constraint upon herself, as to shew the utmost complaisance to Mrs. *Lallin*; however, it afterwards appear'd that this was merely specious. She herself wou'd be vex'd to the soul, whenever I lavish'd compliments upon a woman whom she consider'd as her rival; and discours'd to, or took a turn with her in the governor's garden. On these occasions she would often come and interrupt us; and tho' she would assume a smiling countenance, I since consider'd, that I might easily have perceiv'd she was very uneasy in her mind, had I not always consider'd the uneasiness in her temper, as the usual effects of her melancholy.

During two months, she did not give the least indication of her being under any manner of concern upon Mrs. *Lallin*'s account. But the arrival of my brother, his wife and *Gelin*, plung'd both *Fanny* and myself into an abyss of calamity. Don *Pedro*, who was vastly kind, was persuad'd, as we discover'd so much joy at their arrival, that he could not possibly oblige us more, than in offering to take them into his house; a favour which I at last prevail'd with them to accept of. My brother *Bridge* lov'd *Gelin* so dearly, that he cou'd not bear to live apart from him; so that to prevail upon one of them was engaging both. This was the more easily brought about, as the governor's house, or rather palace, was so spacious, that we could all live in our several apartments without incommoding one another. Accordingly we all dwelt under the same roof.

After we had spent a few days with that pleasure which the meeting of friends who have been long absent from one another, gives; each of us began to think in what manner he should employ the hours, which we cou'd not always spend together. My choice was already fix'd, viz. study; and my brother, who was no less fond of it than myself, resolv'd also to devote himself to the muses. Mrs. *Lallin* likewise determin'd to pass away two or three hours every day after the same manner; and as I had purchas'd all the good books I cou'd meet with at the *Havana*, she us'd often to come into my little library; either to chuse out such pieces as she look'd upon

as

as the most agreeable, or to enjoy a moment's conversation with me. I also suppos'd that my wife would also give into the same amusement, as she had always discover'd an inclination for it. Nevertheless she declar'd, that she intended to keep my sister-in-law company, and to pass all her hours with her, in working at her needle. 'Twas her secret vexation, and the aversion she had to Mrs. Lallin, which made her take this resolution; particularly after she found, that the lady above-mention'd us'd to visit me frequently in my study; but as for my wife, she never came into it afterwards. The fondness with which she once us'd to hear and discourse with me, seem'd now entirely abated. If at any time she us'd to leave my sister, 'twas only to go and take a solitary walk in the garden, in order to ruminate upon her sorrows. I could not forbear taking some notice of this change in her behaviour; but how could I possibly ascribe it to so cruel a cause, or think she was capable of suspecting the sincerity of my affection; since I was conscious to myself that I lov'd her as dearly as it was possible for man to do; and was perpetually giving her the strongest assurances of it.

As Gelin had not a mind turn'd for books, he us'd to be continually with my wife and sister. According to the ideas which the *French* generally entertain of politeness and gallantry; he would have thought it the greatest rudeness not to give those two ladies his company, which he believ'd wou'd be an amusement to them. And indeed he possess'd so sprightly a vein, as made it vastly agreeable; a circumstance I am oblig'd to own, notwithstanding the injury he has done me. He therefore us'd to spend part of the day with my wife and our sister *Angelica*. I will be so candid, as to believe that he had no other view at first, but to procure himself an innocent pleasure, in the company of two vastly amiable women. In case I am not mistaken in this conjecture, I ought to pity him, sensible as I am in how despotick a manner the passions triumph over the mind; and I can still fancy, at the same time that I detest his memory, that he was more unfortunate than criminal. But on the other side, in case he plung'd voluntarily into guilt; if he premeditated my destruction;

destruction; and on the principles which are but too often found among the *French*, who look upon an intrigue as a piece of gallantry; will not all my readers abhor him as a monster who violated the most sacred laws, and incurr'd the guilt of the blackest crimes? -

Gelin fell in love with my wife. In a man of his disposition and turn of mind, it was impossible for him to entertain any passion with moderation. We have seen in the relation which has been given of his adventures in *St. Helena*, that he had a subtle and inventive genius. He at first studied my wife's genius and temper very carefully, with a design to attack her virtue in its weakest part. He soon discovered that she was of a melancholy turn of mind; but his penetrating eye discover'd much farther; and as he saw and talk'd so often with her, he could not but perceive that something heavy hung upon her spirits. He was so assiduous, and watch'd her whole behaviour so narrowly, that he at last prevail'd with her to reveal, what she had till then resolv'd never to discover. On this foundation he built all his hopes of insinuating himself into her affection. I am now going to relate a train of circumstances, of which the reader will wonder how I came to be inform'd; but I will desire him to suspend his judgment, till I have acquainted him farther into these matters.

Gelin, after this discovery, was so vile, as to employ every artifice he cou'd think of. The first thing he resolv'd to do, was, to insinuate himself into my wife's confidence. He took an opportunity to have a private conversation with her, as she was walking in the garden. There, after a thousand protestations of the great respect and esteem he had for her; he hinted to her, not of his having taken notice of her melancholy, but that he discover'd something which would afflict her very much. He made a great many apologies for having, as he said, perhaps defer'd too long acquainting her with it; and that how strongly soever he might have been prompted to acquaint her with this incident, because of the great esteem he had for our whole family; he yet had been kept from doing it, merely for fear of occasioning some division among us. However, that as the evil seem'd to increase every day, and as it was impossible
but

but the consequences must be of a very pernicious nature; he therefore thought himself oblig'd to inform her, that Mrs. *Lallin* was passionately fond of me; and stood so little upon her guard, that she gave the most scandalous proofs of it; that she daily spent several hours in my study, when no one was there but ourselves; that he had heard such things as he did not think proper to repeat; that indeed, he cou'd not affirm that I return'd her affection; but that this was the very reason which oblig'd him to reveal these particulars to my wife, in order that she might check the progress of the evil, in case it were not too late.

This artful discourse had all the effect which *Gelin* promis'd himself from it. My credulous wife was firmly persuaded that friendship and good nature only, had prompted him to make a discovery, which corresponded but too well with her ideas. She first answer'd no otherwise than by a flood of tears, and complaints against fortune. *Gelin* pretended to comfort her, but 'twas in such a manner as engag'd her to reveal her mind farther. Accordingly she acquainted him with the whole subject of her grief; and own'd that she had but too long perceiv'd the several particulars he had inform'd her of. He even was so impudent as to confess that he believ'd I had deluded her; and that he was but too certain, that I lov'd Mrs. *Lallin* as much as she did me. Nothing cou'd possibly be more favourable to *Gelin*'s wicked view than this. What he aim'd at, was, to make himself in some measure necessary to my wife, upon pretence of administering consolation. He had observ'd, that she lov'd me so passionately, as made him imagine that her heart wou'd not be a very easy conquest; but then he hop'd, to win her favour and esteem by his insinuating arts. A mutual communication of sentiments, and a mysterious air of confidence, are symptoms of love; and very seldom fail of being the cause, when they are not the effect of it. *Gelin*, at last, prevail'd in one circumstance, with regard to my wife, to which he aspir'd; and in case he did not win her affection, he yet gain'd the first place in her friendship and esteem.

Now,

Now, my wife and he were for ever appointing private assignations, busied in mysterious secrets, or whispering or winking at one another. Mrs. *Lallin* cou'd not look at, or speak a word to me, but immediately 'twas interpreted in the most malicious sense. *Gelin* had his eye eternally upon us; and never fail'd to acquaint my wife with every thing that pass'd between the lady abovemention'd and me. In case any thing he observ'd, was not susceptible of a sinister interpretation, his malice never fail'd to make it as black as possible. His impudence went to that length, as to steal softly into my apartment, and listen at the door of my study, in order to hear what Mrs. *Lallin* and I were discoursing upon. The most innocent expressions of friendship and confidence, were poison'd and corrupted when they came from his mouth. Thus did this unworthy confidant, continue daily to hasten my unhappy wife's ruin. 'Tis indeed true, that the fruits he reap'd from it, were not at all favourable to his detestable passion; for his design was, to inspire her with love, whereas he only fill'd her with the deepest affliction. Too certain of her unhappiness, and oppress'd by the fresh confirmations she daily receiv'd of it; she cou'd not so properly be said to live, as to languish in a perpetual despair. She now had only two occupations, both of which were of a most fatal and violent nature; the one was, to abandon herself to grief whenever she was alone and unobserv'd; the other, to do her utmost to conceal her uneasiness, whenever she was oblig'd to be in company. And indeed, she was not long able to bear up against these tortures. She now wasted away sensibly, and grew paler every day. The poison she had been able to conceal so long in her breast, spread, by insensible degrees, to every part of her, and began to vitiate her blood, after having infected the several faculties of her soul.

During this, I spent my days in so much security, as made my calamity infinitely more deplorable. So far from entertaining the least suspicion; which might interfere with my tranquillity; whenever, I reflected on the change which was so visible in my wife's behaviour I rejoic'd at it as a circumstance I had wish'd for, and
which

which I believ'd of the greatest advantage to her. I fancied that *Gelin* and my sister's company was so agreeable, that it had dispell'd her melancholy. Tho' this did not sooth my tenderness, because it bereav'd me of the pleasure of her conversation during part of the day; it was a pleasure to me to consider that her mind was now at ease. I often declar'd to her the great satisfaction that this gave me; and I thank'd *Angelica* and *Gelin* more than once, for having found out the secret to produce this happy change in her temper. But by this, I only lighted up the fire which consum'd her; for she never fail'd to interpret these testimonies of my joy, as a manifest proof of my infidelity. I was highly delighted that she did not offer to interrupt the freedom, which was between Mrs. *Lallin* and myself. Her presence was now become importunate and odious. Such were the sad reasonings of her sick heart and troubled mind. We still continued to converse together every day, but then 'twas always in company with others. We never us'd to retire to rest, till very late at night. I us'd to ascribe her heaviness and dejection to a want of sleep. She wou'd not indeed, refuse my endearments, but then I could hardly get a word out of her; and she would pretend to fall asleep a moment after. However, I wou'd spend the night delightfully by her; happy in this single reflection, that she lov'd me entirely, and that her mind was as much at ease as my own.

Nevertheless, she now began to be very much out of order; and it appear'd but too plainly by her countenance, that she was prey'd upon by some secret uneasiness. This made me very uneasy, and I took notice of it to her; upon which she told me that she was really greatly indispos'd; and took an opportunity from this, to have a separate bed made for her. Alarm'd at the slightest indisposition with which she was attack'd, I laid aside my books, and was perpetually with her. By looking at her, I found that she harbour'd some secret uneasiness in her bosom. She spoke but very little. Her eyes wou'd sometimes fix themselves languishingly upon me; and notwithstanding her struggles to suppress her sighs, yet these would sometimes steal from her. My sister told me in confidence, that she believ'd that her disease

was

was not so much in the body as the mind; and therefore was persuaded, that my wife had taken something very much to heart. I then took an opportunity, when no one was in the room but my wife and I, to embrace her with all the tenderness imaginable; when I conjur'd her to lay open her whole soul to me; to me her dear husband, a man who idoliz'd her, and could never enjoy a moment's peace, in case she were not perfectly easy in her mind. She appear'd to be in doubt for a few moments, as tho' what I now spoke, had rais'd the strongest emotions in her mind; and that she was just going to reveal all her pangs to me. Alas! I am sure of it, this fatal secret was got so far as her lips, and we might have still been happy, had it but forc'd its way thro' her mouth. But some fatal reflection, which was owing to the sinister inspirations of *Gelin*, made it return to such substantial gloom, as was impenetrable to my eyes. She answer'd me with a sigh, that it was not always in her power to banish her reflections; that the tragical scenes which her father and mother had pass'd thro', would often paint themselves in her imagination, whatever struggles she might make to remove them from it; that she could never recollect without shuddering, the several cruel disasters, which had destroy'd her family; that as she had not the least room to hope, that heaven would soften its rigour; she expected that her life wou'd end as unhappily as it had begun. When she spake these last words she cou'd not keep back her tears, and her heart, which was oppress'd with sorrow, eas'd itself by venting a prodigious number of sighs.

The sad condition I then saw her in melted me to such a degree, that had she been ever so little in her right senses, and capable of forming a true Judgment of things, it would have been impossible, but the sincere marks I gave of affection and grief, must have convinc'd her of her injustice and my innocence. I took one of her hands, and squeez'd it against my cheek. Dearest *Fanny*! says I, with a most passionate tone of voice; lovely creature who alone art capable of charming all my cares to rest! how is it possible for you, to afflict yourself by such unjust fears, and by calling up things in your memory, which ought to be blotted eternally from

it! Time past is not in our power; but what do you see in futurity that ought to give you pain? Don't we enjoy each other? Will it be possible for any power to prevent me from making you my idol; You, from loving me, and being mine for ever? And in case you are as certainly persuaded of this as you ought to be, can fate ever annoy us more: No, no, says I embracing her; that person is not sensible of the value of the happiness he enjoys who is perpetually afraid of losing it. Your heart is too much afflicted, but I will teach you how to make it easy; banish fear from it, and let it always be fill'd with love.

As I had no reason to doubt of her sincerity, I look'd upon the answer she made me, as a real confession of the uneasiness she felt; and therefore thought only of procuring her such amusements as might drive away the melancholy with which her spirits were clouded. For this purpose, I desir'd several ladies of the greatest distinction in the *Havana*, to come and divert my wife every day with their company, and I never failed to give them mine. Whether it were owing to the diversions we then took, or to my being continually with my wife; she recover'd in a very little time, after which we each resum'd our usual exercises. I observ'd that *Gelin* was vastly assiduous about my wife, during her indisposition; but this I imputed wholly to his friendship and generosity.

I was oblig'd some months after, at the governor's request, to go upon some affairs he had at *Vera Cruz*. The voyage thither was more tedious than fatiguing. At my return from the place abovemention'd I found my family and friends in good health. *Gelin* was upon a better foot than ever with my wife, that is, he continued to poison her by his wicked insinuations. He did not fail to make her take notice, that tho' I had been absent some months, I yet was as fond of Mrs. *Lallin* as ever. In case I had not the strongest proofs by me, and which I shall mention hereafter, of my wife's virtue; it would seem incredible when I assure my readers, that tho' she had a very great affection for *Gelin*, and made him the confident of all her woes, he yet was never able to seduce her. This vile wretch had gain'd so great an ascendant over her, that she never undertook any thing without consulting him

him first. All that now remain'd, was to disclose his passion to her; and this he did in so artful a manner, that it was impossible for her to be offended. Nevertheless, as the reception his declaration met with from her, check'd his boldness in such a manner that he did not dare to repeat it; and the severity of her virtue having made him despair of ever being able to conquer it, he found himself reduc'd to his first design, which was, to blow up the fire of jealousy still more in her soul; firmly persuaded, that when once she would cease to esteem, she would cease to love me; and that 'twould be easier for him to insinuate himself into her heart, after I was banish'd from it. He affected therefore not to have a passion for her, but seem a disinterested friend. My wife, who was a woman of the sweetest temper, and who never had that kind of experience, which teaches the fair sex to mistrust mankind; thought she might without the least danger, indulge her esteem and confidence to a person who seem'd so kind to her. She moreover had heard my brother very often applaud the generosity of his friend *Gelin*, and had seen me treat him with great civility; and to do him justice, he possess'd all the qualities which form, in the opinion of most people, the gentleman, and the man of merit. Gods! how is it possible for me to speak with so much temper, of a barbarous wretch, who plung'd me in misery and despair.

But the time of my ruin was at hand. *Don Pedro*, being worn out with old age, and sensible that he had not long to live, made his will, by which he bequeathed to me all his possessions. He did not long survive this sickness, and a violent fever carried him out of the world. As soon as we had discover'd our gratitude, by burying him in a most magnificent manner, I now resolv'd to sell the estate he had left me, and return to *Europe*. I resolv'd to fit out a ship at my own expence, purposely that I might regulate our course as I pleas'd. The possessions which now devolv'd upon me were so considerable, that I consider'd the expence of a vessel but as a trifle; and as I was resolv'd to sail directly for *England* with my family, my friends and riches, I therefore did not think it altogether safe to trust myself with a *Spanish* captain. My

brother had sent back to *St. Helena*, the vessel which had brought him with his wife and *Gelin*. I therefore purchas'd one which was built a few weeks before the governor died, and gave such urgent orders, that it was equipp'd with all possible dispatch. But as we were preparing to leave *Cuba*, I heard my brother express his sorrow, at his being oblig'd to leave their friend *Johnson* in *St. Helena*, now he was going to return to *England*. I lov'd my brother *Bridge* as dearly as I did myself, when I reproach'd him for not acquainting me sooner, that he so earnestly desir'd to take *Johnson* along with us. You should, says I, have brought him with you, when you came hither to settle with us. Whoever you love, cannot fail of being dear to me. But I have thought, says I, of a remedy upon this occasion, and that is, by going round by *St. Helena*. 'Tis not such a vast way about; and besides the satisfaction you will taste of meeting again with him and his wife, you will likewise have the pleasure to see the delightful spot where your *Angelica* was born, and of which you have related so many wonders. My brother was overjoy'd at this proposal, a little after which we embark'd, and sail'd directly for *St. Helena*.

We had a very prosperous voyage; however, we were not without fears during our course, as a war had broke out between *Great Britain* and *Holland*. *Holmes*, with an *English* Squadron of ships, had seiz'd upon the islands of *Cape-Verd*, and some forts on the coast of *Guinea*, belonging to the *Dutch*. I had heard before my leaving the *Havana*, that the States of *Holland* had a little before, sent admiral *Ruyter* with a considerable fleet into those seas; and as he was so exasperated against the *English*, I consequently should be expos'd to the greatest danger, in case I should happen to fall into his hands. 'Twas not indeed, that we could naturally expect to meet with him; but 'tis well known that at sea, a gale of wind often brings ships together in a very little time, which before were a great number of leagues from one another. This made me put out *Spanish* colours, and desire all the *Englishmen* who were on board us, not to speak a word in their own tongue, in case we should be so unhappy as to fall in with *Ruyter's* fleet

fleet. Had I not made use of this stratagem, we should have infallibly been taken; for we met the *Dutch* admiral in the *Ethiopic* sea, and our preservation was owing wholly, to the artifice above mentioned.

After I had so happily escap'd this danger, I did not expect, as every thing now seem'd to conspire to make me happy, that my wife and a friend would prove my ruin. My whole life had been a continual series of ill fortune, and I had but too justly been distinguish'd by the name of the unhappy man; but then I had hitherto been always forewarn'd of the impending danger. Besides, whenever I had lost any thing that was dear to me, I still had always something left that was still dearer to me, and which was able to console me from this reflection; viz. that tho' heaven had depriv'd me of what I had a high value for, it had yet been so gracious as to spare other things, the loss of which would have afflicted me infinitely more. But on this occasion, fortune, without giving me the least warning, without allowing me a moment's reflection; and at once, with a single turn of her wheel, throws me to the bottom, and fixes me there, without the least hopes of ever rising again. The fickle goddess deprives me of every hope, and denies me every consolation; in a word, she reduces me to the wretched condition which I am now going to describe; a state which the reader will scarce think me capable of falling to.

We now were arrived at *St. Helena*. A *French* ship, which had been in *India*, was coming into the harbour at the same time with us, and we landed at the same time. The first news my brother heard, was, that his friend *Johnson* and his wife were dead. As this afflicted him to a very great degree, I spent some days in comforting him. We had nothing more to do but to set sail, after we had visited the spot which the colony inhabited; and this was an easy matter for us to do, because, as the *Portuguese* had blown up some of the rocks which separated it from the rest of this island, the way to it by land was open. We now thought of setting sail again; and as we did not intend to put into any port till we were arriv'd in *England*, I assur'd Mrs. *Lallin*, and *Gelin*, who was a *Frenchman*, in the most polite terms, that I was overjoy'd, when I reflected, that it

wou'd be now in my power to procure them a happy asylum in the place of my birth — Most fatal signal of my ruin; for my wife had made an oath never to set her foot in *England*, in case I shou'd convey Mrs. *Lallin* thither. *Gelin's* artifices had made her take this fatal resolution; and finding it wou'd be impossible for her to do this, unless she stole away with him; she consented to it, when she knew certainly that I intended to take her rival along with me. The following night was pitch'd upon for her elopement; and the most horrid circumstance of all, is, that my wife stole out of bed, where she was lying by my side, to fly with a base wretch, who perhaps laugh'd at her weakness in the very moment that he carried her off as his prey, and imagin'd himself upon the point of triumphing over her virtue and honour.

This abominable incident was not known till the next day, and 'twas even very late before it was confirm'd. The *French* vessel was gone, and neither my wife or *Gelin* were to be found. They were first sought after very carefully; and the strictest enquiry was made if any person had seen them: But after this had been done to no purpose, every one suppos'd what had really happen'd. Perhaps I was the only person in the whole island who yet had not heard of it. I ask'd a multitude of times where my wife was. So long as it was not known what was become of her, all the answers I receiv'd gave me great uneasiness; and after every one knew she was fled, they did all that lay in their power to conceal that sad circumstance from me. Nevertheless, as it would be impossible for them to conceal it from me longer than that night, my brother *Bridge* resolv'd to acquaint me with it. This dear brother, who lov'd me with an excess of tenderness, and was so much afflicted, that he stood almost as much in need of consolation as myself, was in great perplexity when he found himself obliged to speak, and did not know what expressions to employ on this occasion. He was sensible, by what I had assur'd him a thousand times, that I lov'd my wife to distraction: He knew all the secrets of my heart, which I had never scrupled to lay open to him. And, indeed, all my passions were absorb'd, as it were, in this; incessantly attentive to the Impulses of my heart, and to regulate

gulate its inclinations ; the only liberty I indulg'd it in. was, the being tender, and devoting itself entirely to love, This was the only pleasure of my life, the charm of every anxiety, and more than paid for the perpetual constraint, in which I kept the rest of my desires. Reason, duty, the natural propensions of an infinitely tender heart ; in short every thing conspired to make love essential to my happiness. And, indeed, I had made this so habitual to me ; that in like manner as it is not possible to live without breathing, neither could I be happy without loving, and being belov'd by my wife. This my brother knew but too well, and consequently was but too sensible, that the news he was going to acquaint me with, would be like a thunder-bolt.

I was alone in my chamber, with a book in my hand. The air with which he entred made me shudder, as it at once discover'd that something very fatal prey'd upon his spirits : But then was it probable that I should guess the cause of it ? I at first imagin'd he was taken suddenly ill ; or fancy'd that something he had heard, gave him a deadly pain. However, he did not leave me long in doubt, I rose up, but he bid me sit still. He then seated himself down by me. Observing that he chang'd countenance, and falter'd in his speech, I was struck dumb, and had only the power to keep my eyes fix'd upon him. Unhappy brother ! says he, in what manner shall I prepare you to hear the most deadly news ? Does not your heart already bleed ? Ill-fated *Cleveland* ! don't you partly guess, what I have not the power to relate ? These few words, utter'd with a most passionate tone of voice, seiz'd me with horror. Notwithstanding the crowd of dreadful ideas which presented themselves on a sudden to my mind ; methought I knew but too well what he was going to tell me. My wife, says I, with a most sorrowful voice, my wife is dead ! No, says he, interrupting me, what I am now to inform you of is more terrible than her death — Alas ! says I, end what you have to say, and kill me at once. This, reply'd he, melting almost into tears, is the very thing I was afraid of. Too unhappy *Cleveland* ! I know what I am now going to say will pierce your heart ; but I cannot either disguise or conceal your misfortune. But, dear brother,

ther, added he, embracing me, you are inform'd with a spirit of resolution and constancy; receive the fatal news which I am now going to relate with the same intrepidity you've heard others of a baleful nature. Consider that neither you nor myself were form'd for happiness: and that as heaven allotted us both to be miserable, our destiny must be fulfill'd. I then endeavoured to inspire myself with some resolution, and cried, well, tell me all you have to say; don't conceal a single circumstance! I am ready to hear any thing. In case my *Fanny* is not dead, I believe I have strength of mind sufficient to bear up against any other shock.

After wishing that I might be so, and saying he believ'd I would not look upon my wife's death as the greatest evil that could befall me; he thereupon gave me an account of her being fled away with *Gelin*, and the several circumstances he could discover of it. They, says he, stole away in the dead of night, with no other attendants than *Gelin's* valet de chambre and a waiting woman. They took very little wearing apparel with them, but provided themselves with a very considerable sum of money. *Gelin* undoubtedly found it an easy matter to be receiv'd on board; and in all probability had insinuated himself into the *French* captain's friendship, during the time of his being in the harbour. They had set sail before day; a circumstance which plainly shew'd there was some understanding between them. My brother, after saying these words, vented a thousand imprecations against *Gelin*; and, whether it were to sooth my grief, by discovering how deeply he himself was affected, or that his good nature made him be really as much concern'd as he seem'd to be, he shew'd, by a thousand circumstances that he was inconsolable.

As for me, who thought I was now as wretched as it was possible for me to be, I yet bore up for some moments against the attacks of the most cruel despair. I even struggled with myself, tho' this put me to incredible torture, to assume the air of constancy and resolution which I had so much boasted to my brother. 'Tis plain, says I, with a faint tone of voice, that I am the most unhappy man breathing. I am so, even beyond my fears and my imagination. What I now hear is undoubtedly more sad
and

and grievous than my wife's death, and a thousand times more insupportable than my own cou'd be. I suppose, says I, endeavouring to put on a resolute countenance, that you are sure what you have told me is fact? He answer'd, that I ought to believe that 'twas but too true, since he thought it impossible to conceal it from me, and necessary to reveal it. He added to this confirmation, some reflections with regard to the course he thought it would be proper for us to take; such as, to embark forthwith, and to sail after the *French* vessel, which, says he, we may be so fortunate as to come up with. I had strength of mind enough to listen to him, and to answer to what he propos'd. But tho' my soul had still so much command over itself as to constrain itself to such a degree, it yet had not the ascendant over my senses, to bear me up any longer against grief and affliction. The cruel emotions which tortur'd my heart, communicated themselves in an instant to my brain; I was sensible that my rational faculties were clouded on a sudden; I put out my hands towards my brother, as tho' the ground was stealing away from under me, and that I endeavoured to catch hold of something. O brother! says I, I am a dead man.— And indeed I fell in a swoon.

He immediately call'd for assistance, and endeavours were made a considerable time to revive me, but to no purpose. Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister did all that lay in their power, when at last I recover'd; but then my spirits were so prodigiously exhausted, that 'twas an hour before I was able to speak a word, and to inform them that I was better. My eyes were still shut, and I was leaning against the back of my chair. I breath'd very short. I heard every thing that was spoke, but I neither found myself either able or willing to utter a syllable. Let the reader figure to himself a victim stretch'd at the foot of the altar, after having receiv'd his death's wound: This was exactly my case; having no other motion but a violent palpitation, which communicated itself from my heart to every part of my body, and caus'd a visible tremor in all my limbs.

However, being at last recover'd by the pains that was taken, I embrac'd all those who had been so active in my recovery. I said to them, alas! your friendship has not

done me a good office, in thus recalling me to life: You are not insensible how burthensome it is to me: You saw that nature spake plain by my fainting away so long a time. Why did you revive her? Is it not manifest that she is too weak to bear up any longer against a calamity, since the first shock of it dejected her in such a manner? — My friends answer'd, that they were sure my courage would support me. I took this opportunity to beg them to leave me alone: I beseech you, says I, to go away for some time, in order that I may endeavour to call up my spirits. Altho' I had not so completely conceal'd my despair, but they manifestly saw I was strongly affected; they yet believ'd me, when I assur'd them, that I would not attempt any thing against my own life: and thereupon they were prevail'd upon to leave the room. My brother ask'd me, whether I did not think it proper to go immediately on board a ship and pursue *Gelin*; when I told him, I would do whatever he thought proper, and relied wholly on his prudence and affection. Accordingly he prepar'd every thing for our embarking with so much dispatch, that we were enabled to set sail the next day.

The reader will suppose, that I did not abandon myself wholly to his conduct, meerly out of indifference: On the contrary my brain was in the utmost confusion; and 'twas this very reason that prompted me to leave the care of every thing to him, whom I knew to be a man of the utmost prudence, and intirely devoted to my interest. I will confess, that I was then wholly incapable of forming any resolution; and so great was the hurry of my spirits, that I could not discover which were the impulses that had the greatest ascendant over my soul. I was incapable, after reflecting two hours alone, to answer myself directly, when I enquir'd of my own mind, whether I lov'd or hated my wife; whether I wish'd 'twere more in my power to force her away from *Gelin*; or whether it were not better for my own honour and even my repose, to abandon them both to the justice of heaven, and their ill-fate. I had not strength of mind sufficient to pursue this enquiry for a minute together. I cou'd not employ half that short space in representing my wife voluntarily resolv'd to abandon her husband and her children; leaving
my

my bed to follow an adulterous wretch, who, perhaps, all the time I was speaking, held her in his arms. Gods! my brain turn'd at the very thoughts of it; and not finding myself able to bear the presence of that idea even for a moment, I diverted my attention from it, in order to bewail my ill fate; without almost so much as daring to turn my thoughts to that weak, that wicked creature.

This state of mind, which I here give an account of in few words, was a long time habitual to me. The weight of my misfortunes was confin'd, as it were, at the bottom of my heart. My courage employ'd itself less in healing my struggles, or diminishing it by my reflections; than in deluding and imposing upon my fancy, in order to remove it from my sight. My soul started back at this object, as my hand would have done, had I laid it unguardedly on a hot iron. Nevertheless, every thing contributed to bring me back to it; my children, who were continually before my eyes; my sister-in-law, who was for ever bewailing the shame to which her friend had brought herself, and who repeated *Gelin's* name a thousand times with the utmost detestation; and even Mrs. *Lallin*, who increas'd my tortures, and awak'd them every instant, by the very expressions she employ'd to console me. As for my brother *Bridge*, who was the only person to whom I was willing to discover all my weakness, he would have contributed more to my cure than any other person, had I been capable of taking remedies. In the wisdom and prudence of this dear brother, in his sweet temper, his tender and sincere affection, I should have found the most solid consolation. But so far from reaping the fruits which I had reason to believe his friendship would one day produce, such was the cruelty of my fate, that he himself prov'd the catastrophe of my sufferings in *America*. The reader will see by his example, whether virtue may expect to be rewarded in this world; and, by mine, that the progress of ill fortune may be infinite, since a man may be still more unhappy, after he had believ'd himself infinitely so.

Tho' we had embark'd in so much haste at *St. Helena*, yet the winds were so contrary, that we did not advance very far in our course. My brother was vex'd to the soul at this, as it depriv'd us of all hopes of our being able to
come

come up with the *French* vessel we were in pursuit of. As for myself, whose ideas were always so wavering and uncertain, that I did not know what to fear or desire, I was employ'd much less in reflection, than in groaning internally. 'Twas three months before we got to the coast of *Spain*. I had taken some *Spanish* gentlemen of distinction on board my vessel at the *Havana*, and promis'd to land them at *Corunna*. My brother did not forget to bid the pilot steer for that place, where we arriv'd very happily; but as we did not intend to stop there, we did not go into the harbour. *Bridge* made us cast anchor at some distance, and going into the long-boat with the *Spaniards* and three *Englishmen*, they got ashore in a very little time. He was prompted to this merely out of curiosity, and he had intreated me over and over to land with them, in order to divert me; but as neither this nor any thing else was capable of soothing my Uneasiness, I begg'd him not to insist upon my going. Alas! I refus'd him; my design was to fly from a pleasure I was incapable of tasting; and heaven, who was resolv'd to pour all its wrath upon me before my return to *Europe*, took this opportunity to complete my ruin.

My unhappy brother therefore put into the harbour of *Corunna*. He himself soon inform'd me of the particulars I am going to relate. After being got ashore, he took leave of the *Spanish* gentlemen, who design'd to ride post to *Madrid*; and as after this, he intended only but to take a view of the city, he spent the greatest part of the day in rambling up and down, intending to return on board in the evening. He was even returning back to the harbour, in order to go into the boat, when he found himself pull'd by the arm, and turning about who shou'd this be but *Gelin*. How prodigious was his surprise! Scarce cou'd he believe his eyes; and so great was his confusion, that he was struck dumb. Nevertheless, the villain threw himself about his neck, embrac'd him with the utmost tenderness, and seeming overjoy'd at meeting him, he declar'd that having perceiv'd him at a little distance from the port, he could not forbear running up, to assure him that he lov'd him as dearly as he did himself, and valued him more than any other friend. Thy friend! says my brother *Bridge*, who was no sooner recover'd

cover'd from his surprize, when he was fir'd with inexpressible rage and indignation: Traiterous villain! Is it not thou who hast dishonour'd my brother, and violated the most holy laws of honour and friendship? With what face dost thou presume to appear before me, and how dost thou think to escape the punishment due to thy crimes? Altho' *Gelin* could not naturally expect a more favourable reception, he nevertheless seem'd confus'd, and did not know what to say. A person should be thoroughly acquainted with his genius and character, otherwise he could not so well account for the most odd circumstances in this adventure. It must be own'd that this wretch had a thousand good qualities. He was a man of sense, was generous and tender-hearted; so that nothing but a most violent passion, could have made him guilty of such base actions; however as his vivacity and fire would not allow him time for reflection; he had banish'd every thing from his mind, which did not tend to promote his passion. How desperate soever his fondness for my wife might be, and tho' he could not but be sensible that he was guilty of the highest crime: As he yet had so great an affection for my brother, he could not forbear running to and embracing him. Possibly his heedlessness prevented his considering that he might justly dread his rage; and could no longer expect to be treated by him in a friendly manner. Be this as it will, he discover'd more grief than resentment; and melting into tears, he begg'd to speak with him a moment in private.

My brother consider'd at first whether it would not be proper to get him seiz'd. Nevertheless, as he was so tender-hearted and compassionate, that he could not see him weep, without being a little affected at it, and feeling some returns of their former friendship; he consented to hear him. *Bridge* imagin'd, that his tears, and even his boldness in presuming to approach him, might perhaps be the effects of his repentance; when withdrawing with him to a place upon the sand, where no one could hear them; they began a discourse, of which the reader might form a judgment from the conclusion, tho' I were not to repeat the beginning of it. *Gelin* confess'd at once that he was guilty; but imputing his crime to the violence of an unlimited Passion, he endeavour'd

your'd to excite my brother's pity, and to persuade him that he did not deserve his hatred. Says *Bridge*, in what light ought I to consider you, since you have betray'd my friendship and the confidence I repos'd in you; when you bring my family to shame, and stab a brother to the heart, whom I love as I do my soul. Perfidious *Gelin*! What had we done to you? Did not I always treat you as the dearest friend I have in the world? Did not my unhappy brother believe you to be so? and did not he, at my desire, use you in so kind, so tender a manner as deserv'd the highest returns of gratitude from you? Did he not offer you his house, and part of his possessions? Could he possibly have been kinder, tho' you had been his brother? And what returns have you made? You have rewarded him with infamy! You assassinate him in the most cruel manner, by forcing away from him what he held most dear! Tell me after this if you merit my compassion, and whether you don't deserve my hatred; I, who ought to detest you more than *Cleveland*! For does not all your villainy reflect upon me? Did not I introduce you into his house? Did not he indulge you his friendship and confidence merely upon my account? At the same time that I here reproach you with our common calamities, has not he a right to reproach you, in particular, with his own? But what have you done with his wife, continued *Bridge*? Did you make haste to complete our shame and infamy; Were not your infamous desires soon indulg'd? She, no doubt, has conspir'd with you to bring us to dishonour; and you have undoubtedly repeated your guilt several times.

Notwithstanding *Gelin* persisted so obstinately in his guilt, I yet was inform'd by my brother that these reproaches had struck him to the heart; so that he made a very confus'd apology. However, being again urg'd, and undoubtedly with too much warmth, to tell the place whither he had carried my wife, and if he us'd her kindly; he answer'd in a very haughty tone, that she was safe, and that he would always use her much better than I had done. These last words stung my brother to the quick. How perfidious wretch! dost thou pretend to keep her? I shall do so, says he, as long as she will be satisfied with my services, and shall stand in need of my assistance. Perhaps

haps my brother was in the wrong, not to ask him what he meant by these last expressions. Altho' I did not understand the meaning of them better than he did when he related them; I yet found a long time afterwards, that with a very little explanation, they perhaps wou'd have let me into that fatal mystery: And altho' this would not have lessen'd my calamity, it yet would have enabled me to support it with greater courage: Perhaps *Gelin* had so much friendship left for my brother, that he would not only have told him where he had carried my wife, but even the reasons of her elopement, and such circumstances as might have lessen'd the infamy of it. 'Tis very probable, that had my brother kept his temper a little more, he would have avoided the danger that threatned him. But he was hurried away by his own and my evil genius; and he, tho' a man of the utmost sweetness of temper, gave too great a loose to his resentment, to see himself basely us'd by a perfidious friend, — What's that you say, says my brother? so long as she may be satisfied with your services? I see you are so far from giving some tokens of repentance, as I imagin'd you wou'd, that you heighten your ingratitude with raillery, and your treachery with the basest insults — Go! we'll take a proper course with you, and bring you to the punishment you deserve — Saying these words, which he utter'd in a most violent passion, he endeavour'd to seize him by the throat, in order to drag him to the ship, and there consult with me, what it would be proper to do with him.

Gelin was very strong, so that after struggling a little, he got loose, and took to his heels. However, seeing himself closely pursued, and finding he should be forc'd to run by the long boat, when it would be impossible for him to escape from our *Englishmen*, who already were running to lay hold of him; he resolv'd to stick at nothing that might favour his liberty. Accordingly he drew his sword, and turning about upon my brother, he ran upon him with so much fury, that tho' he had time enough to draw his, and to stand in a posture of defence, he yet was so unhappy as to receive a thrust quite through his body. Upon this poor *Bridge* fell, and when *Gelin* drew his sword out of his friend's body, he saw it follow'd

low'd by a torrent of blood. This sight struck him to the heart; when forgetting that his own life was in danger, he threw himself upon the ground by him, and embrac'd him a thousand times.

Whilst he held him in his arms, and was begging his forgiveness, and venting the most lamentable cries; the three *Englishmen* who had redoubled their speed at seeing the swords drawn, were almost come up to the place where their master lay weltering in his gore. In their fury they did not distinguish whether it was love or hatred; which had prompted *Gelin* to cleave in this manner to my brother's body; and thereupon they instantly thrust their swords into *Gelin*, who, nevertheless did not offer to make the least defence. My brother was not quite dead, but then he had quite lost his senses. They then consulted what was to be done. As they did not know what treatment they might meet with from the *Spaniards*, in case they should be found standing over the two bodies, which now seem'd to be quite motionless; they concluded, that the safest way would be to carry off their master's body, and to get on board as fast as possible. Accordingly they brought the long boat to that part of the shore nearest which this bloody scene had happen'd; and getting into her, they got on board before it was quite dark.

So fatal an accident as this, was soon known all over the ship. As my brother was universally belov'd, his death which was now thought but too certain, drew tears from the most hard-hearted. Altho' I had hitherto taken but very little notice of whatever was doing in the vessel; I yet was very much surpriz'd to hear so unusual a noise. I was afraid that during my brother's absence, who acted as my lieutenant, some disturbance had broke out among the sailors; and thereupon I sent for a servant who always waited in my cabin, to enquire what was the matter. The noise was now over, but my servant did not return; for he was kept back, in order that he might not carry the sad news into my cabin, where myself, my brother's wife and her daughter were. By this means they did my sister and her daughter a considerable piece of service, as it prevented their being seiz'd with the deepest affliction; and gave them an opportunity of being prepar'd for it.

But with regard to myself, who was always accusom'd to judge of an incident upon the least notices of it; 'twas of very little signification, how and in what manner, I was made acquainted with the most tragical accident. In the condition I was, nothing could shock me so much as the news of my brother's death. Possibly I might not have form'd the same judgment before it happen'd; but then I could not think it was so near at hand: and wholly employ'd, as I then was, with the thoughts of my wife's infidelity, nothing more terrible presented itself to my fancy, than the present object of my pangs.

I expected the return of my servant, or rather my uneasiness and curiosity had ended with the noise, when the fellow I had sent out, return'd, and whisper'd me in the ear to come out a moment. I found one of the three *Englishmen* who had gone ashore with my brother at *Corrunna*, waiting for me without. He then inform'd me in few words, that his master was dying or dead; but that having fell with the wound he receiv'd, he and his comrades had been so fortunate as to bring him aboard; and that they had taken care, before he brought me this melancholy news, to get his wound drest. He added, that they would have acquainted me sooner with it, had they not been afraid of alarming me too much; and that they had thought it proper to inform me of it before my sister; in order that I should put 'em in a way, how to acquaint her with so lamentable a story. I applauded his prudence and discretion, and immediately bid him show me the cabin where my brother lay; and at the same time order'd that they should not acquaint the two ladies with any thing till my return. Altho' I could not but be troubled as I was following the *Englishman*; I yet was so far from thinking my brother was in the lamentable condition in which I found him, that I thought he was only hurt by a fall or something of that nature. Nevertheless, the mournful air, and the deep silence with which he held out his hand to me, the moment I appear'd, fill'd me with the deepest uneasiness. I then went up to embrace him, when I found him pale, weak, and scarce able to utter a syllable; in a word, as it was natural for a man to be, who had lost so great a quantity of blood, and fainted away for two hours. I ask'd
him

him how all this had happen'd; and by what accident he was reduc'd to this fatal extremity? Tho' he had scarce strength to open his lips; nevertheless his answer made me guess at the horror which awaited me, by heightning my present pangs, with the idea of the fresh tortures with which I was threatned. He told me in what manner he had met with *Gelin*, the discourse he had with him, and the little benefit he reap'd from it; but how he thought what he had heard did but too much confirm her infamy, and therefore that I ought to banish her for ever from my mind. He told me in what manner he had been stabb'd, and how *Gelin* had thrown himself upon him; but whether that vile wretch was dead he could not tell. After having spoke these words, he continued silent for some time, as tho' he wanted to take breath; and look'd upon me with an eye, expressive of the utmost grief as well as weakness. Such, dear brother, says he, is the wretched condition of us both: but I have this advantage over you, that the moment is at hand when I shall be equally insensible of pleasure or pain; a moment in which every thing is made equal and indifferent. Nevertheless, when I contemplate, added he, every thing that now occurs to me, I can hardly believe it will be possible for me to be so insensible after death, as is generally believ'd. This I was thinking upon when you came in. 'Tis a mortal pain to me, when I consider the condition I shall now leave you in; languishing, oppress'd with grief, and depriv'd of the consolation you was always sure of meeting with in a brother, who lov'd you with the utmost tenderness; I must also leave my dear wife and dear child in the same sad state. Gracious creator! shall I be at rest in thy bosom, after having past thro' such a series of misfortunes?

Altho' I saw but too plainly, that his death was at hand, I yet thought proper to cheer him up, and to feed him with the hopes, that as he was of so good a constitution, he very probably might recover; and tho' I myself was in the deepest affliction, I yet endeavour'd to assume an undisturb'd air, in order to encourage him. However the struggles I made to suppress my sighs were so violent, that I felt more than once that kind of horror which I fancy the soul must be struck with, at the instant of its separation

separation from the body. Nevertheless, after I had consider'd a moment, that it was absolutely necessary I should, for my brother's, his wife's, my children and my own sake, preserve a presence of mind, and not appear disturb'd; I by that means found strength of mind sufficient, to suspend the effects of the strongest despair. I wou'd not have my readers imagine, that in giving this account of my vigour and resolution, I am prompted to it from a fondness of that empty shadow call'd fame; and in order to engage the esteem of those who peruse these sheets. Alas! If I have not declar'd it enough, I will again repeat it, that I only desire their compassion.

The surgeon of the ship, whom I drew aside, and begg'd to tell me sincerely what he thought of the wound, declar'd that it was mortal; and that he was surpriz'd how it was possible for him to survive it so long. His intestines, says he, are cut, so that he now lives no other-wise than by a miracle. Alas! after hearing this, I went up again to my unhappy brother, who anticipated what I was going to propose, by desiring very earnestly that his wife and daughter might be sent for. This request appear'd so just, and I was so much afraid lest he should be depriv'd of the consolation of embracing them for the last time, that I left him instantly, in order to go and prepare my sister for this sad interview. The sailors, as I pass'd by, desir'd we might set sail that night; for fear, in case we should stay till next morning, of being seiz'd by the *Spaniards*. Accordingly, I agreed to weigh anchor, which being done, I ran to my sister, and told her that it would be necessary for her to arm herself with courage, since she must now see her husband in a condition she little expected to find him in. However, this short absence bereav'd me of the satisfaction of bidding my brother a last adieu; for he expir'd before I return'd back into his cabbin, that is, not above three or four minutes after I had left it.

How strong soever the habit might be which I had contracted, of abstracting, as I have already observ'd, all my misfortunes from their circumstances, in order to consider them merely in themselves; I must confess that I was prodigiously affected with this sudden turn of fate; which seem'd to have taken me but for an instant from my brother,

ther, purely to take that opportunity of snatching him away. I scarce had spoke twenty words to him, after I was told of his being wounded. A thousand tender sensations, which grief and friendship rais'd confusedly in my heart, were pent up, as it were, in it, and cou'd not find a vent. I had put a constraint upon myself before him, in order to cheer his spirits; and I was forced to commit a greater violence upon myself, in order to encourage my sister the more by my example. I was coming out of the cabbin with them, when I was met by a servant, who told me with tears in his eyes that 'twas too late; for oh Sir, says he, my master's dead. My sister and niece heard these words; but it wou'd be impossible to describe their moan, their tears, and the haste with which they ran forwards. However, by the assistance of some of the sailors, I brought 'em back, and forc'd 'em into my cabbin, where I left them with Mrs. *Lallin*, and their women, whom I begg'd to comfort them so well as they could. Having said this, I withdrew to a cabbin, where I deliver'd myself up to that kind of grief which is the most deadly poison of the soul, because 'tis wholly pent up, and by that means intoxicates, as it were, all the faculties.

Nevertheless, after having spent some time in this desponding manner, I cou'd not refuse to answer some of my servants, who came running into the cabbin, and desir'd to speak to me. *Dring* who was more familiar with me than any of my servants, told me with dread in his countenance, that the sailors saw a dreadful spectacle at sea, and that it would be proper I should take a view of it. Hearing this I got upon deck, when I found it very dark, by which means I discover'd but more plainly what I was brought to see. 'Twas a globe of fire which seem'd to be at a pretty distance off, and which flam'd afterwards with surprizing activity. After having reflected some time, without being able to guess what cou'd possibly feed it, in the midst of the ocean; I at last concluded that 'twas a ship on fire, and consequently those on board her must be in the utmost danger. I immediately gave orders for our sailing up to her, in order to assist the unhappy people on board her. I even order'd several guns to be fir'd, and had several torches lighted, in order to give them notice of our approach. This prov'd of service;

service; for a moment or two after we saw two boats rowing towards us, in each of which were near fifteen or sixteen persons, who held out their arms to us; and besought us in the most plaintive manner, to take them on board our ship, which I immediately granted. Being got in, they told us their whole misfortune. Their ship indeed was burning, and they narrowly escap'd perishing in the flames. They were *Frenchmen* who had been in *Martinico*, and were returning to *Nantz* in *Brittany*, where most of them were born. I gave orders that they should be treated with the utmost humanity. They then ask'd me whither I was bound; a question I could hardly answer them. We were now not far from the coast of *Spain*. Notwithstanding my deep grief, and the idea of my dead brother which was present to my mind, I yet could not but think of my wife's being in *Corunna*; and that I possibly might easily get her seiz'd at that place. The perplexity which she plung'd me into, tortur'd me inexpressibly, and I was some time before I knew what resolution to take. I blush'd to think that I should have the least love for her. I sigh'd, and call'd upon heaven to be witness of the pangs I felt; but then I cou'd not resolve with myself to leave a place in which I had great reason to believe she was. Nevertheless, as the last words which ever my brother spoke, presented themselves to my imagination in their utmost force, I was so asham'd when I reflected on my own weakness, that I took a resolution at once. Let us, says I to the sailors, croud all the sail we can, and remove from this unhappy coast; let us go for *Nantz*, since humanity obliges me to carry these unfortunate persons thither, as I have taken them in. That is our course in case we sail for *England*; however, 'tis indifferent to me, in what part of the world I end my unhappy life --- Altho' I form'd this resolution when my spirits were confus'd, I yet was more and more confirm'd in it afterwards.

As we met with contrary winds, it consequently made the voyage entirely tiresome; and as for my own part, I was so vastly dejected, that I was even incapable, almost, of forming the least reflection. Among those I had taken into my ship, were some *French* gentlemen of merit, who hearing of my sufferings, offer'd me their company,

in order to divert my melancholy a little. I thank'd them and desir'd they would indulge that favour to my sister. This they did, and with so much politeness and good sense, that their endeavours were not altogether ineffectual. With regard to my own self, who was equally incapable of desiring or receiving consolation, I shut myself up every day in my cabin, and would not allow access to a single person. I had no book with me, I had always look'd upon those which I had in *America* as very trifling; and though they had serv'd me for an idle amusement during some time, I yet almost despis'd them; so that as I suppos'd our voyage would not take up so much time as it did, I had neglected to take any with me from the *Havana*. I therefore had no other remedy against the poison which prey'd upon my vitals, but the invisible assistance of heaven, and the vigour of my constitution.

At last, we arriv'd at *Nantz*; the kind office I had done to the inhabitants of that city, by taking their distress'd countrymen on board, soon gain'd me their esteem and friendship. Immediately refreshments of every sort were offer'd me; however, I soon declar'd that I should look upon it as a favour if they would not importune me, and that the greatest pleasure they cou'd do me, would be to leave me to my reflections. I spent the first days in preparing my brother's funeral, which was solemniz'd in a most honourable manner. Alas! how greatly did I envy him, now he was going to enjoy eternal peace, in the quiet mansion of the grave.

The unhappy condition to which most of the *French* whom I had brought along with me, were reduc'd, by the loss of their ship; inspir'd me with a resolution which I immediately executed, with the applause and admiration of all the inhabitants of *Nantz*: and this was, to make them a present of my own vessel. I was now very wealthy, but then I wholly disregarded riches, and was naturally very compassionate; so that in doing them this service I oblig'd myself. However, 'twas look'd upon by all as an unparallel'd piece of generosity. I was not oblig'd to go immediately for *England*, and this I cou'd do at any time very easily. I also rewarded very liberally the sailors whom I had brought with me from the *Havana*; and kept only six servants, besides Mrs. *Lallin's* and my sister's waiting-woman.

BOOK VI.

UPON my coming into *Europe* I consider'd, not withstanding the deep anguish which prey'd upon my spirits, that I was oblig'd to attend to certain indispensable duties. I was under a necessity of giving a proper education to my children, and the daughter of my unhappy brother, whom I was bound to love as dearly as my two sons. I was also oblig'd in honour to settle my sister-in-law, and Mrs. *Lallin*, and allow them a decent maintenance. I had ready money enough to do all this, and was not any way uneasy on these accounts, especially with regard to the two ladies; towards whom I might easily acquit myself, by leaving to them the place they might chuse to settle in. But tho' my circumstances gave me an opportunity of bestowing a liberal education on my sons and my niece *Bridge*; I yet was more divided with regard to the method of it, and the place I should send them to. With respect to the method, I wish'd it had been in my own power to regulate it; and to act the same part towards them, as my mother had done to me. I weigh'd these matters for a considerable time, but at last found that my mind was so much disturb'd, that it would be impossible for me to order these several particulars, in so just and regular a manner as was necessary. I consider'd farther, that my instructions must certainly take a tincture, from the deep affliction that then sat brooding over my soul, which possibly might make them too gloomy and severe for children of that age. not to mention what my own experience had taught me, viz. that singular and uncommon methods of education, how judicious soever they may appear in theory, don't always succeed in practice. Man was form'd for society: reason therefore suggests, that our infant-instructions should be given with a view to what nature has appointed us for. In my opinion, 'tis departing from this, to breed up a child in solitude; and to prevent him from imbibing that knowledge in his infancy, which will be perpetually necessary to him, during the remaining part of

of his life. The precepts which philosophy inculcates, are, indeed, suited to all ages and seasons; but as they are not to be consider'd, even where they are of the greatest use, but as so many helps to wisdom, that is, as so many maxims, to direct and support us in the practice of our duties; 'tis plain, that we ought, at the same time, if not before, to be taught what those duties are; otherwise, I don't see how they can produce a wish'd for effect.

Now the most natural, and consequently the most indispensable of all duties, are those of society; duties which are not acquir'd by bare speculation, but from what is properly call'd the knowledge of the world, which is seldom attain'd but by practice. I therefore concluded, that I could not pitch upon any method of education which could prove so useful, as that commonly follow'd; I mean the sending them to a publick school: 'tis not but this method also has its inconveniencies, but then I look'd upon them as inconsiderable, when compar'd with the many and solid advantages which result from this way of bringing up youth.

Having thus made choice of the method, I was next to fix upon a place. I was now in *France*, where I might either reside, or go over into *England*. But as I did not intend to be far from my children, I wanted to pitch upon some city, which might suit with us all. I had nothing to do with regard to them, but to look out a school, which I might easily find; so that I was now concern'd only upon my own account. After having suffer'd so many losses, and met with such a series of misfortunes, in what part of the world could I now hope to meet with an asylum? In case I follow'd only the blind impulses of an affliction, which was incessantly present to my mind, I then could wish for no other refuge but the grave. I now was no longer capable of liking one part of the world better than another; for so excessive was my sorrow, that I look'd upon every thing with indifference, not to say distaste and aversion. Like to a man whom a burning fever confines to the bed of grief: The fire which rages in his veins, drives sleep from his eyes, and won't suffer him to take a moment's rest; he turns and tosses about incessantly, and is every instant shifting his posture,

posture, in order to find out one which may ease his dreadful agonies; he stretches his wearied limbs towards every part of the bed; and hopes, in vain, to meet with that ease in the part to which he turns, which he could not find in that he left: Every new posture which his pangs force him to throw himself into, seems the most grievous and insupportable. Thus, when I consulted only my tortured imagination, I could not find any particular spot upon earth, which I might prefer to the rest; and that might give me the least hopes of proving a remedy, or even of soothing my heart-breaking afflictions.

But then perhaps, says I, reason may afford me more consolation, notwithstanding that the resources it offer'd me were still impotent; I at least know by past experience, that in case my present evils were not absolutely incurable, 'twas from reason alone I could expect a cure. Tho' I was not yet sensible of its efficacy, I yet knew its strength; and was not ignorant of the means which that faculty would employ to bring me to a wish'd for tranquillity; provided I could but be so much master of myself as to follow its dictates. The greatest difficulty therefore was to prevail with myself to listen to it, and to begin again, by insensible degrees, to relish its principles, which grief had not destroy'd, but only suspended their functions as it were. For this purpose, it was necessary for me to pitch upon a place to settle in, in which I might find, either by conversation or study, such expedients as might calm my troubled mind, and restore my reason to its former empire. Indeed my last unhappiness was of such a nature, that it required stronger remedies. Whatever exists no more may be forgotten: a resentment of injuries, the remembrance of the loss of possessions, and of a once miserable condition, decay and grow fainter by time. Even the loss of persons dear as life itself, how mournful soever the circumstances may be, is at last sooth'd as years slide on; and as we are dead to all hopes, so our sighs and wishes die away. But the infidelity of a wife, attended with the criminal circumstances before related; an affliction so justly grounded as I fancied mine to be, the still-existing cause whereof was incessantly present to my memory; such a complication of heart-breaking circumstances as these would not suffer me to enjoy a

moment's ease. What happy instant could my reason make choice of, to suppress the perpetual tumults of my heart; or find an opportunity of being heard in the midst of so much sadness and distraction?

Nevertheless, the hopes I entertain'd of its assistance, was the only motive which prompted me to fix upon *Sau-mur* for my own and my children's residence, preferable to any other place. That city then made a very considerable figure; and indeed its reputation could not be founded on two better titles than those of religion and knowledge. It abounded with persons of great piety, able professors, and a multitude of foreigners, who came thither from all protestant countries, to imbibe wisdom and virtue, as at their source. My children could not possibly be educated in a better school, and with regard to my self, I imagin'd there was no place where I could hope to meet with so much ease and solid comfort. In what part soever of the world my faithless wife might be; I resolv'd, as was before observ'd, never to go in search of her. On the contrary I fancied, tho' I still lov'd her dearly, that I even should not so much as go to see her, did the most favourable opportunity present it self for that purpose. The only resolution I could have taken, had I heard where she was, would perhaps have been to get her seiz'd, without letting her know that it was by my orders; and then to confine her in some place, where she would have no opportunity of ever injuring me more. 'Twas not a thirst of revenge that suggested this thought: may she live, would I say, notwithstanding the deep anguish which the remembrance of my tenderness, and her slighted Vows, awak'd in my bosom; may she even be as happy, as her baseness renders her unworthy of being so; may all the happiness she has depriv'd me of, be united to her own, and by that means make her felicity still more perfect; or in case justice calls out from heaven for punishment, may she suffer only by remorse and repentance! But I owe too much to the memory of lord *Axminster*, to suffer his daughter to be dishonour'd, in case 'tis in my power to prevent her from being so. I'll get her seiz'd indeed, but then she shall be confin'd in a secure but agreeable place, where I'll procure her every satisfaction in my power. She is of a soft temper, says I; Ge
lin'

lin's death will undoubtedly set the enormity of her crimes in the strongest light; she'll bear confinement with patience; may perhaps spend it in content, and I only shall be wretched,

In this manner the habit I had contracted of controuling my passions, supported me still against those which had not yet entirely gain'd an ascendant over my reason, Hatred and revenge could never be so predominant, as to instil their poison into my soul; love only and affliction struggled, with wisdom, for pre-eminence in my bosom; but the two last tyrants have made a dreadful havoc in it; and I know not yet when heaven will be so good as to deliver me entirely out of their power.

As soon as I was fix'd in the resolution of going to *Saumur*, I communicated my design to Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister-in-law; and at the same time desir'd them to think of some place to settle in. The ladies were determin'd much sooner than I expected, and were so unanimous, that I did not doubt but they had concerted it before. Both of them cried out almost at the same instant, We won't leave you; this is our fixt resolution, and therefore we beg you not to oppose it. You want comfort; and no persons living will be more desirous of administering it than our selves. As I had hinted to them, that I intend'd to send my children to a publick school, they observ'd to me, that they were as yet too tender to be trusted to strangers; and thereupon Mrs. *Lallin* engag'd to behave as a mother to my two sons; and propos'd that my sister-in-law should undertake the education of her own daughter. She spoke in so urgent a manner, that having no just objection to make, I acquiesc'd instantly with their desires; so that continuing still blinder than ever, with regard to the principal cause of my misfortune and that of my wife; I contented imprudently to what must naturally contribute to perpetuate it. Upon this, we agreed to go immediately to *Saumur*, and there hire a house for us to live in together. Altho' my name was not so famous, as to engage people to use me with a peculiar distinction; we nevertheless agreed that I should change it; I being firmly resolv'd to avoid every thing that had the air of ostentation, or might hinder me from studying. The two ladies likewise chang'd their names in such a manner,

that it was impossible they should be known by them; and upon this, we set out for *Nantz* in 1667, immediately after the conclusion of the peace between *France* and *England*; and soon got very happily to our Journey's end.

This pacific situation of affairs had brought so great a confluence of foreigners to *Saumur*, that we could scarce meet with a house for our purpose; which, however we at last did. My first care was to get a large store of books, and whatever else was necessary for my new philosophical projects. I had made choice of a place situated a little remote from the city, in order to be more at liberty, either to see company or to be alone, as I should judge proper. The conduct of the children, and of my domestic affairs, I left to the women; and shutting my self up in my study from morning to night, I began again to improve my mind with reading and reflection; delightful exercise! to which I ow'd all the joys of my infant years, and from which I now hop'd to reap the same benefit. Tho' I had so long laid aside my studies, I nevertheless had not forgot all I had formerly learnt; so that without being oblig'd to go so far back as the elements, it yet was no difficult matter for me to strike into ways which I had never entirely lost sight of. I resum'd them at the same point where I left off; that is to say, relying on the solidity of the principles which I had imbib'd in the dawn of life, I sought for some method in books and reflections, how to apply them to the present situation of my mind. This employ'd my thoughts for some weeks; and here all my struggles and my whole attention center'd; I say all the struggles, and all the attention I was capable of bestowing; for I must be forced to confess, to my own shame, or that of Philosophy; that my exterior solitude, and my apparent assiduity, were unfaithful images of the inward disposition of my soul; for while my eyes were fix'd on a book, my thoughts would insensibly stray from it, and wander through the several places which had been the scenes of my misfortunes. These would image to my fancy the bloody spectacle of my daughter and Mrs. *Riding*, murther'd before my eyes, and devour'd by tygers in the shape of men; my dreadful sufferings in the deserts of *America*; the lord *Axminster's* deplorable end; my wife's

infidelity and shameful flight; the fatal effect of dear *Bridge's* friendship and generosity; in a word, the several persecutions of fortune, and those I might expect hereafter. These dreadful ideas made almost as strong an impression on my mind, as the objects themselves had done; and when I recover'd my self (so weak was my constancy and resolution) my eyes would generally be bath'd in tears, and my heart heavy with sighs, as they were forcibly endeavouring to get a vent. If at any time I happen'd to be more attentive than ordinary to what I was reading, I yet was far from reaping that benefit which I had expected from it; the conclusions I drew from my studies, had very little effect on my soul; my meditations were jejune and barren; I indeed perceived truths, but then I could not discover the relation they might bear to my present circumstances; or know how to employ them, so as to make them serve as remedies. Is this, would I sometimes cry out with astonishment, after having made numberless useless reflections; is this the source of peace and wisdom which formerly was of so great advantage to me? are these principles the same with those, on which my strength and tranquillity were formerly so well founded? Is it they, or I am chang'd? I can easily account for their failing me at a time when I wanted them; a time, when the distraction of my thoughts hinder'd me from perceiving those principles; but how was it possible for them then to make their influence be felt, since they could neither exhibit, or make themselves be heard by a soul which saw nothing but grief and affliction? But what now prevents these principles from re-assuming their former ascendant? I now invoke their assistance, and open to them a sad afflicted heart, which languishes till they assist it. Wherefore don't they indulge it instantly? why don't they restore it to that wish'd for, that happy calm it formerly enjoy'd; and which it believ'd was wholly owing to them?

As neither study or reflections could ease my mind effectually, I at last began to think that there was some error in the foundation of my philosophy; and not being able to persuade my self that the emptiness of my efforts was owing to this, I rather believ'd that 'twas I my self deviated from the right way, either in my principles or my

method, I us'd to argue in the following manner : Nature, says I; or to speak without a figure, the divine wisdom would never let men be expos'd to incurable evils, As she gave them existence, she engages her self, in some measure, to furnish them with the means of preserving themselves; otherwise, considering the numberless evils to which they are incessantly obnoxious, they would be the most wretched of all beings, finding themselves exposed to continual sorrows, at the same time that they are endued with reason; because it would then seem that it had been indulg'd for no other purpose but to torture them. And indeed we see, that there are few distempers but have a remedy pointed out for them, either by the light of nature, or some happy experiments. In case any should be found incurable, they are not to be consider'd as the work of nature any more than monsters; 'tis enough that, pursuant to the general laws of nature, we meet with few infirmities but what are cured by the assistance of the physician. Has not providence extended its care to brutes? We daily observe that they are acquainted with the virtues of simples, and eat a great many things which heal their diseases. Thus God's wisdom extends itself to the preservation of all animal beings, not excepting such as are void of reason.

Now if this disposition appears just and necessary with regard to the body, which undoubtedly is the most inferior part of us, and has no other dignity but what it borrows from its union with the soul: would it not be the highest affront to the justice and wisdom of our Creator, to think he has so far neglected the most noble of two substances, as to refuse it that succour which he indulges to the most contemptible of them? Grief, and the rest of the violent passions, are the diseases of the soul. A pestiferous fever cannot make wilder havock in the whole mass of blood, than these tyrants do in the rational faculties. Could it be possible for us ever to believe, that there is no remedy against their cruel attacks, and that the most grievous of all evils is incurable? It either is not so, or surely I have not a suitable idea of the justice of our Creator.

As I therefore succeed so ill in soothing my anxiety, certainly the fault is either in myself, or in the remedies I employ ;

employ; 'tis in myself in case I have err'd in the method, or in some of my principles; or in the remedy, if the mind is not to be cured by philosophy, and that the divine Being makes so great an effect flow from some other cause.

But then again I would object, what cause have I to suspect philosophy? has not she, in all ages, been consider'd as the standard by which we are to square our conduct; and the controuler of the passions? Have not the greatest men had recourse to her on all occasions, when they wanted either to correct or regulate the heart? Would these imagine her invested with a power she has not; and could they have been as much deceiv'd as myself, in flattering themselves that she could furnish them with a succour which it is not in her power to lend? Upon this, I resolv'd to re-examine my own principles, and all I had formerly imbib'd, which was not very difficult for me to do, as I had a very happy memory. I then endeavour'd wholly for some days, to recollect all my mother had taught me; and the most excellent notions I had either read, or my own thoughts had suggested, with regard to wisdom and happiness.

I trac'd matters from their original, and carried my imagination so far backward, as the first instant in which a man is suppos'd to enjoy a free use of his reason; as nothing is more present to his mind than himself, consequently his first attention must necessarily be fix'd on his own being. He examines its nature, and finds it to be compounded. Two substances of a different kind, and unequal in dignity, with regard to their essence, are found united and blended, as it were, to produce actions common to both. Each of them, consider'd separately, is altogether incapable of performing the other's operations; and yet, when united together, they both produce the same operation. The body moves, walks and acts, to all which it is naturally fitted; and yet it would not move, were it not for the conjunction of the soul, which is incapable of motion. Our soul receives the several sensations of pleasure and pain which is its nature, and yet it would not receive them, were it not for the mediation of the body, which is altogether incapable of sensation.

Thus there are two distinct parts of the same being, which are absolutely necessary to each other. The body cannot exert itself unless it be so inform'd and actuated by the soul; as on the other side, the soul would be in a perpetual apathy, were it not for the mediation of the body. But then does this mutual dependence argue their equality? To this I answer, no; and find on the contrary, that the body does not contribute to those actions which are common to it with the soul, but after a groveling manner, that is to say, by mere motions; and in case any other property is peculiar to it, 'tis not of a more noble kind; 'tis barely that of receiving a bounded number of shapes and combinations, which is so inconsiderable an advantage, that it does not deserve the name of perfection. But on the other side, the soul appears to have all the characteristicks of true greatness. What name shall I give to that wonderful faculty, by which it perceives, knows and judges? The soul studies, and contemplates its own substance, and discovers the nature and properties of it. Notwithstanding the dependence it has on the body, it yet disengages itself so far from it, as to consider the latter as a being of a quite different nature from, and inferior to itself; a substance, whose greatest glory is its being united with, and forming one being with the soul. This penetrates, weighs and examines the nature of the body, but finds the latter so contemptible; that she concludes it were almost as good not to exist at all, as be so groveling and insensible a portion of matter.

Hence, in case the soul applies her self to contemplate all she is capable of perceiving; she soon discovers, that tho' she is united with a material body, by such laws as it is impossible for her to comprehend, she yet is related to something of a more exalted and worthy nature. The least reflection gives her an idea of order, and of the several perfections and virtues; when finding the thing she perceives is not herself, she concludes, that what thus exhibits itself so clearly, must necessarily have a real existence, since a non-ens must be imperceptible. So important a discovery fills her at first with doubts and fears; she enquires, internally, what she ought to think of a being which thus reveals itself only in part; but at the same time, after so bright, so sublime a manner, as she presently

sently discovers that this being must certainly be more perfect than herself, since she is illuminated by it. But has the soul no other tie or communication with it, than a bare and transient perception? At least how came it to pass that she was not inform'd of it sooner? But now she is for retracting the past, in order to examine the progress of her knowledge; when she confesses with astonishment, that she does but then begin to know.

And now her admiration and surprize encrease. 'Tis no hard matter for her to discover, at the same time, this new æra of her existence. But what being indulg'd it her? The soul plainly perceives, that she herself is not the author of it. By what methods shall she find out the being, whose goodness gave, and maintains her existence.

To make this important enquiry, she has recourse to exterior objects. She considers every thing which surrounds her: what a variety of objects present themselves, and how eagerly she pants to discover the nature of them all! Nevertheless, she soon sees that her ideas are more confin'd than she at first suspected they were. She does not find any thing in the whole compass of beings round her, capable of satisfying her doubts. That immense composition which we call the world, stops her but a moment; for a little reflection on the least of its parts, teaches her to form a judgment of the rest. She sees nothing but matter, that is, a gross and insensible substance, whose whole difference consists merely in the variety of its motions and configurations; and is directly of the same nature with those of her body, which she had before discover'd and despis'd; and she has too exalted an idea of herself, to ascribe her original to so mean and groveling a cause.

'Tis true indeed, that amidst those parts of matter which appear to her susceptible only of a blind and passive motion; she perceives some which seem to move with more choice and liberty. She observes, that their actions are too various, and at the same time too beautifully link'd, and too regular, not to spring from a rational, intelligent principle. Besides, their form agrees exactly with that of her own body; they seem to have the same tendency, and to be obnoxious to the same wants. Thence she concludes that they don't act alone, that they

are accompanied with something which resembles herself; in fine, that they are like her own body, the shell or receptacle of something of a more noble nature than themselves. Thrice happy discovery! May she not owe her existence to some of those exalted and immaterial Beings? These think, feel and reflect as she does; may not they therefore have communicated to her, what they themselves possess?

But in case they bear a resemblance to the soul, as she is firmly persuaded they do, why should they enjoy a power which she is sensible she does not? But supposing they really were invested with such a power, to whom would they owe it? For 'tis very evident they could not possibly have bestow'd it on themselves. For then neither they, nor herself, would continue long in the mortifying dependence on a body, in case they could act as they pleas'd, and produce any change in their condition. The soul must therefore leave the enquiry of the several objects round her, as of no service to her researches. She finds herself lodg'd in the world, but she manifestly perceives that it did not give her being; and that she cannot ascribe her original to what is inferior to herself; or to a thing which being at most her equal; must, as well as herself, owe its existence to some cause.

In the mean time, this excursion on outward objects, is of the highest advantage to her. In examining the matter of which this vast universe is fram'd, she seems to have observ'd something that naturally rais'd her admiration. However, 'twas not matter itself, for this appear'd equally mean and contemptible in its several shapes and modifications: but what idea is she to form of the astonishing harmony and order, which shines in the œconomy of its several parts? How just is the relation throughout! how regular the proportions! how exact the concatenation of subordinate causes and effects! On the other side, what a majesty appears in the general disposition of the design! what a noble simplicity in the execution! what a constant uniformity in its duration! How was matter thus capable of forming the most magnificent, the most ravishing of all spectacles? How desirous soever the Creator of so glorious a work may be to conceal himself, 'tis impossible but his finger must be seen

on this occasion: his power must necessarily be infinite, otherwise he could never have produc'd so many wonderful things out of so contemptible a substance as matter. Nor can his wisdom be less infinite than his power, in thus exhibiting himself so conspicuously, in the order and disposition of his work. Lastly, that his goodness is equal to his wisdom and power, appears from his having taken such pleasure, in diffusing so much splendor and ornament over his creatures.

Here the philosophical soul, which I suppose to be still fix'd in attention, perceives its comparing and reflecting faculty wholly re-awak'd. She recalls, in an ecstasy of joy, the first ideas which prompted her to make those enquiries; and begins to find, in a very sensible manner, that they are no longer shadowy, but real. That unknown being, whom she perceiv'd only by the vague and random ideas she had of order and perfection, then reveals itself in an almost sensible manner. And now all her doubts must vanish soon: she has found what she sought after; 'tis the Creator of all things, and consequently the author of her being; 'tis the source of life, and the principle of universal light; 'tis the fountain of order, wisdom, goodness, justice, and of all virtues and perfections, or rather, 'tis order itself; wisdom, justice and goodness are its essence. 'Tis all virtue, all perfection, and all excellency.

A philosopher that could once raise himself to this happy point of knowledge, justly believes he has attain'd to the highest degree of illumination, to which his soul was capable of ascending. All the rest consists only in displaying and exercising it. Henceforwards he will proceed from science to science, that is, from certainty to certainty. What a prodigious field is here open'd! He is at once sensible of the truth of all his ideas; and of the infallibility of his judgments, in case he examines things attentively. As he was form'd by a being whose wisdom and goodness are infinite; he is persuaded, that the qualities which it indulged him, are not specious and deceitful. The same intelligence which endued him with those exalted ideas of order, justice, goodness and wisdom, cannot possibly abandon him in less difficult researches:
having

having now discover'd the principles, the study of the consequences will be easy and agreeable.

First, he enquires anew into the nature of his soul, in order to discover more clearly therein the finger of his Creator. Since he discover'd such divine touches in matter only, what may he not expect to find in a Being of an infinitely more exalted nature? And indeed, he perceives two things in it, which are great above all comparison. The first is the faculty of thinking, which enables him to know and multiply his lights to infinitude; a faculty of so exalted a nature, that he himself, tho' possessed of it, is very much puzzled how to explain it. He perceives much better what it is not, than what it is. It does not bear the least resemblance to matter, whose numberless shapes and motions can never produce any thing like a thought. Neither is it that harmony, order, justness and perfection, which result from a certain disposition of the several parts of matter. For in case this harmony and perfection have a real and proper existence, then the faculty of thinking must be dependent on that of matter; and the soul is conscious that hers is wholly independent on any thing of a material nature. The very reluctance and uneasiness the soul feels, to find herself subject to the body, in some of her operations, is a natural proof that she does not owe any thing to the latter; and would willingly be disengaged from it, were she not united to it by certain laws. Besides, were the soul no more than the order, the harmony and perfection of the body; how could it possibly be of greater extent than the body itself? Its dimensions would then correspond exactly with the parts of the body, to which it belongs. Now the soul finds itself more extensive than the whole mass united; she soars infinitely above, and perceives the bounds of matter; and therefore she must be wholly independent on it; ——— But what is she then? Possibly she will not be allow'd to have a more perfect knowledge of herself, 'till another season, and in another state; however, this she knows certainly, *viz.* that she is a thinking being: an inestimable advantage, which alone sufficiently proves the dignity and infinite greatness of her Creator.

This first mark of a divine artist, is undoubtedly the most illustrious; but then 'tis not the only one worthy the notice of the philosopher. The philosopher turns his eyes inward, and contemplates but a moment: what does he to perceive? — I should not say perceive, for it here ceases to go by that name; he now feels within himself a secret inclination, an active principle, which pushes him forward to something he does not yet know. — How shall he define this sensation? 'Tis the exigence of some unknown want, which requires to be filled. If it be not a pain, 'tis at least the privation of a necessary pleasure. He pants after a certain good, without which he cannot be easy; it attracts him incessantly; he is prompted to seek after it by an involuntary impulse; and dragg'd away, as it were, by an irresistible ascendant.

He then finds, he is not only susceptible of desires, but that some of these are stronger and less limited than the knowledge which irradiates his mind. This reflection startles him at first; for he does not immediately see thro' the wise disposition with which the Creator has order'd all things. He first considers his desires as a natural confession, and a mortifying testimony of the imperfection of his being; which gives him the greater pain, as he does not at first find out the object of them, and how long they may continue. Importunate clouds, which are of no other use but to ruffle the eternity of his soul! Afflicting interruption, which will check the progress of his knowledge; and prevent him from calmly employing the faculty of thinking with which he is inform'd! Though he does not dare to complain of his Creator, or suspect his wisdom and goodness; he at least sighs when he reflects on his own condition; it lessens the high idea he had entertain'd of his own greatness; and in order to save, in some measure, the remains of it; he resolves, if possible, to suppress and extinguish his desires, in order to devote himself, by the exercise of a more noble faculty, to the contemplation of truth. But he cannot continue long in this error; for the moment he has made some little advances towards truth, he finds that she was the object of his desires. He cannot mistake in this; for his heart glows as he approaches towards her. This inquietude now seems upon the point of subsiding,
and

and his cravings of being fill'd. He imagines, that either truth was made for him, or at least himself for truth. 'Tis certain that the more he discovers of her, the more eager he is to discover her thoroughly. But now his desires are far from giving him pain; 'tis the state of a man who is possessed of so much felicity, that he cannot sufficiently satiate himself with it; he is happy, and would be more so. In this manner does the philosopher meet with a fresh source of content and admiration, in those things which before gave him pain. What he consider'd as an imperfection in himself, now appears to him a fresh indication of the infinite perfections of his Creator. He not only sees that he was form'd by him; but he feels that he was formed for him only. His desires are found adapted, as it were, to his ideas. By his ideas he knows himself to be the work of his hand; and his desires draw him towards that Being, as the supreme good, and the fountain of all his happiness.

That man who has been always immers'd in sense; and perhaps never consider'd the two principal faculties of his mind, is incapable of conceiving the joy with which those sublime, those important discoveries inspire a philosophical soul.---No; this he is not capable of, for were he so, he would be jealous of it, and despise every other species of joy. And indeed we are hence to date the happy course of a rational and truly philosophical life. Whosoever has known his Creator and himself, may, if he pleases, tread unerringly the pathes of wisdom and happiness. The way is open to him; and he never loses sight of the end of his course. Directed by his understanding; at the same time that he is excited by his desires; he is equally incapable of going astray through ignorance, or stopping in his way through faintness. If he is bound, as being a man, by some ties with the creatures of his own species, he does all that duty requires of him; and takes his conduct in this particular, from the source of that order and justice which he is perpetually contemplating. The ties of blood, such as tenderness and affection for relatives; the duties of humanity, such as kindness, mildness, forgetfulness of injuries, and compassion for the sufferings of others; those of reason, such as evenness of mind, constancy, a contempt of superfluity, and a moderate use
of

of necessities, are the many consequences which flow naturally from his principles, and form his system of morality. He copies, in some measure, after his Creator, and aggrandizes himself by imitating the sovereign perfections by which he is pleased to reveal himself. Besides; society with mankind is not an obstacle to wisdom, for such as love, and enquire sincerely after it; so far from it, he finds the acquaintance of his fellow-creatures useful. Did I not say, that they all bore the image of their Creator? This the philosopher perceives, tho' they unhappily disfigure it. This is a sight which strengthens his desires; he draws an advantage from the effects of their irregular passions; their arts, their sciences, most of which owe their invention to interest and vanity, are by him made subservient to his views, as being so many succours which extend his knowledge. These are excellent effects of a bad cause, which he rectifies and refines more and more, by the use he puts them to; and thus applies them to what they were originally design'd. In fine, he makes a considerable advantage of even the very sight of the frailties and silly bustles of mankind. The comparison he makes of these, with the vigour and perpetual calm of his mind, strengthens him still more in his principles; makes his happiness dearer to him, and the fruits of his researches more precious. He devotes himself without reserve to wisdom, being prompted to love her from this double motive; *viz.* because he is happy through her, and finds that without her he would be stupid and miserable.

What after this is wanting to entitle him justly to the name of wise man? Let us summon up all our knowledge, and the collected force of reason, in order to form to ourselves a more just idea of such a person. Possibly some may give a greater extent to this character, but I am of opinion 'tis impossible to entertain a more sublime one. 'Tis in this happy state that the philosopher ought to be equally insensible, both to those evils which may make him lose that title, and to those good things which he may receive from another cause; the former ought not to have power enough, to force a single pang from him; and the latter should appear too contemptible in his eyes to give him a real pleasure. It must be confess'd that the
soul

soul is naturally subject to the organs of the body; 'tis impossible but she must see when the eyes are open; hear when the nerves of the ear are shaken; and feel, the instant any extraordinary motion happens in that portion of matter to which she is united. But can this sensation lessen her greatness, or weaken her liberty? The soul rejects it, whenever she finds it unworthy the excellency of her nature; at least, she receives it without fixing upon, or consenting to it. The more her dependence on the body incommodes and humbles her, the greater consolation this administers; as it thereby plainly shews her, that so violent a state cannot last long. How would it be possible for her to doubt of this? She is too well acquainted with the invariable laws of primitive and eternal order. The order of nature is only an exception to this; she is even sure, that they hold to one another by some secret tye, though she cannot perceive it yet, and expects a season of manifestation and light; when all obscurities and exceptions ceasing, she then will see every thing return to its end, and re-enter peaceably into the general order. She therefore finds herself created for another state; she has already attain'd it, in some measure, by the ardency of her desires and the certainty of her hopes; and perpetually indifferent with regard to every thing that cannot prevent her from attaining it one day; she despises pleasure, considers grief as nothing, and views the hurry and agitation of all things round her without the least emotion; and would be equally insensible were this fabrick of the universe and all nature destroy'd.

Such are the foundations on which I believ'd my strength and constancy fix'd; and such were the instructions I had imbib'd in my infancy. The studies I had gone through, my mother's example and her precepts, had always turn'd on these principles. They were become, in some measure, natural to me, because they had been so frequently inculcated, and as I revolv'd them incessantly in my mind. And indeed they had made an impression on my heart, so long as they found no obstacle. They had been the rule of my life, whilst it was calm and untroubled. I imagin'd myself to be a philosopher; and perhaps I was truly so, before I was arrived at a certain degree of misery and ill fortune. But 'twas this very reflection

fection that confounded, and made me have a suspicion of philosophy itself. For why did it abandon me when I found it most necessary? What Idea could I entertain of a remedy, which vanish'd away the instant the disease discover'd itself? Nevertheless, I could not deny but that the principles I had re-examin'd, were as solid as ever. Nothing in the world is certain, would I say, nothing is to be depended upon; if that which now appears to me to be founded invincibly on such clear arguments, is all sophism and an unhappy illusion. If what I have constantly follow'd was true wisdom, why does she not make me reap the benefits she had promised? And in case I have mistaken error for truth, how deplorable am I, to be at one and the same time tortur'd by sorrow and abandon'd by reason!

I then reflected, that possibly my complaints might be without foundation; for I consider'd that it was not enough to know the excellence of a remedy; but that before it can be properly apply'd it is necessary the nature of the disease should be known. I thereupon examin'd carefully, in what sorrow properly consisted; and soon found, that as it is a mere sensation of the soul, and not to be represented by ideas; we therefore cannot define it better than by the word *sorrow*, by which it is express'd: For to call it simply an aversion of the soul, as some philosophers do, gives an obscure and very imperfect definition of it. In general therefore, since we are in the dark, even as to the nature of the soul, we cannot pretend to explain what a sensation is. Now if it be impossible to know in what sorrow consists; 'tis manifest that the remedy is not to be directly apply'd to it; for this would be repugnant to reason. Hence I easily concluded, that it was necessary for me to go back to the cause of it.

I did not enquire into all the different methods by which the sensation of sorrow may be communicated to the soul: all my reflections were relative only to my wants. 'Twas plain my sorrow arose from the death, or infidelity of all I held dear, and the dreadful circumstances which had always been inseparable from my misfortunes. To this cause the disease of my soul was owing. I then asked myself, Whether it were probable that philosophy cou'd dry up this source of my misfortunes? Supposing
it

it capable of working such a miracle, I conceiv'd there were but three methods by which it could prove effectual. The first was, to remove from that spectacle of my misfortunes, which was incessantly present to my mind, the strong ascendant it had gain'd over me; which not satisfied with filling me with the sharpest pangs, sometimes forced involuntary cries from me; and which I myself should not have perceiv'd, had it not been for the astonishment of those who liv'd with me, and were terrified when they heard them. What likelihood was there that philosophy could produce so astonishing an effect! Could even heaven itself do this without changing the nature of things? 'Tis contradictory to think that one can lose a beloved object and not be griev'd. But in case one loves with a most tender, a most perfect passion; if what one loves so dearly happens to be lost by a most cruel death, or the blackest treachery; what can possibly stop the transports and tears, which these dreadful shocks must necessarily excite? A devouring flame does not fly swifter, or prove more fatal. I was sensible that philosophy might possibly have preserv'd me from the excesses of love and friendship; but having once open'd my heart to those two passions, I saw plainly, that all their effects were as necessary; and that misfortunes, whose strength was founded in those two causes, were above the power of philosophy.

The second method which philosophy might suggest to ease my sorrow, was, to endue me with as much strength to support my misfortunes, as they had employ'd in making me feel the weight of them. Lovely idea! alas! since it delights my rational faculties, why does it not also work on my heart? Experience, more powerful than all arguments, inform'd me continually, that the soul is not to expect any succour from its ideas, when these interfere with its sensations. I did not even think it possible to image to myself a new situation of my soul, in which it could be less disturb'd. An increase of strength and knowledge must necessarily heighten my anguish, since these would have made me more susceptible of their impressions.

Finally, the third method was to divert insensibly the principal causes of my sorrow; and to impose, as it were, upon

upon my soul, by accustoming it insensibly to employ itself on another object. I at first look'd upon this kind of cure as wanton and frivolous; and therefore rejected it sooner than I had done the two former. I nevertheless came back to this, as being the most solid, when I consider'd it was the only one which was feasible. 'Tis certain, says I, my misfortunes are of such a nature, that they must necessarily affect my mind, so long as it continues to meditate on them. Nor is it less sure, that my soul cannot acquire strength enough to resist this sensation, either from herself or from philosophy; and consequently, that she must lay aside all hopes of ease and happiness, so long as she continues to entertain it. But why may I not hope, that she may fix on another object, which may insensibly divert her to another sensation? So great a change as this, cannot undoubtedly be wrought in an instant; but 'tis plain it may be brought about by slow degrees. Yes, says I, this is a service philosophy only is capable of doing me, or that I will expect from her. I was, perhaps, on the point of condemning her unjustly. What I, indeed, requir'd of her is really impossible, because it is contrary to nature; but then, what philosophy offers me here is vastly reasonable: she may gain a complete ascendant over my mind, by filling it insensibly with those sublime truths which she will propose to its consideration; the heart, all whose impulses are blind, turns itself infallibly towards the objects of the mind. Mine will therefore be easy, when I shall be employ'd in a peaceable meditation; and by this means, I shall attain quiet, felicity and wisdom.

This reflection reconcil'd me for some moments to philosophy. I flatter'd myself that she would produce a wish'd for effect on me, at least for the future; and I pass'd, from this hope, to the following reflection, *viz.* that 'twas undoubtedly in this sense we are to explain the elogiums which have been given her in all ages; and the power which has been ascrib'd to her of healing the diseases of the soul. But heaven, which had surer remedies, and such as were better adapted to my evils in store, permitted this thought to be attended with a new reflection, which plung'd me afresh into my uncertainties; and made me conceive as unfavourable an idea of philo-

philosophy as I had ever done. She will then, says I, cure me by diverting my attention from my sorrows. But in case this be all the power she has over our souls, resumed I on a sudden, in what does her particular advantage consist? I don't perceive any thing in this effect that is peculiar to her self; or which may not be justly expected from the most trite and common sciences. Why do I say sciences? Every empty and trifling occupation must produce it much more infallibly; for the representation of a comedy, for instance; an harmonious concert of musick; a party of hunting, or an entertainment; in a word, whatever can be capable of making a strong impression on the senses will attract my mind more powerfully than dry and ungrateful speculations, which alone, have not the power of affecting my heart. The so much boasted virtue of philosophy, and the sovereign empire which it is said to have over the passions, is, said I, in a kind of passion, then reduc'd only to this! Impotent phantom, which I have too long rever'd; and in which I had so foolishly plac'd all my confidence! No, no, says I, I will no longer be the sport of vain, senseless wisdom. In case I had reason to be persuaded that heaven is so gracious as to indulge a remedy for the maladies of the soul; I should also have considered, that this cannot be such a weak and empty remedy, as is unable to operate alone. I require one which will heal infallibly; and since philosophy is incapable of this, I therefore suspect its efficacy, and shall henceforwards not desire its assistance.

I should have gain'd a considerable advantage, in thus discovering the weakness of all philosophical speculations; had I, at the same time, found any thing more solid to ground my hopes upon. But then, tho' I reject'd a faithless support, I did not find either my perplexity or sorrows diminish. So far from it, they were to increase; because, as I had nothing to substitute in the place of the phantom which I had destroy'd, I remain'd, in some measure, more naked and defenceless. And, indeed, I was, for several days after, inexpressibly dejected. Every thing was troublesome, and seem'd to conspire to heighten my uneasiness. The authors which I had hitherto idoliz'd, now became odious and insupportable. I consider'd them as so many impostors, who had seduc'd me with false promises,

mises, and abandon'd me cruelly in my distress. I now kept away from my study, purposely that I might shun their presence; imagining, that when I was in the midst of my library, I was surrounded with a multitude of false friends. I could not bear to hear *Plato* or *Seneca* nam'd before me, and more than once resolv'd to burn their works. All I did for seven or eight days, was to walk solitarily up and down a pretty large garden belonging to my house; where I was plung'd in an abyss of fatal and gloomy meditations. Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister-in-law were very uneasy, lest I should have a fit of sickness, and watch'd all my steps; but I told them at once, that their sollicitude was painful to me, and absolutely desir'd them not to interrupt my deep contemplation.

There are few people, who, were they to relate such an adventure as the following, but would think themselves oblig'd, for reputation sake, to disguise some circumstances of it. As for myself, having always been of opinion, that the principle upon which we proceed, makes an action good or bad, and consequently that the motive only can make it dishonourable; I therefore am not ashamed to give a genuine account of myself, and to make an ingenuous confession of my faults in a publick manner. 'Tis enough that I can give this honourable testimony of myself, *viz.* that my heart was ever inclin'd to follow the inspirations of virtue and wisdom; and that tho' it has sometimes been mistaken in its object, its intentions were always just and honourable.

So far from meeting with the comfort which I expected the solitude of my garden would administer, the melancholy reflections I there made heighten'd my affliction in such a manner, that I soon was seiz'd with a dreadful and most dangerous disease. I cannot give the reader a stronger idea of it, than by calling it *an invincible hatred to life*. 'Tis a kind of delirious frenzy, which is found to rage more among my countrymen, the *English*, than the rest of the *Europeans*. But since this disease is look'd upon as almost peculiar to our nation, 'tis surprising that it should have had such violent Effects upon me, I having spent so many years in foreign countries; and as I was at that time in *France*, which boasts so pure an air, that my countrymen fly to it for refuge,
against

against that gloomy disposition of the soul. 'Twould be a difficult matter for me to describe the several gradations I went through, which at last brought me to the utmost excess of folly and blindness: but a circumstance which will appear incredible to my readers, is, that I look'd for some days, upon my furious transports, as the effect of the highest wisdom; and I don't think that I ever, in my life, form'd more methodical arguments, than those which hurried me to the brink of the most dreadful precipice.

'Twas the third day after I had thrown my books aside, that I observ'd the first symptoms of the disease above-mention'd: these were so furious, that had I had a dagger in my hand, I should, in my transports, have plung'd it into my heart. However, as there was suddenly a strange revolution in my inward faculties, I soon perceiv'd that I was unaccountably changed. This reflection making me more attentive, I immediately discover'd, but after a blind and involuntary manner, the state of my soul. But a surprizing circumstance is, that I was not any way uneasy upon that account. My disorder'd brain had already depriv'd my reason. I instantly made the idea of death familiar to me, and was astonish'd only that I had so long delay'd the resolution of putting an end to my life; a resolution, methought, equally happy and necessary. I have sought, says I, for a remedy to heal the disease of the soul, and have now discover'd it. 'Tis simple, 'tis short, and perfectly well adapted to my evils. How blind was I not to have discover'd it before? Yes, says I, its several characteristicks are a proof of its excellence. 'Tis easy, 'tis present to all the wretched; its effects are certain, and every thing but this appears distasteful and bitter. How many gates open themselves which lead to death? All I have to do, is to chuse the shortest and safest way.

My memory did not fail to suggest a great number of examples, which strengthened my resolution. I consider'd that the greatest men had made this their refuge, to rid themselves of all their evils. Will any one say that this was owing to a want of wisdom and virtue in *Cato*, of sense in *Demosthenes*, or of courage in *Mithridates* and *Mark Anthony*? 'Tis therefore certain, says I, that cou-

rage

rage, good sense, virtue, and wisdom, are not incompatible with a voluntary death. Now, a thing which suits so well with the most noble qualities of the soul, all which are the gift of heaven, cannot be an evil, but must even be a virtue. And indeed, does not reason prompt us to wish for death? The most unruffled, the most happy soul, must necessarily groan at its captivity in the body. This is a heavy and obscure state, which she should pant to see ended. The bonds which enthrall her are hard, mortifying, unjust and unnatural; how ardently therefore should she desire to break them?

Altho' the resolution which I took of dying increas'd daily in me; and that I did not perceive any thing in this which interfered with reason, I nevertheless had strength enough to suspend the execution of it for some days. This delay was grounded on a motive different from what might be imagin'd. I had no other view, but to justify, by new reflections, this strange action to my own mind; and to convince my self more and more, that it would not be condemn'd by heaven. However, it cost me the most violent struggles. before I could prevail with my self to defer it. Every instant which I added to my life, seem'd to me a theft, with regard to my peace and happiness. I spent four whole days in re-examining the arguments which should prompt me to make choice of death; and I did not find but they were as strong as at first. The only objection which stopt me for some time was the following: my soul, says I, is imprison'd in a body by the will and ordinance of the supreme Being; and there must certainly be some reason why he keeps her in that captivity. I cannot comprehend the mystery of his impene-trable views; but then I am sure, he cannot guide himself by any rules but those of infinite justice and wisdom. I therefore am bound to revere them, even tho' I am in the dark as to that matter. He has mark'd out the length of my days, consequently to shorten them, would be to violate his laws. Yes, answer'd I, after a long meditation, I undoubtedly violate them, in case I am as fully persuaded of their existence, as that he himself submitted to them; but in case he should have chang'd them; or at least interprets them in a different manner, with respect to me, then from the generality of mankind, ought not I to obey his
last

last will as implicitly as his first? As he has suffer'd me to fall into the extremes of grief and misery, he consequently has excepted me from the number of those, whom he sentences to live a long course of years. 'Tis morally impossible, as he is a Being, whose essence is infinite goodness, that he should delight to see me lead a life of misery; and even the excess of my pangs is a manifest proof that he permits me to die.

After this conclusion, all that now remain'd for me, was to make choice of the kind of death, and appoint the moment when I should lay the burthen down. These two circumstances threw me into some little perplexity. At last, I resolv'd a sword should do my business, and not to delay putting my design in execution any longer than that noon. There were several long alleys or walks in the garden, which lay at a considerable distance from the house; one of these I made choice of as best suiting my purpose. A little summer-house, which was in the most remote corner of it, was to be the scene of this bloody action. I first look'd carefully round me, in order to see whether I could kill myself unperceiv'd by any one; and took all these precautions with surprising coolness. I was not sensible of the least trouble or uneasiness; my deep sorrow being suspended, as it were, by an anticipated effect of my resolution. As it had but a short time to last, its sting could not be piercing. When a man is going to be rescued from a severe captivity, he reflects but very little on the evils he has suffered, and the chains which are going to fall from him; he then thinks of nothing but the sweets he is going to taste, in a state of freedom and liberty.

Accordingly I walk'd back towards the house, in the utmost composure of mind; and as dinner time was very near, I thought it would be proper, in order to avoid all suspicion, to sit once more at table with my family. The two ladies observ'd, that I discover'd an unusual tranquillity of mind; and hinting this to me, I answer'd them in such a manner as confirm'd their opinion. I left them as usual, and taking my sword out of my bed-chamber, I went immediately into the garden. My mind still enjoy'd a profound calm, and I did not feel the least inquietude, with regard to the life to come. I could not find
that

that I had offended heaven in any thing; and how obscure soever my condition might be after death, I yet inferr'd a kind of certainty, from the general ideas I had form'd of the justice and goodness of my Creator, that nothing unhappy could befall me, in the state into which I was going to enter. I was now got to the summer-house, when I unsheath'd my sword, and view'd a moment the point of it with the utmost attention. I will not scruple to own that I was seiz'd with a gentle kind of horror, if I may give it that name, all over me: but this, so far from meriting the name of fear, inspir'd me with a soothing reflection, with regard to the happiness of my soul; which was then going to wing its flight, towards the regions of bliss and glory. I even smil'd at the weakness of my body, and looking upon myself with disdain; thy reign says I, is at an end; return now to thy primitive dust: If I want thy assistance for a moment more, 'tis only to make thee thyself contribute to our eternal separation. Omnipotent Being, to whom I owe my origin, added I, shutting my eyes at the same time, and struggling, as it were, to turn them inwards; take pity on thy creature, and direct my steps in the darkness whither I am going. Thou fillest all places, and therefore my soul cannot fail of being receiv'd into thy bosom.

My arm was up-lifted, and 'tis certain there was now but a moment's interval between life and death. Heaven! by what miracle didst thou withhold the point of my sword, which, by this time, was to have pierced my heart? A noise which I heard at a little distance from the summer-house, stopt my hand on a sudden, and made me hide my sword behind me, for fear of being perceiv'd. The noise I heard was made by my children. Mrs. *Lal-
lin* and my sister-in-law, having observ'd me to be more than ordinary easy at dinner, had sent them after me; in order that their pretty prattle and tender fondling might increase my tranquillity. They came up to me, and after hugging me in the most affectionate manner, they took hold of my hands, and at the same time put several childish and innocent questions to me. I let them alone for a little time, and continu'd in a kind of inactivity, the effect of my uncertainty and surprize. However, as they continu'd to caress, and put their little, simple ques-

tions to me, I began to attend to them; and gaz'd upon them for some time, with that tender complacency, which nature is so apt to awake in the heart of a parent. The eldest was not eight years of age, and both of 'em possess'd the most amiable graces of infancy. They are going to ruin me, says I to myself; after my death they will be friendless and undone; abandon'd by an unnatural mother, and bereav'd of their unhappy father. What will become of them? My sister-in-law and Mrs. *Lallin* have hitherto behav'd with the utmost tenderness towards them, but who knows whether they'll continue to do so after I am gone? Will a bare impulse of friendship inspire them with humanity, since their mother was never sensible to that? Heaven! why didst thou permit me to be the second cause of their coming into the world? Is not such an unfortunate wretch as I, a kind of monster in society? How can it be consistent with thy wisdom and goodness, to suffer a race like this to be perpetuated?

These reflections, added to the black poison which flow'd in my veins and infected my soul, led me insensibly to one of the most shocking resolutions that ever enter'd the human mind; and what will undoubtedly appear incredible, is, that in the series of reflections which I continued still to make, every conclusion I drew, appear'd to me to tend manifestly to the most just and rational principles. I have, says I, taken a resolution of dying, in order to put a period to a life, which is too unhappy to be borne with patience. I am convinc'd, that the Creator not only approves my resolution, but that he himself inspires me with it. Now if I may be allow'd to kill myself, in order to put a period to evils which are incurable; shall I not be permitted to do the same, to prevent inevitable ones? Let me suppose but for a moment, that I happen to be only in the latter circumstance, that is, threatned with a numberless multitude of dreadful and infallible evils: 'tis manifest, that I may do as much this instant to rid myself of a present evil, as I may do hereafter to secure myself from a future one. This is the very case of my children. They are born to the same sad misfortunes as myself; their fate is but too manifest. Had they nothing to dread but the

conta.

contagion of my unhappiness, they must naturally expect a life of wretchedness and misery. What better office can I therefore do them, than to prevent their entrance into a series of misfortunes, by dispatching them this instant? We then shall all be waisted to a happy region. They'll die with their father. In case I consider death as a felicity, why do I delay to let my children share it with me?

Having ended these arguments, I took them both up in my arms, being still seated, and hanging down my head between them both, I join'd both their cheeks to mine. I now acted without reflection, and by mere instinct. I continu'd for some time in this posture, my mind being still roving and unfix'd; and without daring once to attempt to execute the bloody resolution I had form'd. My heart, which an instant before I found so free and unruffled, was suddenly oppress'd with an unusual weight; and by an effect of this change, which I did not yet perceive, tears gush'd, by intervals, from my eyes. However, when I consider'd my uncertainty, I look'd upon it as a weakness; and thereupon rose up on a sudden. 'Tis done, says I; I'll die, and they shall both accompany me in death. As I am their parent, consequently 'tis incumbent on me to make them happy, if possible; and therefore an idle pity shall not keep me from indulging them the only felicity I am capable of bestowing. The confusion in which I spoke these words was so great, as prevented me from considering, that they had sense enough to understand the meaning of them; so that seeing my drawn sword in my hand, which, as was before observ'd, I had hid behind me, they left the summer-house in the utmost terror. 'Tis here the reader will find it difficult to determine which was most astonishing; my silly and obstinate cruelty, or the respect and submission of my poor children. Exasperated to see them run from me, I call'd them with a threatening tone of voice; when those fearful and innocent victims, accusom'd to obey, even the most insignificant of my commands, immediately return'd back. They cried all the way, and stopping at the door, fell on their knees, as tho' they begg'd me to spare their lives, which they saw but too manifestly I intended to bereave them of. This sight struck me at once; and I will confess that it touch'd the

most intimate recesses of my heart. 'Tis impossible for the highest wisdom, or the most stupid folly, to resist the sensations of nature. My sword dropt from my hand; and so far from resolving any longer to murder my dear children, I found that I could have sacrificed a thousand lives to save theirs. This last impulse was so delightful, that I abandon'd myself intirely to it. Come, says I, dear unfortunate babes, holding out my arms with the utmost tenderness; come, and embrace your unhappy father; come hither, and don't be afraid. My senses were in such disorder, that it had chang'd the tone of my voice, and I endeavour'd in vain to stop my fast-flowing tears. They came up, when I clasp'd them to my bosom, in the utmost transports of joy, which suppress'd all their fears. The youngest, whose name was *Thomas*, and who was my darling, enquir'd of me, with the simplicity of a child of his age, why I design'd to kill him? This question being ask'd, in a tender and fearful tone of voice, pierc'd my heart. I answer'd him no otherwise than by embracing him afresh; and all I could do for some moments, was to sigh, and shed tears.

Nevertheless, as my imagination had been fill'd for several days, with the design I had form'd, and the preparations I had made to dispatch myself; notwithstanding so great a change was now wrought in me, it yet was scarce possible for those dreadful ideas of death to vanish so very soon, and be quite eraz'd. I was sensible of the danger I was in, in case they should again present themselves to my imagination with their former violence; and therefore, being resolv'd that my children, at least should be out of danger, I order'd them to go back into the house. They obey'd instantly, without saying one word.

Being thus left alone, I recollected the past incidents but was at first in doubt, whether I ought to thank heaven as tho' it had herein indulg'd me a favour; or reproach myself for it as a weakness. In case I suppos'd, that just and solid arguments had brought me to a resolution of dying; there was no doubt but the opposite sensation which had prompted the execution of it, both upon my children and myself, argued a weakness of mind. But then, in case the old principle of my mother's philosophy

viz. that all the impulses of nature are just, and consistent with order and regularity; if this principle, I say, sacred to her memory, by which I had so often squar'd my conduct, was as just as it always appear'd to be; what idea ought I to entertain of my last arguments; since they oppos'd directly the most necessary, and strongest impulses of nature? There was no medium in this case; for either I must acknowledge that reason had impos'd upon me, in thus prompting me to commit an action which was shocking to nature; or that the inspirations of the latter were unjust, and clash'd with order and regularity, in case they were repugnant to reason, which is itself the standard of regularity. To what side soever I might turn the scale, this could not be done till after a long examination; and such an enquiry was too important and too delicate to be the work of a moment. I therefore put off the consideration of this obscure problem, which was to decide whether I should live or die. But tho' my only view in this delay, was, to prevent my undertaking any thing with a rashness which prudence might afterwards condemn; I easily perceiv'd, that some change was wrought in my disposition. Whether it were, that the black melancholy which had seiz'd me, began to dispel of itself, or that a paternal tenderness had occasioned a strong revolution in my spirits; I perceiv'd, that I did not so ardently wish to die as I had done before.

But had my desire in that respect been more urgent, it yet would have been impossible for me to have satisfied it that day. The children were gone back into the house, as I had ordered them. Terror had been so strongly painted in their countenances, that it was impossible but the two ladies must perceive it. They had enquir'd into the reasons of it; and tho' the children would not tell them the truth of the affair (which they had the discretion to hide, but upon what motive I know not) they yet discover'd enough to make them very uneasy. Their affection for me made them hasten into the garden. I heard them coming down the walk; and not doubting but the strange story the children had told them, had brought them thither; I thought with some confusion, on the part I was going to act. However, I had time enough to hide my

sword before they came into the summer-house. Being come in, I waited for their speaking. They gave me the most obliging marks of their uneasiness upon my account; but I found they were intirely in the dark, as to my late horrid design; and I endeavoured to put on a chearfulness, which might remove every suspicion of that kind. This was never known but to my children, who could never erase the remembrance of it from their minds; and to the lord *Clarendon*, who being my fast friend, I did not scruple to acquaint him with it; so that I here reveal to the publick one of my most intimate secrets.

However, Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister-in-law, who had an eye upon all my steps, and too much sense to be imposed upon by appearances, would not wholly trust to the serenity of countenance which I had assum'd before them. Tho' they could not hit upon the very thing, they yet judg'd with reason that something extraordinary must have happen'd; and being very desirous of preventing, what their friendship for me made them apprehensive of; they agreed to find out some recreations for me, which I till then had absolutely refus'd to take. *Saumur* abounded with persons of merit and learning. They directed themselves to the most eminent of these; and acquainting them how much I stood in need of consolation, they engag'd them to visit me frequently. But as they fear'd I would refuse to accept of this remedy, in case I happen'd to know that they had procur'd it for me; they agreed with the gentlemen who were to be my visitants, how they should act, in order that I might approve of the motive of their visits.

The first who did me that honour, was one of the principal ministers of the protestant churches in *France*. My servant, who had been instructed by the two ladies, came and told me, that a person of great distinction desir'd very earnestly to speak with me, upon business of the highest importance. I was displeas'd at first with his importunity; however, I thought myself oblig'd to see him, and accordingly he was introduc'd. He had a grave aspect, when immediately he acquainted me with the design of his visit; saying, that having heard I had been for some time in *Saumur*, and had a great share in the king of *England's* favour; he therefore thought he might address me with confidence,

confidence, in order to interest me in the support of the protestant religion, which, he said, was now, more than ever, in want of a powerful protector. Our religion is, says he, at this time, threaten'd with so dreadful a blow in *France*, that 'tis on the brink of destruction. The hatred which the clergy bear us, breaks out upon a thousand occasions. We are inform'd by persons of undoubted veracity, that they are resolv'd to have all our privileges abolish'd; and being thoroughly acquainted with the spirit of our persecutors, we expect every moment to be treated with the greatest cruelty. Possibly it would be better for us to avoid the storm by a voluntary flight; but then we are in doubt whether or no they will suffer us to fly. Nevertheless, as we shall one day or other be forc'd to attempt it, we think it proper to fix betimes upon an asylum; especially upon account of this university, which is consider'd by us as the center of arts and sciences, and the sanctuary of our holy religion.

Upon this the doctor let me more particularly into his design, with regard to *England*. The plan he laid down was so regular, that it could not possibly have been the work of a moment: and therefore he certainly had meditated upon it, before the two ladies had entreated him to visit me. What he principally desir'd, was, to obtain of the king of *Great Britain* a place for the university of *Sauumur* to settle in, and he thought *Winchester* or *Southampton* the most proper for that purpose. We there, says he, will make arts and sciences flourish. So great a number of my countrymen, who would certainly leave their native country to follow us, must necessarily increase the strength and riches of *Great Britain*; not to mention that heaven would certainly indulge its blessings to an establishment which should be founded wholly on piety and zeal.

After having listen'd to him a considerable time, in order that I might be thoroughly acquainted with his whole scheme; I told him ingenuously, that though I had never adher'd to the protestant religion in particular; and had hitherto confin'd myself wholly to that of nature, which teaches us to honour God as the only supreme Being, and to love his creatures because they were form'd by him; yet these two principles alone prompted me to do all the service that lay in my power to my fellow crea-

tures: that the violence and injustice of those who persecute religion, prompted me the more to this, as I was persuaded that mankind ought to be free, at least in whatever relates to divine worship; and consequently, that nothing can be more unjust than to tyrannize over their consciences. I added, that this last reason had made me chuse to live in *Saumur*, preferable to any other part of *France*; because, tho' I was not directly acquainted with the tenets of the protestant religion, I yet had heard that one of them was *not to force any person*; and to consider that worship as most agreeable to the divine Being, which was most sincere. But, says I, 'tis not in my power to assist you in what is desir'd of me; and I am afraid that all I can do, is to wish your design may meet with success.

This answer gave the doctor a double advantage, in the design he had to visit me, by way of administering comfort: and he immediately put it in practice with so much civility and address, that I did not once suspect he had been put upon it. With regard, says he, sir, to your power, I know very well the service it may be to us, for don't imagine that you're altogether unknown in this city. We have heard of the favour which his *British* majesty shewed you in *Roan* and *Bayonne*; as also the services you endeavour'd to do him in the *West-Indies*. If you'll permit me to doubt of any thing, 'twould be rather of your good wishes; for since you own you are not acquainted with the principles of our religion, I can't see any circumstance that should prompt you to favour us. Upon this, he desir'd I would give him leave to visit me sometimes, in order to lay down the substance of the protestant religion; and thereby engage me in its defence from much stronger motives, than the general ideas of natural equity; or the aversion I might entertain against violence and persecution.

This offer put me into a dilemma. The reader has already seen, in the course of this history, how I stood affected with regard to religion. As my mother had taken particular care, to preserve me from prejudices of every kind in my infancy, I consequently had all the liberty requisite for making a disinterested choice, when I should come to years of discretion. But this very liberty I
had

had of chusing, had hitherto kept me from embracing any. The different opinions of which the several sects are form'd, had struck me prodigiously; and having consider'd them with the coolness which is natural to unprejudic'd minds; I could not discover any thing at first sight, which should engage me to prefer any one of them to all the rest. The arguments I had employ'd on that occasion were these. Suppose, says I, that there are fifty sects: now there is not one of these but condemns all the rest, and imagines itself only to be in the right. But then, the remaining forty nine, which ascribe to themselves the same prerogatives, condemn it also. In case I interrogate them apart, or all together, I still find forty nine voices against one; and one voice only in its favour, and that too its own. Consequently there are forty nine motives against one, to reject the rest, and make one believe them to be absolutely false. However, I'll suppose that forty nine only are in the wrong, which I must necessarily do, in case one is certainly in the right. Now am I ever the nearer by laying down this hypothesis? How will it be possible for me to know, which of them is in possession of that precious treasure truth? And in case, after having weigh'd this matter deliberately, I should at last fancy I had discover'd some glimmerings of light in this labyrinth of opinions; how shall I be able to depend merely upon my own judgment, which is to be my only guide rather than on the forty nine testimonies, which will persist constantly in declaring that I am in the wrong? 'Twill be to no purpose to answer, that on subjects of so important a nature as religion is, we ought to suspect every thing which does not exhibit itself clearly to the mind; and consequently, that an inward degree of certainty, is equivalent to forty nine exterior testimonies; this answer, I say, is a very weak one; for religion is equally important to all men in all sects; and I cannot suppose with any shadow of reason, that I am the only person in the world, who is concerned for the welfare of his soul, and passionately fond of truth.

This argument had prevented me from embracing the principles of any particular sect, either in *England*, *France*, or the *West-Indies*; and I had no manner of inclination to build my faith upon other people's notions. I neither

had been allow'd time or opportunity to instruct myself in religious matters; so that I had always suspended the consideration of them, 'till a proper season might present itself. I must add, that philosophy had suggested a religion, which agreed exactly with what I looked upon to be reason. This I before observed in the account I gave of my government in the *West-Indies*; and the scheme of religious ceremonies I there drew up for the use of the savages. In a word, the highest awe and veneration for the majesty and power of the supreme Being; the utmost gratitude for his favours, and submission to his will; a great integrity, charity and temperance, had form'd the essence of my religion 'till I came to *Saumur*.

The minister's proposal threw me at first into a kind of dilemma; so that I continued silent for some time before I made him any answer. What occasion, says I to myself, is there for me to acquire new lights, which will neither make me wiser, nor add to my tranquility? As I worship the Creator of all things with sincerity, can any thing heighten the love and respect I bear him; and why should I perplex myself with questions which no ways concern me? However, a short reflection I made on the emptiness of philosophy, which I had exclaim'd so much against two days before, made me desirous of hearing the doctor discourse on religious topicks. He appear'd to be a man of good sense; and I therefore imagin'd that he might suggest some new hints, which would perhaps produce the peace of mind I so much panted after, by some method I as yet was a stranger to. I continued silent for some time, to his great surprize; but at last, assur'd him in the politest terms, that I should be always proud to hear whatever he had to offer.

I cannot say, whether the great desire he seemingly had to instruct me, was owing to a zeal for my conversion; or proceeded merely from compassion to see me so prodigiously dejected. The doctor left me, and return'd the same afternoon. He laid down his instructions in a very methodical manner. In his first conversation, he laid before me a general plan of religion, in order, as he said, that I might discover at one glance, the connexion of its several parts. I shall not repeat his words here, because they undoubtedly will not be so new to my readers

as they were then to me ; but I will confess that I was pleased to hear him, and that his system appeared so rational, that I could not but wish it were in his power to support it afterwards by solid proofs. He was overjoy'd to leave me in this frame of mind, and assur'd me that his satisfaction would increase every time he visited me.

I told my sister and Mrs. *Lallin* in the evening, that I had been very well pleased with the minister's conversation ; and had approv'd of his notions in religious matters. My sister, who could not but be very zealous for the protestant interest, as she had been brought up in the colony of *St. Helena*, seem'd vastly pleased at what I told her, which Mrs. *Lallin* was not, she being a *Roman* catholick. But while she was so much mistress of herself, as to discover what pass'd in her mind, only by her silence, she was considering, while my sister and I continued in discourse, what methods she should employ, to prevent the effects of the minister's zeal. She did not know 'till now, that I was unsettled with regard to religion ; and when she and my sister had agreed to endeavour, if possible, to prevail with the clergyman to visit me, her only view in this was to procure a remedy to my sorrows. But finding that she had innocently contributed to give me an opportunity of having an esteem for the protestant religion, and being afraid lest I should embrace the principles of it, she reproach'd herself for it, and thereupon resolved to atone for what she look'd upon as an imprudence of a very guilty nature ; she therefore resolv'd to search for antidotes, to expel the poison she fancied I had drank in, the very next morning, and accordingly going to the fathers of the oratory, she was admitted to the superior whose name was father *le Bane* ; when telling him her scruples and perplexity, she begg'd him to advise her how to act upon this occasion. The father, having heard the whole affair relating to me, was himself enflam'd with zeal ; and did not doubt but he should be able to make a convert of me, when he was told that I had convers'd but twice with the doctor. He acquainted Mrs. *Lallin* with the hopes he entertain'd ; and promis'd to pay me a visit very soon, upon some pretence or other which he'd invent for that purpose.

Accordingly

Accordingly he came to my house, two or three hours before dinner, and enquiring for me, I receiv'd him in a very civil manner. This father had a subtle, and at the same time a winning aspect; his whole air was vastly engaging, and he address'd me in a most agreeable manner. The pretence he employ'd to give a colour to his visit, was indeed something flat and foreign to the purpose; however, as I had not the least suspicion of the design he was come upon, I judg'd his compliment to be sincere; and assur'd him that I was very glad the motives which he told me had prompted him to visit me, gave me an opportunity of being acquainted with him. Never man insinuated himself with greater art and cunning than father *le Bane* did. He in a moment made the discourse turn on religion, and without discovering the least affectation, or enquiring into my principles, he gave me a sketch of the principal tenets of the *Roman* catholick faith, much after the same manner as the minister had done. At first I was so much surpriz'd at the resemblance which methought appear'd between the two doctrines; that having as yet but an imperfect idea of both, I imagin'd the father of the orator was a protestant. I told him, that the night before, most of the principles he had now discover'd to me had been explain'd by Mr. C — the minister; and that being thoroughly satisfied with the two systems which I thought agreed, I only waited for the proofs of them. Gracious heaven! says father *le Bane*; you do me, Sir, the highest injury, to imagine I agree in principles with Mr. C ——— What! forsake truth, to strike into the paths of error? God preserve me from so much wickedness! But heaven has indulged me too much understanding and uprightness, ever to suffer me do that: ——— I was prodigiously affected with this sudden exclamation. Figure to your self, says the father interrupting me, a lawful monarch, for whom his subjects have the highest awe and veneration, establishing such laws as will make them happy; imagine that these are receiv'd and executed for many years, by his parliament and his people, to the real advantage of the whole nation. Whilst blessings thus pour in upon them, there starts up a few obscure persons, from among the dregs of the people;

People; who, prompted either by private resentment, or from a love of novelty; immediately set all their engines at work, to destroy the peace and tranquility of the kingdom; by trampling upon these just and salutary laws. But, as these wicked innovators find it to their advantage to use discretion, in order to encrease their followers; they therefore don't attempt to overthrow all their laws at once, but censure such as they think the most grievous, in hopes of being join'd by all such as are friends to licentiousness and independence. They indeed are so fortunate as to strengthen their party. At last, to give the better colour to their rebellion and insolence, they affect to have the utmost veneration for some of these laws, and to revere them as much as the most faithful subjects. Can you think, says the father after looking upon me a moment or two, that persons of so different a character can agree together? They, never can, says I. Now which of the two parties, continues he, would you look upon as the right; those who are good subjects and firm in their allegiance, or —? This question, says I, is immediately answer'd; those who observe the laws which you suppose just and useful. And how, continued he, would you have the others treated? Methinks, says I, it were but just, and for the good of the publick, that they should be punish'd as rebels and disturbers of the publick peace. You may now, says father *le Bane*, make the application. The good, the old party, are of the church of *Rome*. All particular sects started up since, and the protestants were the last. These are so many rebellious parties, who have attack'd from time to time our most holy laws; and in case they preserv'd any, 'twas only with a view of more surely destroying the rest. We refuse absolutely to agree with them, even in such matters as are common to both. We cut them off from us; and give them up to divine justice, which will punish them with much greater severity, in the day destin'd for vengeance.

I was not sufficiently acquainted with these principles, to hit upon such objections as might puzzle the father; I only observ'd, that in case the comparison he had made were just, the adversaries of the church of *Rome*, were equally guilty of folly and malignity: and indeed, says

says he to me, we don't meet with either solidity or good sense in their writings.

I must own that his discourse, and the confident air with which he spoke, made some impression upon me. Nevertheless, as I was not willing to believe, without knowing why I did so; I gave him to understand, that before I could give my assent, he must be more particular. Upon that he withdrew, very well satisfied with the frame of mind he left me in; and assured me that in two such conversations more, he would bring me over entirely to his opinion.

After the father was gone, I reflected more intensely on what he had told me, than the reader can well imagine, and look'd upon the consequences he drew from his comparisons to be unanswerable. In case, says I, his suppositions are just, 'tis manifest that the church of *Rome* only teaches the truth. He assures me, that all the other sects sprang from her, and have nothing good in them; but what they borrow'd from the mother church. The rest were prompted to a separation, either from a fondness of novelty, or some private resentment. In leaving that church, they renounc'd such of its tenets as were of too severe and burthensome a nature, and invented others which might suit better with their practices; and this they were prompted to, from the same turn of mind, which inclines them to hate those they have rejected. Is it not evident, that this behaviour has all the characteristics of an unjust and criminal rebellion? — Such reflections were far from prejudicing me in favour of the protestant doctor whom I expected that afternoon.

He came; and we had not exchange'd many words, before he found that I was not in so happy a frame of mind, as he had left me in the evening before, which surpriz'd him very much. I did not scruple to relate to him, in very near the same terms, the comparison which father *le Bane* had made. He at first listen'd to me with some confusion, but soon put on a smiling countenance; and upon my asking him, in the same words with father *le Bane*, what he thought of those rebellious subjects I then describ'd to him; he made the same answer to it as I had done. I must confess, that I was prodigiously struck at this unexpected conclusion. But then says I to him

him with great warmth, you either betray your own interest, or else intend to impose upon me by falsehoods, which you know to be such.

Give me leave, says he, also to use a comparison; nay, I'll even employ part of your own. Imagine therefore a king, possess'd of all the good qualities you mention'd; and governing by such prudent and necessary laws as those you spoke of. These subsist some time after his death, and form the happiness of the people who obey them. Then an usurper forces his way to the throne, by fraud and injustice, and finding his tyrannical proceedings condemn'd by the laws in force, he first pretends to explain them; but this he does merely to wrest their sense, and make them subservient to his passions. By insensible degrees he substitutes others in their room. As he has no other view but to maintain himself in his usurpation, he never thinks of the publick good; but daily enacts such laws as may flatter his pride and avarice. In what manner soever he may have disguis'd the old laws, he perceives that they still condemn his proceedings, and reflect a shame on his pernicious enterprizes: upon this, he forbids the reading of them, purposely to keep his people in ignorance.

But by this time, the whole face of the state is chang'd. Ignorance and a depravity of manners gain the ascendant; and a relish for goodness and true felicity, is lost by insensible degrees; so that at last, all things are in confusion. In vain any person, who perceives the unhappiness of his country, presumes to complain; for immediately the usurper employs the extremes of cruelty to keep him silent.

Who but would imagine that the evil was not to be remedied? It nevertheless happens that a small number of his subjects, deeply affected with the publick calamity, undertake to open the eyes of their deluded countrymen, and do it by a short and easy method. These only take out the old laws from their obscurity, and expose them to the publick in their primitive purity; when immediately all hearts are delighted with the hopes that things will return to their former channel. Mankind see plainly how low they are fallen; which makes them
sigh.

figh after their once happy condition. This alarms the usurper, who immediately displays his dreadful vengeance. But tho' he still obliges a great number of slaves, by violence and wicked arts, to submit to the yoke; he yet cannot prevent those who suffer'd under his tyranny from breaking their chains; and tasting the sweets which those laws, they ought never to have departed from, dispense. What think you now, continues the minister, of those persons who had the courage to shake off his tyrannical yoke? — They certainly, says I, have done their duty, and acted a very wise part. The application, says he, is very easy; and he immediately made it to the advantage of the protestant church.

I must confess that I was now in great perplexity and doubt; however, after a moment's reflection or two, I answer'd him as follows. 'Tis plain, says I, according to your suppositions, that justice and truth are for your church; but then you must confess, that the opposite consequence follows as clearly from the principles of your adversary. In case you can prove, that the *Roman* pontiff is an usurper, and that the catholick doctrines have been adulterated; I can't then see how it would be possible for any one to refuse declaring for you; but then I shall think the same justice is due to the catholicks, in case they prove to me, that you are to be accus'd as innovators. The only difficulty then is, to exhibit your proofs so clearly, that it will be impossible for me not to be convinc'd by what you advance. At present I have not a liberty or tranquillity of mind, requisite for hearing you in the manner I ought to do. — The doctor was not offended at my answer; and assur'd me, that as nothing could possibly be clearer and more decisive, than the proofs he had to produce, I could not refuse hearing what he had to say, without discovering a criminal indifference for my salvation. All you have in reality to do, says he, is only to make use of your eyes. I'll open the gospel, and you shall read in it; these are the only weapons I intend to employ. You there will have a clear view of our own triumphs, and the confusion of our enemies. — I at last acquiesc'd with his urgent intreaties; and we agreed upon the

hours.

hours which should be spent in perusing the scriptures.

Father *le Bane* did not fail of returning the next day, I told him, that as there were not yet any solid motives, which could prompt me to declare on his side, preferable to that of his adversary ; I was resolv'd to hear the doctor first, and upon no other account, but because he had first spoke to me of religion. I therefore, father says I, must desire you'd give me leave to hear what he has to offer, and not trouble me with your objections ; for these would make me less attentive than I ought to be to the strength of your proofs. However, the moment he has laid down all he has to say ; I then will hear, with pleasure, all you shall please to inform me of. — The father was not satisfied with this resolution. Be upon your guard, says he, the poison of error is vastly subtle ; 'twill draw you away. I declar'd that his suspicions gave me offence ; and that I should take it as a favour, if he would slacken in his zeal, of which he had given me some unpleasing marks. Upon my saying this, he left the room very much disgusted. 'Twas undoubtedly on this occasion he machinated a design which was put in execution four days after, a design which brought me into so much trouble, as was sufficient to outweigh my other sorrows, had it been possible for them to be alleviated.

I saw the doctor for three days together, at certain stated hours. The fourth, at about six in the evening, I was told that an officer belonging to the intendant of the province was very urgent to speak with me. I bid the servant show him up ; when coming in, he presented me with a *lettre de cachet*, (the king's command with his signet) by which my self and my family were order'd to be seiz'd, and afterwards to be carried to *Angers*. Me ! says I, with astonishment. Alas ; how comes his majesty to grant such an order upon my account ? How does he even know that I am in his dominions ? Sir, says he, the king knows every thing that passes in *France* ; and I must tell you, that his majesty's commands must be instantly complied with. He then told me, that I must leave the city that night ; and for that purpose he had brought two coaches, for me and
my

my family. I could not forbear murmuring, as I prepar'd for my departure; but ask'd him, whether there was any likelihood of my being immediately set at liberty. He answer'd, that this was very uncertain; and that I had best order my affairs in such a manner, as tho' I never expected it. I understood the meaning of these words. I thereupon settled matters as well as so short a warning would permit me to do; and leaving *Dring* to finish those things which requir'd the presence of some one of my family or friends, I set out for *Angers* with the two ladies, our children, and servants.

This mysterious journey could not but give me a great deal of uneasiness; and I tortur'd my imagination, but in vain, to find out some reasonable cause to which I might ascribe it. I had not acted any thing criminal, either against the king or his government: *England* was at peace with *France*; and I had not liv'd in such a manner at *Saumur*, as should bring me under the least suspicion. Nevertheless Mrs. *Lallin*, who cou'dn't but be better acquainted with the genius and customs of her own country than my self, imagin'd, that my solitary disposition, and the gloomy aspect I wore, had made me suspected. Beassur'd, says she, that as you had not any manner of acquaintance, you were taken for a spy. — The coachman drove very fast; so that as *Angers* is but thirty two miles from *Saumur*, we got there before day-break. I expected, in order to have this scene conclude as it had begun, that we should immediately be closely confin'd. However, we stopt at a fine house; when immediately several footmen with lights in their hands, conducted us into an apartment very well furnish'd. We had not been long there before some refreshments were brought us; and as our affliction would not suffer us to sit long at table, notice was given us, as the cloth was taking away, that his *lordship* would be there presently.

Tho' I could not comprehend who it was they figur'd under this title, I yet had not the curiosity to enquire who they meant. A moment after, we saw a door open, when two men dress'd in white, and whom I at first suppos'd to be in their shirts, advanced towards us with wax tapers in their hands. These lighted a third person, who walked after them with gravity, and whose whole
dress

dress appear'd to me very extraordinary. He was tall, cloath'd in a purple cloth gown, which descended to his feet, and trail'd after him a considerable length. A golden cross, about the length of one's finger, hung down his bosom. He had a black cap on his head, which was square at bottom, though the top was in a triangular form. In a word, his whole dress was altogether new to me, when Mrs. *Lallin* came up and whisper'd me in the ear, that she believ'd he was a bishop. We rose up at his coming in; he saluted us very civilly; but without speaking; and kneeling down, he bid us do the same, by a sign he made. He then repeated a short prayer in *Latin*, after which, he rose up and seated himself in an easy chair; making signs to us, in a very polite manner, to sit down in our places.

I was impatient to know how this comedy would end; but at last he open'd his mouth, and directing himself to me, said, that it was proper so important a design as that we were upon, should begin by prayer. That as his majesty had order'd him to instruct me and my family, he was sincerely desirous of seconding the view of so pious a monarch. That he congratulated me on the resolution I had form'd, to apply my self seriously to religion, and to attend to the welfare of my soul: but that I was bound to thank heaven for prompting his majesty to preserve me from the danger, to which I had inconsiderately expos'd my self at *Saumur*. That in delivering my self up to Mr. C——, the minister, who was the most dangerous heretick in the whole kingdom, I had been upon the very brink of destruction. That the utmost pains would be taken to instruct me and my children, peaceably, in the truth at *Angers*. In fine, he assur'd me, they would behave with so much tenderness and lenity towards me, that I should have the highest reason to be pleas'd with my self, for having chosen *France* to reside in.

These words were so plain, that I could not but understand the drift of them. I had moreover been told, that the popish clergy in *France* wish'd for nothing so earnestly as the destruction of the protestants; and did all that lay in their power to gain proselytes. My genius and

and turn of mind were such, that force and violence could never have brought me to the truth; and this I immediately hinted to the gentleman. I suppose, sir, says I, that you are the bishop of this diocese, and that I am now in your palace; I don't know whether you intend to keep me here by force, but I'll be so plain as to assure your lordship, that if I am detain'd here, 'twill be against my inclination: I was born free. Tho' I chose to reside in *France* for some years; there yet are no ties which engage me to consider my self as his most Christian majesty's subject; I therefore expect that he'll be so just, as to suffer me to enjoy my liberty; at least so long as I shall not commit any thing which may offend him. In case this favour is denied me, I am ready to leave the kingdom, and to return to my native country. I spoke these words in a civil, but resolute tone of voice, at which the bishop seem'd a little puzzled. However, he continu'd to assure me in very polite terms, that his majesty did not intend to make use of the least constraint; that he himself would shew me the most candid usage; a circumstance I might be persuaded of, from the handsome reception I met with in his house, and the pains he had already taken, to instruct me, that the rest of his conduct would correspond with the beginning; that he knew I was of such a rank, as merited the kindest treatment from his hands; that he was going to conduct me to an apartment, which I might look upon as my own; that I undoubtedly wanted to take a little rest after the fatigue of my journey; that all imaginable care should be taken of my children; and to conclude, that I might entirely rely on his good offices, and rest assur'd, that his whole family would shew me the utmost regard.

Upon this I withdrew, in order to take a little sleep. The bishop went away, and said, that he promis'd himself the greatest satisfaction in discoursing with me the next day; and, at the same time, allow'd my own servants to wait upon me. I was resolv'd, at my going to bed, not to continue long in this palace, presuming that I should not be detain'd against my will. My *valet de chambre* awaking me the next morning, according to my orders, I bid him immediately enquire how the ladies and the children

dren had slept. He staid only a moment, but brought me the most melancholy news. He told me, that being shewn up to the ladies apartment, he found them asleep, and therefore did not dare to awake them; that after this, he had desir'd one of the bishop's servants to carry me to the children's apartment, but was told they were not in the house. I was very earnest with him, continu'd my *valet de chambre*, to know whither they were gone, but he assur'd me he cou'dn't tell; however, says he, where-soever they are, depend on't they're in good hands.

These words troubled me very much, upon which I got drest instantly; and sent to the bishop, desiring to speak with him a moment. His lordship had the civility to visit me in my apartment, when I told him my fears, which he confest were just. Your children, says he, have been carried, by the king's order, to a place where they'll be well educated. Your two sons are sent to a college, and your niece to a monastery; but then you have certainly too much sense to complain, since all this had been done for their good. How! says I, my children carried off without my knowledge or consent, and this by the king's order! The bishop was going to enter into a long detail, in justification of the court; but I interrupted him with warmth, and ask'd him, whether I must look upon myself as a prisoner in his palace. He answer'd, that I was not, and that no attempts should be made to keep me in it against my will; we only desire, says he, that the handsome usage you shall meet with, may prevail with you to stay. You seem'd desirous of being instructed in religion; and therefore we intend to do you a piece of service, which surely claims some thanks. Truly, says I, my lord, all these proceedings quite confound me. I admire your zeal; but am no less surpriz'd at the manner in which you exercise it: Had you, at least, but consulted me — But no, says I, there is nothing I abhor so much as violence. Restore me only my children; and then I protest to you, that I'll not only leave your palace, but the kingdom, to which I am no ways bound. The prelate upon this, assum'd a graver tone; and told me that it was not in his power to do this, since the king had order'd that they should be educated in the catholic faith. This refusal exasperated me to such a degree, that I was resolv'd to leave the
bishop's

bishop's house that instant. Adieu, my lord, says I, I shall leave your palace, since I am allow'd to do it. I value not what religion my children are brought up in, since they may chuse for themselves, when once they are come to years of maturity: but what shocks me prodigiously, is, to see us used like slaves in a country, where no one ought to have the least authority over us. Saying this, I left the palace in spite of all the arguments the bishop could employ to detain me.

I now went to an inn, and sent a message to my sister and Mrs. *Lallin*, to acquaint them that I was there. 'Twas with some difficulty that the bishop let them go; however, finding them resolute, he at last dismiss'd them, sending, at the same time, his *gentleman* to attend upon them; who brought me an invitation from his lordship to dine with him at his palace; but I was too much perplex'd with thinking of the resolution, it wou'd be proper for me to take on so important an occasion, to accept of it. I therefore consulted with the two ladies, and being unacquainted with the laws and customs of *France*, I attended particularly to Mrs. *Lallin's* advice. Her opinion was, that I should ride post for *Versailles*; and there throwing myself at the King's feet, sue to him for justice; a hint which I very much approv'd of. As the news of what had happen'd to me was spread all over the city, some *English* gentlemen who were there having the curiosity to see me, came now to pay me their compliments, just as I was getting a horseback. I receiv'd them very civilly, and told them in few words, the design I was going upon, when they inform'd me that I might visit the lord *Clarendon* in my way, who had been some weeks in *Orleans*. This nobleman, whose name I shall never pronounce but with the highest reverence and respect, had been so unhappy as to fall under king *Charles's* displeasure; after having serv'd him very faithfully for several years. He was retir'd into *France*, but before he settled himself in it, he visited the several provinces out of curiosity. I had heard so great a character of his lordship's genius and worth, that I had a desire to be acquainted with him; not to mention, that as I was unknown to the whole *French* court, I flatter'd myself that he'd be so generous as to do me some service. I got to *Orleans*, which was not out of my way,

in

in two days. Altho' the gloomy disposition of my mind, would not permit me to think of any thing like pomp; I nevertheless took Mrs. *Lallin's* advice, who thought it would be necessary for me to appear at court with some distinction. I had set out with four servants; and stopping at *Orleans*. I order'd one of them to go immediately for *Paris*, and prepare an equipage for me.

I alighted at the very same inn, in which the lord *Clarendon* lodg'd; when, a little after, I sent a message, by which I desir'd he would give me leave to pay my respects to him. His lordship accordingly receiv'd me in the noble manner which was natural to him; and I soon insinuated myself so far into his esteem, that he offer'd to do me all the service that lay in his power. As he had known the lord *Axminster*, I acquainted him with part of his story and my own, which immediately gain'd me his favour. His lordship seem'd to be strongly affected with my misfortunes; and I may look upon this first interview, as the foundation of the tender friendship he has since always indulg'd me. If we did not, the very first day of our meeting, arrive at the highest pitch of mutual confidence, this was not so much owing to a want of esteem and reciprocal inclination; as the effect of a just prudence, which forbids a man to reveal his whole soul at once.

His lordship gave me two hints, which shew'd how much his generosity had already prejudic'd him in my favour. The first related to the business upon which I was going to *Versailles*. He advis'd me to wait upon the Dutches of *Orleans*, King *Charles's* sister, before I address'd his most Christian majesty. This princess, says he, is goodness itself; her highness will do her utmost to serve you; and you need no other recommendation, but your being an *Englishman*. He added, that he flatter'd himself with being so much in her grace's favour, that a letter from him would not, perhaps, be of disservice to me; however, that as he was so lately fallen under his majesty's displeasure, he did not think it proper to take that liberty yet. Your father's memory, says he to me, is so detested by all good people; that it cannot be for your advantage to pass for his son either in *France* or *England*, so that I'd advise
you

you to change your name. The honour of being viscount *Axminster's* son-in-law, will procure you respect wherever you go. To corroborate what he said, he gave me an account of the punishment which had been inflicted on the regicides in *England*; and with what ignominy my father's body had been treated. I thank'd him for this double advice, and promised to follow it. So that during my twenty four hours stay, in *Orleans*, I obtain'd a blessing which merits the search of ages; I mean a virtuous and faithful friend. He told me, upon my taking leave, that after having travell'd some months in *France*, he intended to withdraw to *Roan*, and there spend his days; and that I might always hear of him in the abovemention'd city.

I again set out post, and being alone, my sad heart disburthen'd itself a little by a deep sigh. Gracious heavens! says I; can I ever more hope for any return of pleasure and tranquillity? After having lost all I held dear, which was ravish'd from me by death and infidelity; wilt thou still be so indulgent as to reserve me so sweet a consolation as that of friendship? Thus I spent part of my journey, in examining whether my heart was susceptible of any sensation but grief; and found that 'twas equally impossible I should cease to be tender and unfortunate.

At my arrival in *Paris*, I found an apartment had been hir'd, and an equipage bought for me; upon which I set out without loss of time for *St. Cloud*, where I was inform'd the dutchess of *Orleans* generally resided. This excellent Princess being of so easy access, I was soon permitted to see her; and thereupon acquainted her with the occasion of my journey, and how much I stood in need of her protection. Her highness indulg'd it me at once; and as she was to go that evening to *Versailles*, I begg'd leave to follow her; and likewise that she would please to instruct me how I was to act. You shall come and see me to-morrow, says she, in my apartment at court; and then we'll take such measures as may be necessary. Hearing this I took my leave, and went for *Versailles*, flush'd with the greatest hopes.

The *French* court was at that time so croud'd and magnificent, that it was a difficult matter to find an apartment fit for me in *Versailles*. The king had just concluded a
glorious

glorious peace with *Spain*, by the treaty of *Aix-la-Chapelle*; and as he liv'd in perfect good harmony with all his neighbours; so general a tranquillity had invited a great number of foreigners; who came to be eye-witnesses of all the wonders which were publish'd of that great monarch. The ceremony of the dauphin's christening, which was soon to be solemniz'd at *St. Germain's in Laye*; and for which splendid preparations were making, drew thither all the nobility of the kingdom, who never fail, on these occasions, to contribute all they can to heighten the splendor of the crown. Nothing was therefore seen but magnificence in dress; and pompous equipages; and, if we were to judge by outward appearance, the king of *France* was at the highest point of glory, to which ambition can aspire. The court was so crouded, that the day after my arrival I could scarce make my way through the several apartments of the palace. However, being at last come to that of the Dutchess of *Orleans*, I there met one of her officers, who had seen me the night before at *St. Cloud*. The gentleman went into her highness, and told her that I begg'd leave to speak to her, upon which I was immediately order'd to walk into her closet ——— Things, Sir, says she, turn very much in your favour; his majesty, who generally visits me in the afternoon, has sent word that he'll be here this morning; and therefore, pray repeat the particulars you spoke last night, in order that they may be the more present to my memory when his majesty comes. I then gave her highness an account of every thing that had past in *Saumur* and *Angers*, as I had done before. As it was impossible for me to do this, without giving her some little idea of the gloomy disposition of my mind, she had the curiosity to enquire into the cause of it. I satisfied her highness by letting her in to part of my story, and did not so much as conceal my wife's infidelity. The great attention with which she listened, shew'd that she was pleased with my relation. But after I had done speaking, I was prodigiously surpriz'd at her answer. I believe, sir, says she, I know your lady ——— I am, says she, after reflecting a moment, vastly mistaken if I don't.

My wife! alas! madam, 'tis impossible that perfidious creature should have had the confidence to approach your
 VOL. II. H highness.

highness. She's far from being of a bold and assuming character: would to heavens she were not base and inconstant! She must have laid aside all pretensions to modesty, before she could have presum'd to appear before your highness; immers'd, as she is, in crimes of the blackest dye. You may be persuaded, says the princess interrupting me, that she never reveal'd them to me; but I'm firmly persuaded 'tis she herself. About six weeks hence, this very lady address'd me, merely as an *English* gentlewoman who stood in need of my protection. She was introduc'd to me, and I must confess that her person prejudiced me greatly in her favour. I enquir'd her name, and what service I could do her; upon which she desir'd me not to insist upon her answering the first question; but after having acquainted me; (the tears streaming from her eyes as she spoke) that she came from the *West-Indies*, and that her sufferings were inexpressible, she begg'd me to procure her some asylum, in which she might spend the remainder of her days. I was so pleas'd with her, that had she disclosed all her affairs to me, I should certainly have taken her into my household; but she persisted in refusing to gratify me in this particular, and only begg'd me to procure her some place where she might live in peace. Finding this, I advis'd her to retire into the monastery of *Chaillot*; and upon her agreeing to it, I sent a gentleman of my household to conduct her thither, and recommend her to the abbess in my name.—— When I compare what you have now told me, with the few particulars she gave me an idea of, I don't doubt but she is your lady; ar'n't you therefore desirous of seeing her?

See her! says I with a deep sigh, alas I ought rather to shun, and endeavour to forget her eternally. However, madam, I am infinitely oblig'd to your highness for being so indulgent. Your goodness has fix'd her in a place, where I now need not fear, that she'll ever dishonour me more. Faithless creature! This then is the fruit she reaps from all her crimes! She, no doubt, intends to spend the rest of her days in bewailing her lover!—— I pity you both, says the princess; for, to be plain with you, I cannot advise you to see her again; and nevertheless, compassion inclines me to wish her as well as I do you. As her highness had done speaking, word was brought that

his

his majesty was coming in, upon which she desir'd me to withdraw and wait a little. I obey'd and walk'd about the anti-chamber, revolving my usual melancholy ideas, which now presented themselves more strongly to my imagination, than they had before done for some time. I now was fully persuaded, that my wife was really in *Chaillot*. Altho' 'twas some little consolation for me, to hear that she was now in a place where it would be impossible for her to indulge in such passions, as are of a criminal nature; I yet felt the same violent emotions, as when I first heard of her infidelity. The circumstance which tormented me most, was my inability to discover how I was inclin'd with regard to that faithless creature; and whether love had any share in my agitations. This I examin'd very sincerely, having no design to impose upon myself; and I had so much strength of mind as to give this testimony of my own disposition, *viz.* that in what frame soever my mind might be, I was sure I should never desire to see her. Me! says I, see an infamous woman who has brought me to shame; a perfidious creature who has violated all her engagements; a cruel wretch, who has stabb'd my heart? I see a base jilt, a hypocrite, who impos'd upon me for several years together, by a spacious outside of virtue and honour; and who certainly laugh'd in herself, to find me so stupidly fond and credulous? No! I'll never see her more. But why does her bare remembrance excite such emotions in my heart? Whence do those tears proceed which are now ready to flow, and the Despair which preys incessantly on my heart? Did I not wish for death, to put a period to all my evils? And even now that my reason seems to have recover'd its former seat, should I not tear my hair, and vent the most mournful cries, were I to yield to the furious transports, which still rack my imagination?

So great was the chaos of confus'd and involuntary emotions that I could not pierce thro' it; and I incessantly groan'd and tortur'd my self, without being able to make the least distinct reflection on the cause of my agonies. But in the midst of this distraction of mind, a page came to me from the princess, and desir'd me to walk into the closet. Sorrow was so strongly painted on my countenance, that her highness hinted it to the king; Your ma-

jeſty, ſays ſhe, ſees him before you; the bare ſight of him melts my heart; I don't think that ever man was ſo unfortunate. His majeſty then was pleas'd to ſpeak to me in the moſt gracious words, and afterwards turning about to the princeſs; Madam, ſays his majeſty, with regard to what happen'd at *Angers*, I have already told you that 'twas done without my knowledge. I leave all religious matters to the council of conſcience, tho' I am perſuaded they ſometimes abuſe my authority: but I never intended, that ſuch foreigners as came into my dominions ſhould be troubled upon any account; and therefore thoſe who committed this act of injuſtice, ſhall certainly be call'd to account for it. As her highneſs knew, that ſuch general promiſes as theſe as are ſoon forgot, and being deſirous that this ſhould not; ſhe answer'd in the moſt agreeable manner, that I did not deſire any perſon ſhould be puniſh'd upon my account; all I begg'd, was, to be allow'd to ſee my children as ſoon as poſſible. The king underſtood her meaning, and thereupon ordering an Exon of the guards to be brought in, he immediately commanded him to go to Mr. *de Louvois*, with the orders I ſo earneſtly wiſh'd for. Upon this I withdrew with the Exon; her highneſs, at the ſame time, deſiring me not to be out of the way; for I muſt, ſays ſhe, ſee you again very ſoon.

I waited in the antichamber, 'till his majeſty was withdrawn; and heard the company ſpeak variously, about his viſiting the princeſs ſo conſtantly, both at *Versailles* and *St. Cloud*. Tho' I did not mix among the courtiers, to whom I was wholly unknown; I nevertheless gather'd the ſenſe of a great part of their diſcourſe, as I walk'd up and down alone among them. Some fancied that the king was in love with the princeſs; others imagin'd that their interviews were altogether political; and foretold very exactly the treaty which was concluded a little after, between *France* and *England*, againſt *Holland*; but I did not find that any one gueſs'd the real motive of the king's viſits, as it afterwards appear'd; I mean the ſecret inclination he had for one of her highneſs's maids of honour. His majeſty never came once into the apartment, without finding ſome opportunity of diſcourſing a moment or two with that young lady. I ſaw her among the reſt of
the

the maids of honour, and tho' her person did not seem to be very engaging, and that no one knew the king had a particular inclination for her; I nevertheless fancied, by some glances shot from his majesty's eyes, as he left the closet, that he did not look upon her with indifference. The king's eyes must necessarily have been vastly expressive, to make me observe this circumstance, as I had never seen him before.

The princess having sent for me as soon as the company were withdrawn, I return'd into the closet. You have the greatest reason, says she, to be satisfied with the king's goodness; for, as he has given such strict orders, your affair will soon be done; but I am curious to know how you intend to behave with regard to your own lady. I answer'd, that I believ'd the only thing proper would be, to let her continue in the convent which her highness had been pleas'd to place her in.— Why so, says the princess? she's a most agreeable woman; you are young; men of your age can't do very well without a wife, and therefore I advise you to be reconcil'd to her. Are we not to indulge a pardon to such persons as we once lov'd with a most tender passion, especially when they discover a real repentance of their faults? Besides, I find by what you have told me, that *France* was not the scene of her unhappy conduct; and you may depend upon my secrecy. Thus, you see, your honour will not be expos'd in any manner, and that you may live as happily with her as ever.

These arguments, which were rather human, than just and rational, made a strong impression on me; and thereupon I continu'd for a few moments, uncertain what answer to make. Her highness being urgent with me to speak, Madam, says I, at last, I must confess that your highness's advice has clear'd up a doubt, which I really imagin'd it would be impossible for me to get over easily. I could not tell whether I still had some tenderness left for that faithless woman; but I now find, by the fondness with which I listen to your highness's advice, that 'twou'd be in vain for me to imagine I had completely triumph'd over love: however, it will be hardly possible for me to forget my wife's guilt. When I first gave way to the fond passion I had for her, I resolv'd to love with reason;

and hop'd to make myself happy by the only two methods I suppos'd capable of rendering me so; I mean love and wisdom. I had for many years been so blind, as to persuade myself I had succeeded in this particular; or, at least, that the only thing wanting to complete my happiness, was, a handsome competency, which I had some reason to hope would one day be indulg'd me. Nevertheless, I was betray'd by a perfidious woman, who undoubtedly never was sincere in her love; since she was so base as to abandon me, and in one day sap the two foundations of my happiness. Your highness, says I, may possibly be in the dark as to the meaning of these words; but I must do myself the honour to lay open my whole soul to you, in order to render myself worthy of the regard and concern, which you are pleas'd to discover for my welfare.

I then gave her highness an exact account of the manner of my education, and the principles by which I had always squar'd my conduct. I did not so much as conceal either my name or my birth; and at the same time told her the advice which the lord *Clarendon* had given me; and assur'd her highness that my story should have been conceal'd to all but herself. At last, after having given her a genuine account of whatever had befallen me; of my wife's infidelity, and the sad circumstances which had attended upon it; I concluded with relating my adventures in *St. Helena*, *Corunna* and *Saumur*. Such, madam, says I, is the abyss into which my wife has plung'd me. She has not only robb'd me of the felicity which arose from her love; but likewise made me lose the happiness which I imagin'd was so strongly founded, I mean, on wisdom. I had hitherto consider'd my philosophy, whether it were real or delusive, as a source of light and strength; but since the misfortune which oppress'd me, I find her to be nothing less than what I had imagin'd. Suppose she had been only a shadowy and fictitious being, she yet had the power to calm my soul, and administer'd comfort, when the evils were not beyond her reach; but since I have lost that which was to make me compleatly happy, in conjunction with wisdom, the dictates of philosophy are now of no effect. Thus my natural affections and understanding partake equally of my misfortunes. The former thereby
lose

lose all their delights, and the latter its strength and support. This fill'd me with despair, and I wish'd to die ; and now, madam, would you advise me to be reconcil'd to the person who has been the cause of all my calamities ?

The princess looking upon me with astonishment, I said to her ; Madam, I believe you find something very singular in my sentiments, and the turn of my expressions ; and 'tis this, or I am very much mistaken, occasions the surprize, which methinks I discover in your highness's eyes. To speak the truth, says she, you appear to me a very extraordinary person ; and I must confess that what I have now heard, is wholly new to me. However, since you govern your self by such wise principles, (and how few do so !) I shall value you much more upon that account. The older I grow, and the more experience I gain, the more I find mankind in general to be false and criminal. I am resolv'd to make your moral system familiar to me ; and assure you, that I shall be glad to have such a monster as you often in my company. But, by the way, I think you don't argue justly. Because your lady has depriv'd you of all the soft sensations of love, and made philosophy of no use to you ? you thence conclude, that she does not deserve ever to be seen any more by you : now I, on the contrary, am of opinion, that you ought, for your own sake, to be reconcil'd to her as soon as possible ; in order to enjoy again those pleasures which love and philosophy dispense. Alas ! madam, says I to her, what pleasures can I expect from love, after the false creature has us'd me so barbarously ? Your highness thinks that I may again be captivated by those charms which once had so fatal an ascendant over my heart ; such as her lovely eyes, her fine shape, and the several graces which shone throughout her whole person ? These, indeed, fir'd my soul ; but your highness may be assur'd, that I should only have admir'd, had I not fancied they were heighten'd by other things, which were much more worthy of inspiring love. That rectitude of soul, that modesty, sweetness, and an hundred other beautiful qualities which I fancied I had discover'd in her mind, either never existed at all, or are quite extinct. But, supposing honour were quite out of the case ; what should

I now do with her? I should continually exclaim against her inconstancy and baseness; and all my glances would dart complaints or reproaches: my very silence would be a strong censure; and tho' I could be so much master of my temper, as to assume a calm, unruffled countenance; would this either make me happier, or the less guilty? — But you own, says the princess interrupting me, that you still have some love for her. Love heals wounds of every kind, and throws a veil over all faults. — I will confess, says I, that I still love her; but then I am persuaded 'tis a weakness. You'll never get the better of it, replied the princess, smiling; and since it will one day gain the ascendant, you had better let my intreaties serve you as a pretext, since by that means you'll secure your own honour and that of philosophy?

This conversation, which was spun out to a much greater length, was attended with very happy consequences; for it inspir'd the princess with so much affection for me and my family, and so great concern for my interest; that it prompted her to act the part of a mother to my children, and to be my protectress in a court where I was wholly a stranger. She was pleased to desire me to hire a house in her neighbourhood at *St. Cloud*, in order that I might visit her often; and accordingly I hir'd one which was very agreeable and commodious, before I return'd to *Anjou*; and order'd some of my people to furnish it during my absence. Upon this, setting out, I pass'd thro' *Orleans* in my way to *Angers*, but did not meet with the lord *Clarendon* in that city, he being gone for *Poitiers* three or four days before. Being got to my journey's end, I went immediately to Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister; and found that the king's orders were not only arriv'd, but put in execution; my two sons and my niece *Bridge* being in the house with them. The ladies assur'd me, that the bishop had shewn them the kindest treatment during my absence, for which reason I thought it my duty to return him thanks. I don't know he came to hear, of the powerful protection I had already gain'd at court; but though he had treated me with the utmost civility in his palace; I observ'd something in his carriage and his offers of service, still more obliging than what he had before indulg'd me,
which

which I ascrib'd to the news he had heard from *Verfailles*. I could not, however, forbear taking notice, with a pleasant air, that his majesty did not approve of violent proceedings. The bishop took my meaning ; and to justify his conduct, related the following particulars. Father *le Bane*, says he, superior of the oratory, told the intendant, by letter, that he knew a foreigner lately settled in *Saumur*, who seem'd desirous of instructing himself in religious matters, but was unhappily fallen into the hands of Mr. C ——— the huguenot minister ; and therefore, in all probability, not only himself, but his whole family, would soon be infected with heresy. The intendant, upon his receiving this letter, transmitted it immediately to me ; and I will own to you, says the bishop, that the great concern I have for your eternal welfare, prompted me to get you secur'd and brought into this city ; and upon hearing that you was a person of distinction, I offer'd to take you into my own house, and to instruct you my self. Perhaps the intendant may have been a little too officious ; but these gentlemen will be obey'd, in the several provinces, with an almost absolute authority. They have a great many blank *lettres de cachet*, which they fill up whenever they please ; so that their whole proceedings seem to be by the king's orders. I appear'd well satisfied with this justification, which threw the whole blame on the intendant.

I now thought of removing to *St. Claud* with my whole family and furniture. Shall I be so weak as to make the following confession ? Notwithstanding I was so highly exasperated against my wife, 'twas some pleasure to me to think that I should now be near her, *Chaillot* not being above three miles from *St. Cloud* ; and though I endeavour'd to banish this idea, as arguing the greatest weakness ; it yet was continually present to my imagination throughout the whole journey. The tumults of my soul were so visible in my countenance, that the two ladies told me every day they were surpriz'd, time had so little effect upon my sorrows. Being now arriv'd at my house, which had been completely furnish'd, Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister were very well pleas'd with it. There was a large garden belonging to it, a little grove, and every thing that can form an agree-

able solitude. The next day I waited upon the princess to pay her my respects, and acquaint her with the arrival of my family. Her highness did not wait for my desiring the liberty to present my children to her, but prevented me by saying; I desire you to bring them this evening; for I would have them know the way to my palace as soon as possible. After having thank'd her highness in the best manner I was able, for her uncommon goodness; I mention'd my sister to her, who spoke our tongue so well, that she might very easily pass for a native of *England*; which I had no sooner done, but this excellent princess bid me bring her also. I was afraid that Mrs. *Lallin* would be very uneasy, should any endeavours be us'd to make her more known than she desir'd to be; and indeed the melancholy scenes of life she had pass'd thro', made her justly fond of retirement; I my self had applauded her resolution in this respect, for which reason I never once mention'd her to the princess.

As I was leaving the palace, I saw a splendid coach coming into the court, and enquiring whom it belong'd to, was told the lord *Terwill*. Tho' I was not personally acquainted with that nobleman, I remember'd he had been viscount *Axminster's* old friend; and that the latter had made over part of his estate to him. I at first was resolv'd to speak to him; but a reflection which my own unhappy fate suggested, and that of his noble friend's unhappy daughter, prevail'd with me to go away, without speaking to him. I consider'd, that it would be improper to acquaint him so soon with my affairs; and the fear I was under lest her highness should let slip any particulars relating to me, in discoursing with him, made me return to my apartment, and beseech her not to tell his lordship who I was. My meeting him, increas'd my sorrow to such a degree, that I was almost beside my self as I was returning home. Heavens! says I, what ignominy is reflected on viscount *Axminster's* memory! How will it be possible for me to see any of his friends, without mentioning his daughter, and consequently without revealing both her father's shame and mine? How can I be able to conceal, what must be so strongly impress'd on my countenance, though it were possible

possible for me to disguise it in my discourse. Alas! the lord *Terwill* was formerly an eye-witness to lady *Axminster*'s misfortunes, and he now must hear of her daughter's infamy! It will not only come to his knowledge, but that of all *England*. Thus will relentless fate persecute the unhappy viscount *Axminster*, even after death: He hardly enjoy'd a moment's ease or satisfaction in his life time, and now he will be dishonour'd in his grave. Indeed, I could not see how it would be possible for me to avoid acquainting lord *Terwill* with my wife's wretched story, in case I declar'd my self to be viscount *Axminster*'s son-in-law; and yet I could not dispense with doing this for my children's sake, who otherwise would be depriv'd of part of their grandfather's estate. To confess the truth, the principal motive which engag'd me to settle for some time in *France*, since my landing at *Nantz*, was, the hopes I entertain'd, that the sad story of my misfortunes would be forgot before I went for *England*. 'Twas for this reason that I dismiss'd my sailors, and such persons about me whose discretion I was a little suspicious of; being resolv'd not to have any one follow me to *England*, who had it in his power to disclose such circumstances as I desir'd to bury in eternal silence. However, I had not call'd to mind, that as lord *Terwill* must be in years, I should run the hazard of depriving my children of part of their inheritance; in case I should delay any longer to make them known to him. Neither had I consider'd also, that it would perhaps be a difficult matter for me to prove the just right they had to it, by virtue of their birth, and the viscount's last will. 'Tis true indeed, that when he was upon his death-bed at *Penfecola*, he had recogniz'd me as his son-in-law and heir, by a note sign'd by himself; but 'tis well known, that when an instrument is not executed in a legal manner, it may be eluded; and tho' I had no reason to doubt of the lord *Terwill*'s integrity, I naturally concluded that he would desire some stronger testimony, than a bare signature, and the word of a person who was unknown to him. My wife's presence alone would, at once, remove all these difficulties; and what pretext could I invent, to disguise the real cause of her absence?

As these reflections only heighten'd my perplexity and sorrow, I resolv'd to acquaint her highness with them that evening ; and by that means engage her farther in mine and my family's interest ; accordingly I waited upon the princess at the hour appointed, and had the honour to present my sister and our children to her ; and she receiv'd them with that goodness and affability, which made her the delight of the *French* court. My niece was a very amiable child, and not above twelve or thirteen years of age. The princess indulg'd her the highest marks of her favour, and promised she should be of her household, when she was fifteen years of age. The conversation turn'd for some time on generals, when I at last took notice of my meeting the lord *Terwill* in the morning as I was coming out of the palace. I afterwards told her highness the confusion this had thrown me into, and how perplex'd I was at the thoughts of my being obliged to discover myself to him, for the sake of my children. The princess judg'd what it was that gave me pain, without my explaining myself very far. I suppos'd, says she, by your so earnestly desiring me not to name you to him, that there was something between you. However, I know him to be a man of honour ; and you may be persuaded that he will not make an ill use of the confidence which viscount *Axminster* had in his friendship. He'll make but a very short stay in *France*, and is come purely upon my affairs. Tho' I have no authority over his lordship, you may depend that he'll soon, at my request, give up whatever belongs to your children. You have no occasion to speak to him upon that account, for I am sure he'll do it at once at my bare request. Was not this, says she, what you desire, and what you possibly were afraid of asking me ? I answer'd her highness, that 'twas much more than I desir'd ; and that I could not have expected all this from so great a princess, had I not known her to be goodness itself ; but won't, says I, with submission to your highness, his lordship think it a little strange, to be asked to give up what he has in his hands, without knowing to whom ? I observ'd farther, that I could prevail so far upon my self as to tell my lord who I am ; that I should even think myself oblig'd to pay my acknowledgments

knowledgments to him ; that therefore the only difficulty was, how I should conceal my wife's irregular conduct from him, which I look'd upon as impossible in case she must be discover'd to him, and at the same time know that we don't live together. I take you, says her highness ; but the difficulty is not so great as you imagine. Your lady has wisely chose to retire from the world, and 'tis probable she'll never leave her solitude. Can't you tell lord *Terwill* that she's dead? Don't be afraid that your lady would ever attempt to contradict that report, should it ever come to her ears.— I highly approv'd these hints, and therefore, says I, madam, I am persuaded this is the only course I can take ; and I don't doubt but his lordship will look upon what you affirm in my favour, to be as valid, as any thing my wife can say. But sure was ever man more unhappy than I ! Pardon, madam, says I with a deep sigh, this involuntary cry, which my grief and ill fortune forces from me. You see me reduc'd to the fatal necessity of employing artifice to conceal what ought to be my greatest glory, and which will now cover me with shame and ignominy. Gods ! I therefore don't dare to say my wife is living ! She is dead with respect to me, and much more so then with regard to the rest of the world, who will now believe she is in her grave !

The sensation which arose from these words were so violent and bitter, that I felt the tears trickle from my eyes, at which I was ashamed, and therefore dry'd 'em immediately. Her highness was struck at seeing me ; for 'tis scarce possible for a person to hear the natural expressions which flow from deep anguish, and not be mov'd : I even observ'd that a tear stood in her eye ; however, she assum'd a smiling countenance ; when she reproach'd me for my weakness, and laugh'd at my philosophy. I answer'd, alas ! madam, either your goodness is wanting, or you see plainly that 'tis most necessary to me. As for philosophy, I at once give it up, as a useless mistress whom I have serv'd to no purpose, and that always fails me when her assistance is most necessary. But in case any thing is more capable of succouring me than philosophy, 'tis your highness's compassion ; I therefore beseech you not to refuse me the testimonies of it. Let me alone, says

says she; I have thought of a remedy which will be more efficacious than you imagine, and I'll take care to send it you. Saying this, we left her highness, who then desir'd my sister to come and visit her often with the children.

I had taken care to chuse a lone house near *St. Cloud*, as was before observ'd, and such as suited with the design I had of living as retir'd as possible. The wood or grove that belong'd to it was spacious enough; in the most solitary part of which there was a little house, consisting of two rooms and a closet, which were fit to repose in, after the fatigue of a walk. This hermitage I generally retir'd to, and furnish'd it very prettily: and tho' I did not hope to meet with any farther succour from reading, I nevertheless bought so many books, and put into it, as made a little library. Here I propos'd to pass the greatest part of my time, that is, those hours I should not spend with the princess. I us'd my self never to be out of it, but at the hour of meals; and would often have my victuals brought thither. I led much the same life here as I had done in *Saumur*; in reflecting incessantly on the calamities I had met with; in begging heaven for that peace which I could no longer expect from men; in sometimes turning a book over, but distracted by a thousand cruel reflections, which prevented my taking a delight in what I read: at other times oppress'd by the violence of my inward pangs. when I would throw myself on the bed, but found sleep, instead of easing my tortures, a fresh source of disquietude, by the fatal and terrifying dreams with which my imagination was rack'd!

One day word was brought me, that a clergyman, sent from the princess desir'd to speak with me. My mind was then in one of those gloomy situations, in which my sorrows seem'd to prey upon me with redoubled violence. However, I order'd the servant to bring him to me. This person was a jesuit. All I knew of this society was its name; except that I had heard some particulars concerning it, which did not much redound to its credit. Being therefore prejudiced against the *French* clergy, as was before observ'd, ever since the troubles they had brought me into at *Saumur*; I certainly shou'd not have allow'd

allow'd him admittance, but merely upon her highness's account. I that instant thought, that the jesuit brought the remedy which the princess had hinted to me; and I began to fear, that 'twas of the same nature with that which the minister of *Saumur*; and father *le Bane* had administered, viz. such an one as would only heighten my uneasiness. The ecclesiastic was introduc'd into my library, when he address'd me in a very civil manner, and I found him as polite, and not quite so affected as father *le Bane*. He told me, that among the several commissions with which her highness had entrusted him, he would open with that which he look'd upon as the least important, tho' at the same time it was greatly so in itself; but added, that he gave it this name, because he was sensible that I, had very little esteem for the advantages which it would procure me. He then gave me a paper, the contents of which were in *English*, and desir'd me to read it before he explain'd himself farther. This was an instrument sign'd by the lord *Terwill*, by which he acknowledg'd that viscount *Axminster* at his leaving *England*, had made over certain possessions to him, an inventory whereof was there inserted; and oblig'd himself, by this instrument, to restore them to such of the viscount's heirs, as should make good their title. He added, that as he did not know these heirs, he therefore had thought himself bound in honour and conscience, to cause this declaration to be drawn up in order to prevent any divisions and disputes which might arise after his death; and therefore had thought proper to make it over to *Henrietta Maria* dutchess of *Orleans*; to be dispos'd of as she should think proper, having had the greatest experience of her humanity and justice.

What I admir'd particularly in this illustrious princess, was, the former of those virtues, which had prompted her to follow, with so much care and address, the method which was most conformable to my desires. This instrument not only secur'd the inheritance of my children, but rid me of a thousand inconveniencies I should otherwise have been expos'd to. There now was no longer occasion of employing artifice in order to impose on lord *Terwill*, by pretending that my wife was dead. Both of us were dispensed from appearing, since her highness was pleased to take the whole management of this affair in
some

some manner upon herself. As to the satisfaction I had propos'd to meet with, in making myself known to lord *Terwill*, I was not now oblig'd to be so hasty in that matter; and I flatter'd myself that I should one day or other meet with an opportunity for that purpose. Hence 'tis plain that the service her highness had done me, was accompanied by every thing that could heighten its merit; whether I consider'd the circumstances, or the effects which would result from it.

I desired the jesuit, in case he went back to *St. Cloud*, to return the princess the utmost thanks in my name; being resolv'd to go and acquit myself of that duty forthwith. But the father, upon my telling him this, interrupted me just as I was rising up: Hold, sir, says he. I have not yet acquainted you with the commission of greatest consequence. We must, sir, after having taken this care of your worldly interest, endeavour to be of service to your quiet; and I am mistaken in what her highness told me, if you have not this most at heart. I was very much afraid, upon hearing these words, that the princess had let him too far into the secret of all my pains; for which reason I made him no answer. But I found by the sequel of his discourse, that he had only been inform'd in general, that I had found the severest treatment both from love and fortune. I know, says he, that you have met with unparallel'd calamities; that you have long sought for a remedy, and that neither philosophy, your conversation with the minister in *Saumur*, with the father of the oratory, or the bishop, cou'd administer the least ease. But, dear sir, to whom do you address yourself? to philosophy, a decrepit old creature, who, in her youthful days, had nothing amiable belonging to her but a name; who was perhaps capable of making fools, but never to procure happiness; and is now fit only to amuse children in schools. To whom did you address yourself? to a protestant and two jansenists! good God! what hands were you got into! and how could you expect a remedy, from things which are productive of the greatest evils? Return thanks to heaven, says he with an air of triumph, for having sav'd you from the poison of empiricks, and preserv'd you to receive the succour which I am now going to offer. Saying these words he rose up,

up, and casting his eye on my books, and spying only philosophers, antient and modern; what do I see, says he with the same tone of voice; fools, madmen and blind wretches? O Sir, Sir, can the sophisms and illusions of these impostors impose upon you any longer? How can you return to a source, which you found was made up of vanity and corruption? If I may advise, throw them all into the fire; and when you shall be dispos'd to listen to my instructions, then let me compose your library.

I should but faintly express the fire, the ease, the politeness and gaiety with which he pronounc'd these words. This made me immediately conclude, that the person who now spoke to me was a church-fop; and telling her highness my thoughts on this matter the same evening, she assur'd me that this name not only suited the person she had sent to me, but the greatest part of the society to which he belong'd. I know not, says she, whether I shall make 'em a compliment, when I assure you that I like them upon that very account; and among the several orders of friars, there is none affords me so much diversion as this. These can assume every shape at pleasure; we perceive something so sparkish, so gallant in all their actions; that every person who has some taste for pleasure, must be delighted to have them perpetually buzzing about him. Their presence and their habit gives a sanction to a thousand things; and we indulge our selves without the least remorse, to every thing that pleases. As for my own part, continues the princess, I will own that they make me fond of religion; and I can't think why 'tis look'd upon to be so severe a thing, in case it be really what they represent it.

I thought this character the more just, as I my self had already made the same reflections, while I was discoursing with the jesuit. Tho' his carriage surpriz'd me a little at first, I confess'd to him that I had reap'd very little benefit from philosophy, or the religious conversations in which I had been engag'd in *Saumur* and *Angers*. I added, that the false steps which had been taken in those places, had prejudic'd me very much against any consolation which might be administer'd to me in a religious way. I have now says I, lost all hopes of every kind,

kind, since philosophy proves ineffectual, and I find so little succour in religion. To this he answer'd, that I had lost the latter too soon, but that he'd soon give me an opportunity of recovering it, that he was pleas'd to find me resolv'd not to be led on after a blind way; that he lov'd to employ reason in all things; that as all the arguments he had to propose, were founded on the most solid principles; he therefore was not afraid of declaring the remedies he had to offer, being fully persuaded, that I should immediately approve them. Give me leave, says he, to explain them in one word. We will begin by rejecting philosophy, unless you shall think fit to call the new system I am going to propose by that name. As for religion, it will be of great use to us; but then I shan't engage you in such obscure and knotty questions, as were perhaps propos'd to you in *Saumur* and *Angers*; but shall borrow such particulars from it only, as are most agreeable, and at the same time most necessary.

You must first suppose, says he, that considering the gloomy situation of your mind, two things must be done in order to effect a cure: the first is, to efface the remembrance of your afflictions; and the second, to make your heart susceptible of pleasure. Altho' these objects seem at first sight to resemble one another; you will yet find them vastly different, in case you consider them attentively. I shan't now describe minutely the methods I intend to make use of; suffice it that religion will be of service to the first of these designs. Alas! says he, turning his eyes towards heaven, would it could contribute alone to the second! but we are formed of flesh and blood; that is to say, we are not most delighted with spiritual pleasures. Nevertheless, this sad and dejected heart requires to be sooth'd. I hear its sighs and I easily discover its cravings. Gracious heaven! — Let me take my course. I know what it wants, and am certain that it will obtain a wish'd for calm, when once this is obtain'd. Thus will I lead you by two paths which will terminate in happiness. By the one, you'll be free'd from the importunate melancholy which preys upon your spirits, and peace will be restor'd to your mind. But then, a bare exemption from pain, is not enough

to make you happy; especially after the tedious, the dreadful sufferings you have labour'd under. By my assistance your heart shall again be sensible to the soft motions of pleasure, and this I promise to bring about imperceptibly. Once again, Sir, I beg you to put some confidence in me, and then all will be well.

Such random promises as these could not easily inspire me with the confidence which the father desir'd me to entertain. However, the respect I ow'd the princess, who had sent this new comforter to me, oblig'd me to shew him some marks of esteem and approbation. This made him more urgent with me; and taking the civility I continued to shew him, for an absolute consent; he told at his going away, that he would immediately prepare what was so necessary to my peace, and return the next day, when he would explain himself farther.

I had the honour of being admitted that evening to the princess, when I thank'd her for the two favours she had indulg'd me that day. I gave her an account of every thing that had pass'd between the jesuit and me, when her highness form'd the judgment I have already taken notice of; and tho' I had no manner of inclination to make a trial of the method he propos'd; yet as the princess was urgent with me to submit to it, I was oblig'd to acquiesce. What risk, says she, will you run? If you consider it only as an amusement, it will, at worst, divert your disquietudes for some time. You don't know what a comical kind of creatures these jesuits are. — Upon this, I consented to hear what the father had to say. As I did not agree to this, merely from the thoughts that it might be a diversion, as her highness assur'd me it would be; neither did I do it from the hopes that it would prove of some consolation. And indeed I should have been very much mistaken, since the adventure it engag'd me in, fill'd me with confusion and anxiety, and occasion'd me to blush a thousand times at my weakness.

The jesuit return'd to visit me, at the hour he had appointed. That morning I had receiv'd a chest of books from him, which he had carefully collected for my perusal; however, I did not open it in his absence. He came about noon. As I had invited him to dine with me, care had been taken to provide a handsome repast. The father

ther did honour to the entertainment, by eating prodigious heartily of every dish. Dinner being ended, he open'd his morality with some reflections on the pleasures of the table. You have, indeed, Sir, says he, treated me in a most splendid manner; but what occasion was there for this abundance, or rather profusion of dishes? I told him naturally, that I had made this entertainment purely upon his account, and that I myself was vastly indifferent with regard to dainties. Sir, says he, you don't take me: I am far from condemning a moderate relish for good cheer; and I even believe that this kind of pleasure has its share too in forming what we call a happy life: but then methinks, a man of sense, should not make it consist so much in a multitude of viands, as in neatness and delicacy. As for instance, you can't be too careful that your victuals be well drest, nor be too nice in the wines you chuse for your ordinary drinking. But then, what occasion was there for so great a variety of dishes and liquors? Be assur'd that we suffer for this sooner or later; our taste degenerates; we feed upon pernicious food, and you can't imagine how greatly this prejudices our happiness. I'll assure you, says I, I make very little distinction in the dishes that come before me: my sorrows make every thing bitter, and change the most wholesome nourishment into poison. Let me alone, says he; I know what must be done to make you recover your taste. We'll begin by the affections and the understanding, and you'll find how naturally every thing will follow from my principles.

We then went to my summer-house, whither I had order'd the chest of books to be carried. The jesuit open'd it before me, and taking out the volumes, gave them to me one by one.

The first he put into my hands was a little *French* catechism, written by one *Canisius*, a jesuit. This, says he, is a little golden book; 'tis the essence and elixir of religion. Read but this little piece, which you see is hardly bigger than my finger, and in less than an hour you'll know as much as all our doctors and bishops; nay as much as the pope himself, says he with a smile, leering at me by one corner of his eye. Stop here; don't deviate from the principles which it inculcates, and you may depend upon

upon being as firm in religion as a general council. He next presented me with a work, entitled, *Devotion made easy*, written also by a jesuit. This resum'd he, is for morals, the other is for doctrine; the former includes the law, the latter the practice of it. You'll here find every thing that is necessary for salvation, and will be surpriz'd to see how matters are softned. When once you have perused this work, you'll never have occasion for any other. You and I will read it over together. Here you'll meet with a cure for all your troubles, or you'll find it no where. He after this drew some other books of devotion out of his pocket, in the same strain, all which he applauded successively. Put these, says he, in the room of your *Plato* and *Socrates*; and read them every day for an hour or two.

As a much greater number of books remain'd in the chest, I waited impatiently to hear the titles of them all. However, he did not do this, 'till after he had declar'd the use of them by way of prelude. He observ'd to me, that as it was not possible for the mind to have always a relish for serious things, it was necessary to yield to that weakness of nature; but that there were such things as profitable amusements, which a well-dispos'd mind knew how to make advantage of: that I was particularly oblig'd to make this experiment whenever it was necessary; that the books he was going to offer me, would amuse the affections and understanding at the same time; and consequently, that nothing was better adapted to forward the success of the design he had explain'd to me. Having said this, he read the titles of several books of poetry, novels, and romances; assuring me, that they were the productions of the greatest genius's of the age; and advis'd me, to read these pieces, particularly, as often as possible; in order to prevent my giving into meditation, which, he assur'd was of dreadful consequence, both to me and to all persons in my circumstances. I not only had never heard of the amusing works abovemention'd, but had not even the least idea of the subject of them. I took them from the jesuit; and tho' I hop'd, upon his bare word, that they'd be of some advantage to me, I yet would not form a judgment of their merits, till after I had examin'd them.

What

What I now, says he, put into your hands, is only to prevent retirement from being a burthen to you; and I hope to be here frequently, in order to assist you in a more solid manner by my discourses. I at the same time would advise you to go more into company. Her highness will always be vastly glad to see you in *St. Cloud*. And as courts and gilded roofs don't always administer the greatest pleasures; I have procur'd you an acquaintance, who will suit your humour wonderfully, and consequently, be vastly pleasing to you. This person lives in the neighbourhood; I have already represented your character to him in the manner you deserve, and he expects you with impatience. — You make vast dispatch, says I; I now begin to have an idea of the manner in which you intend to dispel my melancholy. 'Tis indeed certain that so gay a life as that you propose to me, would at last produce this effect, were I capable of making a habit of it; but that is the difficult point, or rather what I look upon as absolutely impossible. You don't know that when my mind is in its most happy situation, nothing is more abhorrent to it, than that perpetual oblivion of one's self; and that there's nothing I would more willingly be free from, than reflection and meditation. The remedy therefore which you offer me, would be almost as painful as the evil I suffer. He answer'd, that I ought at least for my own sake, to make a trial of it; that I should not thereby enter into any engagement, but what might be broke at pleasure; and that whenever company was displeasing, I might return to my solitude. At last I consented to wait upon him, particularly after he had drawn the character of the persons to whom he was to introduce me. The person in question, says he, is a protestant gentleman, whom I am endeavouring to make a convert to our religion by his majesty's command. You'll be delighted with his wisdom and good sense. He leads a retir'd life as you do, having no other company but his wife and daughter. You have too good a taste, says he with a mysterious smile, not to wish to see them again, when once you have been in their company.

Accordingly we went together, in my coach, to the gentleman, who did not live above two miles from me. The compliments they paid me at my coming in, gave me

me reason to believe I was expected; and I indeed found in the gentleman's countenance and conversation, whatever my conductor had promis'd; for he appear'd to be a person of excellent sense; witty, polite, a taste for the sciences, and inform'd with the most exalted notions of honour and virtue. We discours'd for some time before the ladies appear'd. The jesuit, as though he were impatient to have me see them, desir'd Mr. R — to procure me that satisfaction; and immediately he indulg'd me that favour with the best grace imaginable. His lady came in, who look'd to be about forty years of age, and seem'd by her air and aspect to be a person of condition; but all my glances were in a moment directed to her daughter, whom I took rather for some deity than a mortal being. Nature never lavish'd her perfections with greater profusion. I at first barely admir'd her as the most lovely object I had ever seen. The delicacy of her complexion, the regularity of her features, the dazzling vivacity of her eyes, a thousand charms diffus'd over her face and her whole person form'd such a spectacle, as I could not for some time satiate myself with gazing upon. Nor were her words, or the tone of her voice less graceful; and to complete such a number of perfections, the whole was accompanied with an air of sweetness and modesty; which seem'd to declare, that so beautiful a body was inform'd by a soul of a superior nature. Though my admiration was rais'd as high as it possibly could be, I yet had so great a command over myself, as not to shew it very strongly. We spent the rest of the visit in mutual civilities; and were so well pleas'd with one another, that we promis'd to cultivate each other's friendship.

The jesuit watch'd me more narrowly than I imagin'd he had done; and ask'd me, with a smile, as we return'd, how I lik'd the gentleman and his family. I answer'd, that I had all the reason imaginable to like them. And the lady, says he, is not she a sweet creature? Oh she's an angel, says I; and I question whether she's to be match'd in the whole world. Upon this he assum'd a more serious countenance. I knew, says he, you'd pass this judgment; and will confess to you, that I had some design in introducing you. You are looking out for remedies against sorrow; now will it be possible for you
ever

ever to find a more lovely one? Alas! says I, looking upon him with surprize, you don't know me: I understand what remedy 'tis you intend to propose; but then you have not heard that love alone is the cause of my greatest misfortunes. He interrupted me, by declaring he was not a stranger to that particular; and that this was the very reason why he had advis'd me in the manner he had done. I am unacquainted, says he, with the detail of your adventures; but I form'd a judgment of you from the general idea which the princess gave me of your character. You are naturally tender-hearted. Be assur'd that love is the only remedy, to heal the evils it may have occasion'd: believe this to be true, for I have long studied the heart of man. He added, you will now easily understand the system I have form'd, in order to work a cure. this I shall reduce to four principal heads; first, religion, whose motives and sublime considerations will soon diminish the sense of your pains; secondly, the perusal of agreeable books, which will partly dispel the remembrance of them; thirdly, company, which will banish them entirely; and lastly, the sweets of love, which will steal into your heart like a healing balm, and inspire you with a relish for pleasure.

Tho' nothing could be more whimsical, and undoubtedly more unnatural, than this medly of sensual pleasures and religion; I yet did not despise his system, because it was a medly. But as I imagin'd I should be equally incapable of devoting myself either to company or love, I therefore declar'd that I did not expect to reap any benefit by his counsels: however, he was not discourag'd for this. As he did not know any thing relating to my wife, and in all probability took me for a widower, who was at liberty to love whom I pleas'd; he persisted in declaring that I should soon experience the efficaciousness of his method. I will suppose, that his views in introducing me to this young lady were entirely honest; and that he did it purely to give me an opportunity of falling in love with her, and afterwards making her my wife. But tho' his project was not successful, it yet had this effect, *viz.* it brought me to this shameful confession, *viz.* that I did not know my own heart, when I imagin'd it was secure against the attacks of love.

When

When we were got to my house, he took his leave; and now my business of greatest importance, was, to peruse the books he had left with me. The first therefore that I open'd was the divine catechism, in which he had assur'd me all things belonging to religion were comprehended. As I had as yet but a very imperfect idea of the truths of the christian religion, the reader will naturally suppose, that this book was not over satisfactory. Several things were obscure; and had they been clearer, yet my mind was of such a turn, that unless a doctrine is corroborated by proofs, it could not make the least impression on me. The following reflection was the first I made, after having read it over attentively. On what grounds does this man pretend to make me submit blindly to his authority, or that of his book? There is undoubtedly no religion but has its principles; and the most senseless and incoherent in the whole world, might very safely offer its principles to me in this manner. Consequently there is none of 'em but has the same right, or rather that has as little, to require my assent to them without the least proof or examination. I concluded therefore, that I was to wait the jesuit's explications, before I could expect to reap the fruits, which he had assur'd me I should, from his catechism and other religious books. After this, I took up some of the works of gallantry and amusement, which he had rank'd in the second class of remedies. I dipt a little into them all, but did not find that above two or three at most were any ways rational. A few ingenious thoughts, a happy turn of expression, some soft or smiling images; such were the weapons the jesuit offer'd me, to drive away the remembrance of my pains. However, after I had look'd into these pieces for about a quarter of an hour, I threw 'em from me with the utmost indignation. Heavens! says I, does he sport with my sorrows! To imagine that it is possible for me to be comforted by such trifling amusements as these, is the highest insult.

I now entertain'd a meaner idea than ever, of the promises with which the jesuit had fill'd me. As to his third method of cure, I look'd upon it as more improbable than the two former; and I resolv'd not to make use of his fourth remedy. Upon this I was firmly determin'd to rid

myself of this troublesome physician; and to make my excuses to her highness for rejecting a person she was pleased to send me. He was to return the next day; when I left the following message, which I order'd my servant to deliver in the most civil terms, *viz.* that I begg'd him not to give himself any farther trouble about me. However, I was vastly pleas'd that he had introduc'd me to so agreeable a family as that of Mr. R—, whom I reflected on with the highest pleasure, and resolv'd to keep up a close correspondence with them. As Mr. R—'s temper and disposition suited very much with mine, I did not doubt but I might engage him to be a good friend. The charms of his daughter, were strongly painted in my imagination, and whenever she was present to my memory, my sorrows were sooth'd. I even perceiv'd that she occur'd too often to it, and for that reason I sometimes endeavour'd to blot out the lovely idea, I then would fall again into my old way of thinking; but while I was recollecting all the unhappy circumstances of my life, some circumstance or other would naturally, as it were, awake the remembrance of Miss R—. Whenever I exclaim'd against my wife's infidelity, the next moment I would compare her charms with those of the young lady above mention'd. Such, would I say, was my ungrateful, my perjur'd wife; at least such she appear'd to my eyes when I thought her my only happiness.

I spent that evening, and part of the night in this sort of iniquitude. Nevertheless, heaven is my witness, that so far from having the least mistrust, of what was now taking root insensibly in my heart; I did not once suspect that my passions would have betray'd, and brought me into danger. The reader has heard, in what manner I had curb'd them hitherto. Sorrow was properly the only passion I had to struggle with. Whatever love had inspir'd was pure and innocent. I will own, that I was fearless and unguarded, because I had not the least notion of danger. And indeed I sunk under it at once without making the least opposition; and an odd circumstance, is, that my reason was as soon impos'd upon as my senses. I undoubtedly would have suppress'd this part of my story, which indeed reflects shame upon me, had fame and reputation been the motives of my writing.

writing. However, I promis'd to present the publick with a faithful account of my calamities and weakness, and not to make my own elogium.

Upon my waking, my imagination was employ'd on Miss R — to such a degree, that I cou'dn't think of any thing else. *Cupid*, for'twas he himself, rais'd the most delightful emotions in my bosom; and whether it were an effect of the dreams, which had exhibited themselves to my fancy in sleep, or from the nature of the passion itself; I awak'd in such an extacy of joy, as I had never felt but in the most delicious moments of my life. I, however, made some reflections on this change; and as I did not endeavour to impose upon myself, it was easy for me to judge the cause of it. I love, says I, that's certain. But then I added immediately, in order to prevent the reproaches of reason, is it a crime to love? I have found on a thousand occasions, that love is an innocent passion. I believ'd it to be not only lawful, but essential to my happiness, at a time when I made wisdom and virtue my study. How should it cease to be so, since it charms my grief, and fills my soul with joy? No; I have found a remedy to my sorrows; 'tis love, and I feel the effects of it. The jesuit had a more just notion of things than I, and knew my heart better than I myself did.

This way of reasoning appear'd so solid and conclusive, that I thought it unanswerable. I even forgot for some time, that I was engag'd by such ties, as absolutely forbid my forming any others; and even, when I recollected this, I look'd upon it as a weak and trifling objection; and destroy'd it so easily, that my heart seem'd prepar'd to answer it. Yes, says I, I am bound by the strong ties of marriage; but the present affair relates only to love. As my wife has violated her conjugal vows, I certainly am entirely disengag'd from her. Ungrateful woman! Did I not adore her? Should not I have lov'd her with my latest breath? Alas! I should still prefer her to the possession of a throne, were it possible for her to recover her lost innocence; but my shame and her perfidy, are too flagrant. Can any one therefore condemn me, for endeavouring to forget her?

Let me consider, says I, this difficulty I can clear up in an instant. I, however, cannot possibly dissolve the engagements by which I am bound to my wife, and I don't even intend to do it. This is a fatal chain which I must be forc'd to drag so long as I live. But then, I ought to despise her; 'twas a shameful weakness in me, to doubt whether I still lov'd her. But 'tis certain that the heart must love something. 'Twas not to a needless purpose, that heaven suggested to me, that love would heal all my sorrows; consequently I may indulge the passion which I have for Miss R.—. 'Tis true indeed, that I cannot propose any thing farther in this, than the bare pleasure of soothing it. But what did I ever seek for in love? Was it the bare pleasure of the senses? But this degrades the human creature to a brute. — No; 'tis the sweet union of two hearts, between whose sensations and impulses the utmost harmony is found; 'tis a taste for merit, 'tis the inexpressible charm of tenderness; 'tis all that I can no longer expect to find in my faithless partner; or can seek for in another, without also incurring the guilt of infidelity; for this kind of tye may be dissolv'd; the vows and oaths of marriage, are no ways relative to this delicate part of love. The moment a person who had promis'd eternal fidelity, violates his engagements, the other party is free. The body only is bound by verbal promises. Now if this is the only tye, I'll never break it.

I revolv'd a great many more reflections in my mind that morning; but what is strange, is, that they all tended to justify my new passion, and I did not form a single argument to combat it. This, like an impetuous flood, carried away all my ideas with its current. — In the afternoon, word was brought that Mr. R — was come to visit me, upon which I ran to receive him with the utmost satisfaction. The servant had not told me, that he had brought his wife and daughter along with him; but 'tis impossible to express the exquisite pleasure I felt when the idol of my heart appear'd. I paid them all the highest compliments, when beginning to discourse, we unbosom'd ourselves with much greater freedom than we had done before. Mr. R — desir'd to enjoy my friendship with as much warmth as I requested his. This

promis'

promis'd at once; and in order to cement it the more, I engag'd my sister and niece to cultivate the acquaintance of his lady and daughter. The discourse turn'd for a considerable time, on the great zeal which the jesuit discover'd for the conversion of hereticks. Mr. R — who by this time entertain'd so favourable an idea of me, as to be persuaded he might trust me with a secret, without incurring the least danger; confess'd naturally to me, that he was almost tired with the jesuit's visits and instructions. I can't think, says he, in what manner this scene will end. Prudence obliges me to permit his visits, because I have an express order from his majesty for that purpose. 'Tis with the utmost regret that I listen to his arguments, for I am too firmly persuaded of the truth of my own religion, ever to change it; but then he's so very troublesome, that I cannot say whether my patience will let me bear with him much longer. On the other side, I'm oblig'd to act a very cautious part. The employments I enjoy, and even my estate will be taken from me, in case he does not make a favourable report to the king, who seems to be more exasperated against the protestants than ever. We daily hear of nothing but persecution. The *chamber of the edict*, in *Roan*, has just now been suppress'd; and the court threatens to abolish all our privileges; and to increase our calamities, we are assur'd that Mr. *de Turenne* designs to turn papist. We are not to doubt but the king's zeal will be still more enflam'd, after so great a conquest as this is made; and will use us with less indulgence than ever. I am therefore in the utmost perplexity; and I scarce know how to reconcile my conscience and worldly interest. I answer'd that I was sorry to hear his affairs were in so dangerous a condition; and to shew that his fears were not altogether vain, I told him all that had happen'd to me and my family in *Angers*. If, says I, foreigners are treated in this manner, what may not the natives expect? I should have left *France* immediately after this treatment, had not I been detain'd in it by her highness's goodness, and his majesty's assurances, even from his own mouth, of support and protection. But with regard to you, Sir, what hinders you to screen yourself from persecution, by withdrawing into some of the neighbouring countries? Do not *England* and *Holland*

offer you an asylum? — This, says he, is not so easy a matter as you imagine, for the parts are not open. Besides, can I leave the kingdom without a farthing in my pocket, and expose my family to the utmost extremes of misery? I am so well known, that I shall not be allow'd to sell my estate; and several of those who call themselves friends, and my servants, are spies over me. We now began to confide in one another without the least reserve; which, however did not hinder me from observing all his daughter's motions, and to undo myself by gazing on her lovely face.

'Tis well known, that a little familiarity makes a great change, both in carriage and the turn of a conversation; and this we experienc'd almost in an instant. The four ladies observing that Mr. R — and I now discours'd together with much greater freedom, they imitated us, and began to converse with the utmost familiarity. 'Twas then that I began again to admire the charms of the amiable *Cecilia*, for by this name she was call'd by her mother. Tho' she still continued very modest and reserv'd, I yet could plainly perceive, that she was naturally of a gay temper; and by an effect peculiar to love only, nothing now delighted me so much as that disposition of mind, tho' I had till then relish'd nothing so much as a grave and severe behaviour. A smile, or a gay expression from miss *Cecilia*, would excite the sweetest sensations of joy in my heart. At the bare sight of her, my blood seem'd to flow with greater liberty; I, methought, breath'd easier, and fancied that I felt a certain sprightliness in every limb, which I had not even been sensible to in my youth.

However, I did not desire to express what I thought of her, any otherwise than by general civilities; and don't know whether she had experience enough to guess at the meaning of my glances and my admiration. With regard to myself, I was not sufficiently vers'd in gallantry, to attempt insinuating myself into her affections in a methodical way. I was pleas'd to find that I lov'd her; and this, perhaps, was the only fruit I expected to reap from my passion. I undoubtedly should have indulg'd myself in the pleasure of seeing, and discoursing with her; but then I cannot certainly say, that I should ever have taken the liberty to once mention the word love, in her presence.

What

What I now say is so true, that notwithstanding the kind of approbation which I had already given to my sentiments, I yet could not forbear examining them afresh after she was gone. I computed, as it were how far I was resolv'd to indulge my heart. I'll spend, says I, the afternoon of every other day at Mr. R ———'s house; there I shall have the pleasure to see the charming *Cecilia*; to sit by her, and hear her talk. I'll gather so much from her sight and discourse, as shall suffice to amuse me agreeably the days that I am absent from her. Thus innocent were my views hitherto. In a word, I abandon'd myself thus freely to love, purely to nourish it in my bosom, and in order that it might remove my sorrows. However, as the little god had insinuated himself slyly into my heart; and that I did not begin to argue in his favour, 'till he had obtain'd a superiority over it; I ought to have discover'd by the change which was wrought in me, that I was now over-reach'd by him; and therefore that he'd continue to impose upon me. Be this as it will, I know not what he might have made me do, had I listned only to his suggestions; or my own impulses; and I have this comfort in the shame which afterwards follow'd, that had I not listned to the advice of another person, I should not have brought it upon me.

The jesuit return'd in the evening, with a design to spend the evening with me. I was now so delighted with the past events of the day, and was so greatly chang'd in my humour, that I had countermanded the order I gave the night before; he thereupon was admitted, and I was highly pleased at his coming in. You now, says I, behold a man who is quite chang'd from what he was yesterday. This fill'd him with so much joy, that he interrupted me immediately, by saying; I see it plainly by your countenance, and I thank heaven for it. I flatter myself that my books and advice have contributed to this happy alteration. Your books? says I, very naturally; — no, no; and I'll assure you they gave me so little satisfaction, that I threw them aside. But in case you call the inclination I have for miss *Cecilia*, the effect of your counsel, I then must confess myself greatly obliged to you; and that I have already reap'd the greatest benefit from it. I then expatiated on the beautiful qualities of that

young lady, with the pleasure which a person feels, who talks of a beloved object; and looking on the jesuit as a kind of confidant, I let him into the whole state of my heart. After having heard me with an air of satisfaction; I'm now firmly persuaded, says he, that a cure will be wrought upon you; that he had never doubted of the success of the method which he had proposed to me; that he could have wished I had complied with his whole prescription; for then, says he, the fruits of it must have been more perfect; that the service I should have reap'd from religion in this particular, would have exceeded infinitely my hopes and my imagination.— I interrupted him in my turn, and told him that I ought not to be accus'd, for not approving that part of the remedy which he had offer'd me under the name of religion; for, says I, the arguments which I met with in the books you lent me, are very far from being satisfactory. He then made me such an answer, as I looked upon then, and still continue to do, as a very odd one: I understand, says he, what it is displeases you in the little piece I lent you. You are mighty fond of reasoning, and are not satisfied with any thing less than demonstration. But I am to tell you, that 'tis hardly possible to arrive at any thing certain in religious matters; and persons of the greatest sense are not always the best Christians: Faith requires simplicity and submission. Harkee, says he, I'll now tell you a reflection which I have made a thousand times over. A man of sense is so far from being dissatisfied, that we only require him to be of a tractable turn of mind, and put reason quite out of the question; that he ought to look upon our method as an infinitely advantageous one. In case religion was not to be attain'd but by dint of reasoning, 'tis of so important a nature, that we should be oblig'd to study it all our life-time; and how great must be the toil, to be for ever poring over the bible, and several other obscure pieces, in order to discover the true sense of them? Now every thing necessary to salvation, is comprehended in the little book I gave you. A quarter of an hour's reading does the business. By it's assistance, you'll enjoy the several privileges of religion; you'll possess all its exalted hopes, its motives and consolations; and then, you may devote your whole time to the most delightful employments,

ployments, and may lawfully taste all the satisfactions of life. Now what think you of my reflection?—— I contented myself with observing, that the examination of it would employ too much time; but that my mind was of such a cast, that 'twas not in my power to believe or disbelieve; and that it was necessary for my reason to be convinc'd by proofs. Well, says he, we are not wanting in these; and I promise to give you very satisfactory ones. However, there is no haste for this. The chief of all was, to heal your sorrows; and I am overjoy'd, that one of the methods I propos'd happens to be salutary. He afterwards ask'd me, whether I would not permit him to inform her highness of his success? To this I answer'd plainly, that this seem'd to shew, that his endeavours to cure me, were not so much the effect of zeal as of vanity; and that his only aim in it, was, to ingratiate himself the better by that means into her highness's favour. You may, says I, if you judge proper, inform the princess that I'm much easier in my mind, and that I owe this happy change to your good offices; all which I myself will confirm. But then I'm absolutely resolved not to let her know, that love has any thing to do in the affair. The very good father promised to do as I desir'd; and as I did not tell him any other reason to engage his silence, than the uncertainty I was in, whether the change I then found would continue; he promised me in a very agreeable manner, that he would not once open his lips about any thing I desired him to conceal; and would conclude matters wholly to my satisfaction.

However, he did not give himself much trouble about my affairs; and the thing which he promis'd as the crown of the whole work, prov'd fatal both to the amiable *Cecilia* and myself. His satisfaction was so great, to find that the beginning answer'd his hopes so well; that he had not patience to spend the night with me as he first intended. He hereupon took his leave, with an intention to pass two or three hours at Mr. R —'s; and without telling me the reason of his leaving me so abruptly, he only assured me, that he would continue to serve me with greater assiduity than I could imagine. I desir'd him to give me a little more light into his design, but 'twas to no purpose.

Be assur'd, says he as he went away, I'll be very discreet, and do all that lies in my power to serve you. Observing him to leave me in such a hurry, I recollected what I had heard her highness say, *viz.* that such people as he are a kind of comedians. He went, indeed, to Mr. R——'s. His intention, as I afterwards found, was to act the part of a *Mercury* upon this occasion, and to incline *Cecilia* to favour me. He managed matters with wonderful skill, and was much abler to carry on an intrigue, than to argue with solidity on religious topicks. 'Tis well known that a girl of sixteen is often seduced with no great difficulty, when she is told of the sweets which are to be tasted in love; especially if 'tis a person she venerates, and whose counsels do half the work; for nature soon performs the rest. I myself was surpriz'd to find *Cecilia* in such a frame of mind, without my being put to any pains upon that account. I did not fail to wait upon her the next day after dinner; and met her in a lane by her father's house, where she was walking with the jesuit. 'Twas true, indeed, that any one might see 'em from the windows; but yet I cou'dn't but wonder that this man had gain'd so much power over Mr. R—— and his lady; for I did not doubt but they were highly dissatisfied to see her in his hands; and that fear alone forc'd them to this political complaisance.

The moment I saw miss *Cecilia*, I step'd out of my coach and went up to her. As I had not apprehended the meaning of the words which the jesuit spoke last to me; I was far from guessing the subject of their discourse, nevertheless, the blush which arose in the cheeks of that beautiful person as I approach'd her, and the fearful air with which she fix'd her eyes downwards, made me judge that she was discoursing of some matters of great importance. I was going to make an apology for my intrusion, when the jesuit prevented me, by saying, sir, I was talking of you to miss *Cecilia*: I thought I should do her a piece of service, in acquainting her with your merit, and the inclination you have for her; and am pleas'd to find that she's of a grateful disposition. Altho' this compliment put me to some confusion, I yet answer'd immediately, that I really had the greatest veneration for the young lady; and shou'd think myself vastly happy, cou'd I be allow'd to
prove

prove the sincerity of it by my services. I have gone farther than you, says the jesuit, I have betray'd your secret; and have promis'd the lady something more from you than esteem. So blunt a declaration as this, heightened miss *Cecilia's* blushes, and perplex'd me very much: however, I made a tender, and at the same time, a most respectful answer. — I really had a strong passion for her, the breathing of which gave me exquisite pleasure; and as this present opportunity was altogether unforeseen, the expressions I then us'd, flow'd altogether from my heart. Mr. R —'s coming up, who, the moment he saw my coach, came out of the house to meet me, prevented his daughter from explaining herself. The instant her father appear'd she suppress'd her blushes, and we all walk'd together into the house.

Had I been indulg'd the freedom of conversing with miss *Cecilia* in private whenever I pleas'd, I am not sure whether I should have address'd her that afternoon, my spirits were in such confusion; and indeed I could scarce attend to Mr. R —'s discourse, in such a manner as was necessary for my making proper answers. The jesuit wou'd look upon me every now and then with a smile, as tho' he applauded himself for the service he had done me, with regard to miss *Cecilia*. I judg'd by her silence and timidity, that she was in no less confusion than myself. She seem'd to be very thoughtful; and I observ'd that she often put her hand to her forehead, as tho' she endeavour'd to hide her eyes; but then I could see her look at me thro' her fingers. She would fix her eyes languishingly on me; and when her glances met mine, she then would shut her fingers, and thereby bereave me of the sight of her enchanting face. My passion increas'd. The more simple and natural all my impulses were, the easier I understood this tender language which nature itself dictated, and consequently the greater impression it made upon me.

However, though I had enjoy'd the utmost pleasure that afternoon in miss *Cecilia's* company, I yet cou'd not but think that the jesuit had taken a very odd kind of step. I therefore desir'd him, as he was going out, to come and spend the evening with me; and enquir'd what views he had in acting after this manner. He answer'd, that his only

ly view was to make me ealy and happy; and added, that being perswaded I was a man of sense and honour, he therefore was under no apprehensions that I should make an ill use of the victory he obtain'd for me; be assur'd, says he, that miss *Cecilia* loves you. I drew you in so amiable a light, and protested that you are so passionately in love with her, that I observ'd her little heart take fire as she listned. I really believe, says he, squeezing my hand at the same time, that her heart's a little treasure. I only answer'd him, with an air of indifference, that I was very much oblig'd to him for the pains he had taken. Tho' I was inflam'd with the strongest passion, yet this had not made me forget my duty; and tho' I did not dare to reveal to him, what reasons I had to keep myself within certain bounds; I yet nevertheless thought myself oblig'd to hint, that there were some which I wou'd not absolutely go beyond. Possibly I was the sport of my own heart, and did not explain myself with resolution enough. However this be, the jesuit continued as officious as ever; and did all that lay in his power to make miss *Cecilia* love me.

I past some months, thus agreeably intoxicated by love; and was so much the more satisfied with my own conduct, as I did not find, after a mature examination, that it interfer'd in any manner with honour. This very reflection, whether the subject of it were real or imaginary, contributed almost as much to my ease, as love itself; seldom a day past, in which I had not the satisfaction of seeing the amiable *Cecilia*. Whatever is passionate in assiduities, tender in behaviour, delicate in a thousand little preferences; all these were incessantly employ'd, as well to satisfy the impulses of my heart, as to insinuate my self into her affections. But what was very strange, and even surprizing to my self; not a single word escap'd me all that time, which discover'd the least intelligence between my tongue and my thoughts; for I explain'd my passion no otherwise, than by the dumb language of the eyes, and the extraordinary respect I paid her. This, undoubtedly, was an effect of those unalterable principles of virtue, which had taken such deep root in my soul, in my infant years; that these seem'd to act from nature, and did not want the assistance
of

of reflection. The continuing in this reserve did not put me to the least struggle. I was, perhaps, at that time, the only instance of a man who lov'd with the greatest excess of passion, and yet did not entertain the least hopes or desires. I don't doubt, but miss *Cecilia* was surpriz'd, to find me observe so awful a silence, after the jesuit had introduc'd me in so advantageous a manner. She saw very plainly that I ador'd her; and I discover'd as evidently, that I had made a deep impression in her heart: so that my whole proceedings must necessarily have been a riddle to her. I would sometimes see her, involv'd in thought, fix her eyes wishfully upon me; as tho' she endeavour'd to discover what it was that thus stopt my tongue; and prevented me from expatiating on a pleasure, which so delighted my heart.

I continued also to pay my court to her highness, who soon observed, that a happy change was wrought in my mind. But tho' I confess'd that my mind was infinitely more easy than it us'd to be; I yet conceal'd the cause of it, with the utmost care. I was very willing to let the jesuit enjoy the reputation, of working a complete cure on me. Her highness, the dutchess of *Orleans*, was not so much mistress of her passion, but one easily discovered, that she herself stood in need of consolation. She grew thinner every day; and 'twas observ'd, that for some time her charms faded surprizingly, and she was no longer the gay woman she us'd to be. People us'd to whisper one another in the ear, and cry, that jealousy had occasion'd this change. 'Tis certain that she imagin'd the king lov'd her; and his majesty had possibly endeavour'd to persuade her that she was dear to him. He had visited her for some time with great assiduity; they us'd to discourse in private; and calumny gave a malicious interpretation to their secret interviews. Perhaps the princess would not have valued the reports, had the effects been really what the publick thought 'em to be; but the truth was suddenly discover'd, by a circumstance which gave her highness the greatest mortification. The king had only made use of her as a screen to conceal the passion he entertain'd for one of her maids of honour, whose name was *la Valiere*. His majesty had
long

long cherish'd this flame in his bosom; but at last, whether it were owing to the weakness of the lover, or the vanity and ambition of the mistress, the whole secret came out; and the world was surpriz'd, to see a young woman of no birth, rais'd, in a moment, almost to the throne. An incident of so extraordinary a nature, and in which her highness had, unknowingly, been made to act so odd a part; had inflam'd her resentments to such a degree, that it occasion'd a great change in her humour and impair'd her health. Others, however, assur'd, that 'twas the duke, her consort's ill usage, that plung'd her into this deep melancholy. That prince, from a most unaccountable turn of mind, kept several mistresses publicly, and at the same time was jealous of her highness. He was daily reproaching her; and often treated her with greater scorn and contempt, than he wou'd have shewn to one of his pages. These broils were seldom spoke of in publick; for the princess was so vastly kind and humane to all her domesticks, that not one of 'em wou'd discover any thing she might wish to have conceal'd; but 'twas impossible but I must hear of 'em, as I was almost every day at *St. Cloud*; and was consider'd as an officer of the house, rather than as a stranger. I remember an affair of an extraordinary nature, which gave that unhappy princess the utmost pain. The duke of *Orleans* would often walk from one of his mistresses houses to another; and was always dress'd on these occasions very plain; and sometimes had not so much as a footman after him. One day as he was going over the *Pont-neuf*, or *New-bridge* in *Paris*, he was stop't by four or five tradesmen who were half drunk, and were come thither upon a very whimsical account. As they were over a bottle, the discourse happen'd to turn upon outward behaviour and physiognomy; when one of 'em affirm'd that he would guess the profession of the first person he should meet in the street, by his gait and countenance. This appear'd so singular to the rest, that they resolv'd to put his skill to the trial; and in order to heighten their mirth, they agreed to lay a wager of a few pistoles. However, instead of fixing upon the next street for the experiment, they made choice of the *Pont-neuf*. Unfortunately for her highness, they happen'd to come just

as the duke was passing by. Being pretty much heated by wine, they did not use much ceremony, but stopp'd his highness at once, not knowing who he was. The person who was to give his judgment; after viewing him for some time; and undoubtedly finding by his air and the delicacy of his features, that he was far from being a mechanic; cried out, that he was not of any trade, but was certainly a cuckold. His companions were highly delighted with the sentence he had pass'd; and as the person whom they shou'd stop, was to decide the wager; they urg'd him, with all the waggery of people who are in liquor, to tell them at once whether he were not a cuckold. The duke would not answer their question, so that he found it a very difficult matter to get out of their hands; however, he, at last, did, when he could not forbear reflecting on this odd adventure. He cou'd not persuade himself that it was owing merely to chance; but fancying that he was known; and that this was a kind of hint which was given him with regard to her highness's intrigues, he went immediately for *St. Cloud*. I was in the palace when he came; and was but just come from the princess's closet, who had done me the honour to hold a long discourse with me that day. The fury that darted from the duke's eyes, at his coming in, made every body conclude that he was in a dreadful passion. Every body withdrew out of respect; however, they cou'd not but hear his indignation break out, and the injurious expressions with which he treated the dutchess. The duke storm'd at his lady for above an hour, which threw all her women into tears. All the servants were told by the footman who had walk'd after his highness, the whole affair of the *Pont-neuf*; but they all promis'd not to once open their lips about it. I shall pass over several circumstances of a comick nature, as not suiting with the sad story of my life.

Whatever might be the cause of the sorrow, which prey'd in this secret manner on her highness's spirits, she yet was as kind and affable as usual. This only increas'd her fondness for the solitude of *St. Cloud*, and made her more indifferent with regard to the pleasures of a court. She now never went to *Versailles*, but when she was absolutely

folutely oblig'd to it; and left it as soon as she possibly cou'd. She seem'd to grow kinder every day to all her domesticks, and to all who had the honour of waiting upon her. The great concern I had for her highness's health and felicity, prompted me a thousand times to take notice, that I was very sorry to find her so melancholy as she always appear'd. But whenever I presum'd to hint any thing of this kind, she would answer me only by sighs, which spoke a dejected heart: and on these occasions, awe kept me from explaining my self farther. But tho' it was not in my power, to console her as well as I would fain have done; I yet did all I possibly cou'd. I used to stay so long with her highness, as I thought I was not troublesome. I for this purpose used to go twice daily to her palace; and would willingly have spent whole days there, had not my strong inclination for miss *Cecilia*, call'd me often to her father's.

Being one day at *St. Cloud*, one of Mr. R——'s servants brought me a letter from his master, by which I was conjur'd. by all the tyes of friendship, to go immediately to his house. Astonish'd to find him write to me in such urgent terms, I suppos'd that something extraordinary had happen'd; and therefore told the bearer, that I would wait upon his master immediately. I went, when I found him in his closet, with an air of consternation in his face; and holding a letter in his hand, which seem'd to have occasion'd his disorder. Alas! sir, says he, the moment I came in, I am undone. Read only what is writ to me, and then see whether it will be in your power to assist me on this melancholy occasion. I read it, and found that it had been sent from a protestant gentleman, his friend; who gave him an account that the persecution began to rage in the province where he liv'd. He complain'd particularly, in the most moving terms, that his son and two daughters had been forc'd away; but whither they were carried he knew not. He added, that the cruelties which were exercis'd in the provinces, would soon extend to the court and *Paris*; and that he was assur'd from very good hands, that the moment Mr. *de Turenne* should have abjur'd the protestant religion; all those who should refuse to follow his ex-
ample,

ample, would be forc'd to it ; that the gentleman above-mention'd was to make his abjuration in a few weeks afterwards ; that he believ'd all those who were resolv'd not to be converts to popery, had no other refuge left, but to fly their country immediately ; he therefore advis'd him to sell privately, as he himself was doing, as much of his estate as he possibly could ; and above all, that he exhorted him to place his daughter instantly in some place where she might be safe, or that otherwise she'd be forc'd away from him.

After I had read this, Mr. R — told me that this was not all. Here, says he, is a letter which I receiv'd from Mr. *de Turenne* by the same post. As I have the honour to have a place in his esteem, I begg'd him, ingenuously, to give me his advice ; firmly perswaded that he has too great a soul, to betray me on this occasion. Pray read the answer he sent me. I found that Mr. *de Turenne* had declared to him, in a very frank and friendly manner, the principal motives of his conversion. He advis'd him to imitate the pattern he had set him, rather for the sake of his soul, than that of his worldly possessions. However, that in case he was firmly determin'd not to change his religion, he advis'd him to fly immediately to *England* or *Holland*, with whatever money he could carry off with him ; because, he said, the time was at hand, when great numbers of people would wish they had used the same precautions. This, says Mr. R — fills me with inexpressible perplexity. I don't know a soul in any foreign country, from whom I may beg an asylum ; I can't think in what manner to dispose of my estate privately ; and then I am afraid every moment of having my daughter forc'd away from me. The danger is extreme, and I cannot think of any remedy, that will be speedy enough for my purpose ; unless, says he, your friendship should suggest something which may be of service to me.

After having meditated a moment on what I had read and heard ; I am sorry, says I, 'tis not in my power to direct you to some person in *England* ; for I suppose that is the chief service you want me to do you. Altho' I am an *Englishman*, I yet have not one acquaintance in my own country. However, tho' I can't serve you myself, I possibly

sibly may get a friend to do it. We are not to expect to obtain any thing in your favour at *St. Cloud*; for courtiers are always of that religion which the monarch professes. But I have a friend who is able to do you very great service, and I believe he really will for my sake. The person I mean is the lord *Clarendon*. Tho' this nobleman has lost the king's favour, his relations and friends wou'd serve him to the utmost. Besides, as he is at *Roan*, as he himself inform'd me by letter; it will be an easy matter for him to procure you a vessel, in which you may sail for *England*. I'll write to his lordship on this occasion by the first post. Mr. R — answer'd, that he'd accept of my offer; but then, says he, before you've writ to his lordship and receiv'd an answer, my daughter may very possibly be forc'd away from me. Well, says I, in case you are under any apprehensions upon her account, you may send her before to *Roan*. The lord *Clarendon* will receive her with pleasure; and she may pass her time very agreeably with his lady, till such time as you may have settled your affairs, and be ready to set out for that city.

Mr. R — was mightily pleas'd with this overture. He weigh'd the several circumstances of it afresh, and drew the following plan, in order for the putting it in execution. As I am so narrowly watch'd, says he, it will be impossible for my daughter to go for *Roan*, but notice will be taken of it, and consequently I shall be accus'd of sending her away by stealth. It therefore wou'd be proper to give such a colour to her flight as may remove all suspicions. You yourself, says he, might carry her off in the night in your own coach, and convey her to *Roan*. You may ride a great number of miles in the night, by which means no one would absolutely know which way you are gone. I'll pretend the next day to be vastly surpriz'd at her flight, and will even seem perswaded, that she is gone off with some lover. In case the spies who are set over me should mistrust any thing, they, at least, won't have any proofs against me; and much less will they know whither you design to send her. There is, says he, but one difficulty in this project, which is, that you may possibly do yourself a prejudice, in thus endeavouring to serve me. — I assur'd him, that this would not be of the least weight with me; I don't, says I, design to spend

spend my days in *France*. There are even some affairs which require my presence in *England*, and I don't intend to stay long after you. The most unhappy circumstance that could possibly happen to me, in case it should be discover'd that I assisted in conveying away part of your family, would be, my being forc'd to leave this kingdom a little sooner than I intended to do.

What I now spoke was sincere, and I was so desirous of putting an end to Mr. R——'s perplexity, that I did not so much as consider that I was preparing torments for myself, in thus contributing to miss *Cecilia's* flight. However, this thought occur'd to me afterwards; but then it was not near so afflicting, when I consider'd that I myself should pass, before 'twas very long, into *England*. The lord *Terwill* was return'd thither; and therefore I had determin'd, for some time, to cross over into my native country, in order to settle the estate which was devolved on my children. I consider'd, at the very time as I was speaking to Mr. R——, that I might take this opportunity to leave *France* entirely; and consequently, that I should have a better opportunity of seeing and enjoying the company of my amiable *Cecilia*, when we should be arriv'd in *England*. I therefore promis'd faithfully, to come in my coach, with two or three servants whom I might confide in, about such an hour of the night, as I believ'd it would be possible for us to go off unseen by any person.

I left him, in order that he might have time sufficient to talk of these matters with his lady and daughter, and likewise to prepare every thing on my side. Neither Mrs. *Lallin* or my sister were let into the secret. I us'd to go frequently either to *St. Cloud* or *Paris*, without giving them the least notice of it, and would sometimes lie out of the house. The only persons I acquainted with my design, were *Dring*, whom I had made my steward, my coachman and two footmen. I order'd *Dring* to set out privately on horseback before night, upon some pretence or other; and come in the dead of night to Mr. R——'s house. As for myself, as soon as it was dusk, I set out towards *Paris*; and only went so far up that road, as was necessary to lead the inhabitants of some neighbouring cottages into a mistake; and after I thought we were in no danger from
the

the spies, I bid my coachman stop in some lone place till the time was almost expir'd that I had promis'd to be at Mr. R —'s house.

My hand is seiz'd with a trembling, now I am going to relate one of the most fatal adventures that ever befel me. I don't say fatal with regard to the circumstances which attended upon it, as there was no blood shed; and that the sad accident which follow'd after it, can be referr'd only to the common course of nature, or to certain causes which it is not in the power of man to foresee; but as it prov'd of such dreadful consequence to my honour and my virtue. Nothing but a miracle from heaven would have sav'd me from the brink of the precipice. 'Twould be to no purpose for me to impute the honour of it to my reason: an intelligent reader will find that I deserv'd to be undone; and that had it not been for a supernatural assistance, the weakness which had led me into this danger wou'd not have been chang'd into strength, to prevent my ruin from being completed.

The time of my going to Mr. R —'s being near expir'd, I went towards it, and coming to the alley which stood before it, I found *Dring* waiting for me. We had been there but a very little time, when we perceiv'd, by the light of a little lanthorn, some persons coming very softly out of the house, who came up to us in an instant. These were Mr. R —, his lady and daughter. After a thousand kisses and embraces, they gave her up into my hands, when I promis'd they should hear from me the instant of our arrival in *Roan*, which would not be above two days, because I intended to make all imaginable haste thither. As we were afraid lest some of the servants should perceive us, we took but a very short farewell. I only repeated to Mr. R --- the lord *Clarendon's* goodness and generosity; and with regard to the dangers which might be met with in the road; I protested that I would venture my own life to spare that of his amiable daughter; and therefore that both he and his lady had reason to be very easy.

After I had said these words we set out. I had taken a small wax taper lighted into the coach. Miss *Cecilia* was silent, and seem'd lost in thought. I at first reproach'd her for it; but notwithstanding the tender sentiments which then inform'd my heart, I for some time discour'd

cours'd only on common and indifferent subjects. She would every now and then speak a word or two by way of answer. I would not seem to gaze upon her with more than ordinary attention, which, however, did not prevent me from sometimes contemplating the sweetness of her fine eyes; on which occasion, whenever my glances met hers, my heart would feel a more than ordinary emotion. Immediately I would cast my eyes down, and endeavour to recover myself; however, I was too near her, to repel long the subtle poison which she darted at once, from every part of her, into my heart. The bare sound of her voice melted me in such a manner as is inexpressible. But what emotions must I feel whenever I touch'd her, which the continual jolting of the coach made me do every moment; to breathe the same air, in the small tenement which held us; alas! to see and feel but her only! 'twas not blood which now circulated in my veins, but the fires of love. The hurry which these occasion'd in my spirits, enabled me to carry on our conversation a little longer; but afterwards consuming themselves, if I may be allow'd the figure, by their own heat, they chang'd insensibly into a heavy, melancholy languor, a moment after which I was deeply involv'd in thought. I began to consider in a quite different manner from what I had hitherto done; that I was conveying a person, whose presence and conversation gave me so much pleasure, to *Roan*, where I was to leave her, and should perhaps never set eyes on her more. I shall then, says I to myself, lose the dear creature, whose presence lulls all my sorrows to rest, and whose company is sweeter than any thing in life! All my sorrows will again invade me; for 'tis she only that suppresses them. In case I am permitted to love her, is it natural that I should consent to bereave myself of so lovely an object? Good heavens, how will it be possible for me to live without her! what will my life be when she is gone from me? As I made these reflections, which employ'd my whole soul, a sigh would every now and then steal from me. Tho' I myself did not perceive this, it did not escape the notice of miss *Cecilia*, whose heart was as tender as mine. She could not doubt, but herself was the cause of the disorder which she saw me in; and 'twas not till after some struggles, that she prevail'd

vail'd with herself to tell me, she was sorry to see me so sad and dejected. However, at last inclination got the better, when she broke into the following words: What can it be, sir, that has made you thus melancholy on a sudden; I am not sure so unhappy as to be the cause of it? This question, and the tone of voice with which she spoke, made me turn my head towards her. My eyes met hers; when the soft inquietude, which methought I read in them, quite over-power'd me. I thereupon took up one of her hands, but without knowing what I did, and squeezing it between mine; alas! miss *Cecilia*, says I, what a sad reproach you just now made me? Your presence must for ever create satisfaction, and form my felicity; but, — I'm afraid your absence will be the greatest pain to me! and 'twill be impossible for me to survive it long.

Miss *Cecilia* was young and unexperienc'd. *Cupid*, at that instant, insinuated himself into her bosom as well as mine, and awak'd the most melting, the most delicious sensations. Whence could she have got weapons to defend herself, since neither honour nor reason could furnish me with any; and that I did not so much as seek for any in these? She was overjoy'd to hear me deliver my passion at once in such soft language; and whether it were from a free impulse, or an involuntary emotion; she made such an answer as discover'd the greatest passion, and innocence at the same time. If, says she, you look upon my absence as so great an evil, why will you leave me? When one loves a person, methinks 'tis so sweet to be in their company! But I am not sure of it, says she, looking upon me with bashfulness; for you never told me you did. I must here declare my whole weakness; the short answer she gave made me sensible to something I had never felt before; an emotion, a thousand times more sprightly and delicious than all the pleasures united, which I had hitherto tasted in love. Now, that I blush to think of it, 'tis in vain for me to enquire what it was in those few words that could raise such emotions in my breast. Was it their simplicity, which could not but discover the utmost tenderness in a young person, who, at the same time, I knew was inform'd with the greatest good sense? Was it the sound of a charming voice, whose im-
pression

pression mix'd with that which was already diffus'd over all my senses? Or rather, was it not the frame and disposition of my heart, which now felt an extasy of joy, to find another to sympathize with it in so happy a manner; and which triumph'd, in some measure, to see such a blessing offer'd it, as it perhaps could not have presum'd to desire?

Be this as it will, I now consulted my heart only, and accordingly address'd myself to miss *Cecilia* in the most tender, the most passionate language, which seem'd to give her the utmost pleasure. She soon hinted, that absence would be as insupportable to her, as it could possibly be to me. I told her, that it should be as short as possible; in a word, that I was resolv'd to leave *France* with her father, and cross over into *England* with her and the rest of the family. She seem'd mightily pleas'd at this resolution. Nevertheless, after considering how long it might be before I could return to her; methought it would be impossible for Mr. R ——— to settle his affairs in less than two or three months, which both miss *Cecilia* and I should consider as so many ages. However, she propos'd a thing which might prevent our being so long absent from one another. Methinks, says she, you might have spar'd me in this journey to *Roan*, had you offer'd my father to take me into your house; and to stay in it till such time as he had completed his affairs. I might have liv'd as privately there, as it will be possible for me to do in *Roan*, and then we would have embark'd together for *England*. Tho' this thought was not new to me; and I had even reject'd it, when it occur'd to me before our setting out, because I was of opinion, that she would be as soon discover'd at my house as at her father's; it yet appear'd to me in a quite different light, now she herself propos'd it. I resolv'd this thought again in my mind; and tho' I could not persuade myself that she would be safer with me; I yet imagin'd that the little tenement which stood in the midst of my park, would be a very secure asylum. I can't pretend to say that wisdom suggested this reflection; no, 'tis certain that love, and a strong desire of being for ever near my amiable *Cecilia*, inspir'd me on this occasion. These, after having prevail'd so far as to make themselves
be

be heard, were soon powerful enough to force obedience. I told miss *Cecilia* my thought, and it pleas'd her extremely. How unhappy is it, says she, that you did not think of it before ! But is it too late yet ? what hinders us from going back ? my father will be overjoy'd to have me so near him ; and then I may see him every day. No persons, but such as you think proper, may know any thing of the affair. She added a great many other particulars which I did not listen to, so much I was delighted with this unexpected overture. I found something so soft, so sweet in this, that I was surpriz'd I had not reflected fully on it before. All the impulses of my heart prompted me to put this in execution at once. Nevertheless, when I was about fixing my self in this resolution, I felt my self stop, as it were, by a kind of fear, the cause of which I could not discover, and 'twas this involv'd me so much in thought. In the mean while our coach went a great speed. Miss *Cecilia* observing that I was fix'd in meditation, took notice, that it would be needless to go any farther, in case what I had propos'd could be put in execution. I did not know what answer to make ; and without being able to guess what it was that made me so irresolute, I started some objections to her against my own inclinations. She argued against them ; and reflecting in how melancholy a manner she would pass her time in *Roan*, as the persons she was going to were wholly strangers to her ; she complain'd, that, not to mention that the love I profess'd to have for her, ought to make her company dear to me ; I discover'd but very little affection, in being thus in doubt whether I should grant what she requested of me.

I yielded to her desires, or rather to my blind inclination ; and thereupon I bid the coachman turn back, and carry us to the private door which belong'd to my park, through which we could easily get to the solitary tenement unperceiv'd. I was overjoy'd that we were return'd back ; and telling miss *Cecilia* the pleasure that it gave me, she assur'd me that it gave her no less satisfaction. Nevertheless, something whisper'd to me every now and then, that I had taken a wrong step ; but I flatter'd my self, in order to sooth the uneasiness this fill'd me

me with, that it proceeded only from the danger to which miss *Cecilia* would be expos'd; what precautions soever I might take, to keep this matter a secret. I therefore resolv'd not to let any one in the world know where she was except her father; and consequently not to let so much as my sister or niece know any thing of the matter. And the better to impose upon those, who perhaps might hear that I had gone out of my house, the very night that miss *Cecilia* had been carried off, as would be suppos'd; I resolv'd also to send my equipage to *Paris*, as soon as we should alight at the park door, and order the coachman not to return till the next evening. By this means, says I; tho' the world should suspect that I carried you off, yet 'twill never be thought that I have hid you in my house. Having thus laid down my scheme, she approv'd every part of it.

I cannot say, whether among my various readers, any of them will be able to guess the secret motives which prompted me to act in this manner; and to discover what I myself was then ignorant of; or at least, what a blind and fatal passion prevented my perceiving. I have since discover'd it; but the confusion it then fill'd me with, lessen'd perhaps the merits of my repentance; but I find my self inclin'd to confess it in this place, out of a kind of justice, which obliges me to look upon this confession as a chastisement. Wisdom, virtue, study, alas! how faintly do you defend against the most shameful attacks, a heart which abandons itself to no other conduct but its own, and which takes no care to curb its desires? My secret view in all the mysterious precautions which I us'd, in order to conceal miss *Cecilia*; that criminal view which, blinded by love, I could not see; was only to secure my self the pleasure of enjoying her company alone; and perhaps to take advantage of her frailty, by making her consent to my guilty wishes. However, I my self was far from discovering this; 'twill even be found, in case this matter is attended to, that prudence ought to have suggested quite different measures, had I laid a snare for miss *Cecilia*'s innocence; for what probability was there, that I could be long able to hide such an attempt, not only from my own family, but even from Mr. R — and his lady. I was now bringing

his daughter just under his eye; but this circumstance only serves to shew, how far the passions are apt to blind a man. My heart had a secret tendency to satisfy all its desires, nevertheless, stopt, and terrified as it were, by some little remains of virtue and honour; it would have disown'd this guilty intention, had I enquir'd into the cause of its sensations; and being in this doubtful, this dark disposition of mind, it so happen'd, that I was not capable of taking, either such measures as were conformable to the dictates of wisdom, or such as were of a criminal nature.

Being now got to the park door, I bid the coachman drive away immediately for *Paris*; and as I intended to return home in my own coach, and stopt at the gate where I commonly alighted, I bid my coachman, as soon as he was return'd from *Paris*, to wait for me in a lone place, whither I propos'd to walk on foot. I kept none but *Dring* to attend upon me; and bid him to go before to the little hovel in the park, and to get a light. 'Tis certain that had my desires been innocent, I ought to have first taken care, to send Mr. R.—— word of our arrival, and that we had chang'd our resolutions. But this did not so much as once occur to me, when I got to the park. 'Twas still very dark. As my servants were set out with the coach, and *Dring* was gone towards the house, I now found my self alone with the dear object of my affections. Nothing could better discover the fondness she had for me, and that she was persuaded I lov'd her tenderly; then the satisfaction she seem'd to taste, now she was walking by my side, and leaning on my arm. I employ'd every passionate expression which love suggests, and she seem'd to listen to me with the greatest pleasure. We were now arriv'd at the little tenement, where *Dring* had prepar'd every thing necessary. Altho' we had not many eatables in this hovel, we nevertheless had sufficient to make a little collation, which was prepar'd in an instant. This says I to the lovely *Cecilia*, is the asylum you have chosen; were I sovereign of the universe, you should soon be as much mistress of it, as you are now of this little apartment; and you know a place, pointing to my heart, where you enjoy a more absolute sway. To say the truth,

I was almost enchanted at seeing her face. The little hurry of the walk, and the adventures of the night, diffus'd so much beauty over her whole person, that I was as much fill'd with admiration as with love. She perceiv'd with great pleasure, the effect which her charms had upon me; and her eyes declar'd she was tender, as much as mine (in their dumb language) told her that she was charming. As the night was very far advanc'd, I thought it would be proper to send back *Dring*, in order that no body might see him, when he should go out of the park on horseback. As he had come out of the house alone, he might go back to it, and appear in it, tho' I didn't. I bid him be sure to make as if he did not know, whether I were at *Paris* or in *St. Cloud*; and I order'd him to bring to the little hovel, a little after day-light appear'd, whatever might be necessary to miss *Cecilia*. Upon this he withdrew, and left me alone with that amiable creature.

I again repeat; that I had not thus sent away my servants one after another upon an ill design, which had made me wish to be alone. The reader sees plainly, that there was some reason for their going away, and that hitherto every thing had been conducted very naturally. Nevertheless, 'tis but too true, that my heart flatter'd itself with some delightful ideas, in proportion as those who were witnesses of all I did, went away. *Dring* was no sooner got out of the room, but I immediately felt the most extraordinary emotions. *Cecilia's* glances meeting mine, made my blood circulate with uncommon rapidity. I cast my eyes downwards, and continued silent for some time, as tho' I had been employ'd in admiring her beautiful hand. But in reality, I was in such confusion; that being under a kind of constraint, and not having strength enough to look up, I did not know how to recover my self, but by rising from table, and taking a few turns up and down the room. Miss *Cecilia* was silent, and seem'd impatient to know, in what manner I would open the conversation. I observ'd, that she sometimes directed her eyes to me, and a moment after cast them downwards. This only heightned my perplexity. My heart seem'd ready to leap from my bosom. I could, with extasy, have thrown

my self at her feet, but did not dare to do it ; and had scarce power to walk up to her.

However, fearing she would be uneasy to see me disturb'd in this manner, I at last went and sat down by her. She then turn'd her head to me, and putting on a forc'd smile ; ask'd me, in a very tender manner, whether any thing troubled me ? I then could not forbear taking up one of her hands hastily. Troubled ! says I ; Gods ! troubled, now I see you, whom I adore ; and have the happiness to inform you of it, and the satisfaction of believing that you will listen to me with some pleasure ! Could it be possible for me to forget who I am now with, and whose lovely hand I now hold ? could I forget all I wish'd for, and all I have obtain'd ? for surely, dear *Cecilia*, you cannot refuse me your heart : Is it not already mine ? In case I possess it, is there any room for me to be either unhappy or melancholy ? I said a thousand things more, with the same warmth and passion ; for love had now gain'd an absolute conquest over my reason.

She listened to what I said ; I read in her countenance that her heart overflow'd with tenderness and joy ; and I tasted, in some measure, both her satisfaction and my own. In so tender a moment as this, could she deny me any thing ? our wishes were mutual ; and the suggestions of honour and virtue, were not attended to upon this occasion. I kiss'd her lily hand a thousand times, and did not find that she once endeavour'd to draw it from me.—But who could believe it ? 'twas in the very instant that her innocence and mine were just expiring, as it were, that I perceiv'd the dangerous precipice, from which I was going to throw myself ; and I still cannot say, whether it was for mine, or my *Cecilia*'s sake, that it pleas'd heaven to assist me, by the most unexpected of all miracles.

Miss *Cecilia* was tender enough, to go greater lengths than are consistent with modesty : but then, as she had receiv'd a very virtuous education ; and that 'twas impossible, even for love itself, to blot out those impressions in an instant ; she undoubtedly was oblig'd, no less than my self, to impose upon her reason ; in order to calm the remorse which otherwise would cast a damp upon

upon her pleasures. She was sensible, that as we are alone, love might prompt us to go farther than was consistent with duty; and perhaps she herself at first resolved not to indulge the utmost of our wishes. Nevertheless some remains of modesty, which wanted to veil itself with some pretence, oblig'd her to draw away her hand suddenly from mine. Heavens! says she, what am I doing? and how is it possible for me to be so weak! will you promise, at least, to marry me? This question, altho' spoke with a tender and languishing air, made me shudder before I had thought what answer to give. I did not say a word; when perceiving the perplexity I was in: Good lord! says she with a deep sigh, can't you determine! My confusion was so great, that not being able either to look upon, or make her the least answer, I again took one of her hands, and endeavour'd to hold it, notwithstanding her struggles to get it from me. She at last forced it away; and finding I did not say a word, tho' she had again put the same question to me, she also continued silent.

We thus remain'd in the most odd situation that ever was heard of. A thousand thoughts occur'd to my mind in an instant, and with so much confusion, that I knew not what to make of 'em. I did not even dare to lift up my eyes to miss *Cecilia*; and to let her read therein, what it was impossible for me to express in words. The charm which had blinded me, since I had receiv'd her from her father's hands, seem'd now to break away. Altho' my passion continued as strong as ever, I yet found my desires die away. Honour and respect began now to re-assume their former empire; and as this change restor'd my reason, I was seiz'd with the utmost terror, the moment I reflected on what had pass'd between us. 'Twas then, that reflecting much less on the reasons I had to rely on miss *Cecilia's* tenderness, than the dread I was under of her hating me henceforwards; I ventured to turn my eyes towards her, in order, if possible, to discover how she might be affected. She seem'd to be overwhelm'd with melancholy; and altho' her eyes were shut, and her head leaning backwards on the chair, I yet fancied I saw some tears steal down her cheeks. This sight struck me to the soul, and in my first emotions I

was going to throw my self at her feet. I know not what turn love might have given to my expressions; but the sad *Cecilia* prevented my words. Alas! says she, turning her head from me, in order to avoid my glances; leave me, I cannot listen to you any longer, for you have deceiv'd me; I am a vile creature, and ought to die with shame and confusion.—— This reproach stung me to the soul. I swore to her by whatever was sacred, that nothing could exceed the warmth and sincerity of my affections; and wish'd heaven might make an example of me, in case I ever intended to impose upon her. These protestations seem'd to calm her uneasiness, and thereupon she ask'd me, in the most tender tone of voice, why I refus'd to marry her, and whether I had any other design when I declar'd that I lov'd her? She told me, that her father having long observ'd that I had an inclination for her, was persuaded that I would ask his consent to marry; that he firmly expected it, the jesuit having assur'd 'em this over and over; that 'twas this supposition, as much as the persuasion he entertain'd of my honour and integrity, had prompted him to trust her in my hands; that he had order'd her before we set out, to consider me as a man who might one day be her husband, and therefore that I should behave my self in such a manner, as might increase the affection I had for her; that she acknowledged, she had not made a proper use of his advice; that having been so silly as to believe I lov'd her to excess, she had also been so weak as to discover the affection she had for me; and that she had gone greater lengths than modesty allows, in giving me such evident marks of the tender affection she had for me: but, that after she had heard the jesuit and her father speak so many things to my advantage, and after having so long studied my heart, and persuaded herself that I was a man of the strictest honour; she never could have thought, that I would ever have look'd upon this indulgence she had shewn me as a crime; and for having been so simple, as not to disguise her heart. She added, at the same time, letting fall some tears, that tho' she was so young, she yet had too much sense not to see through all my artifices, and that I must necessarily be the most worthless wretch breathing, if I ever entertain'd any dishonest views when I address'd her.

This

This discourse, which she utter'd with all the grace imaginable; and what affected me still more, with such an ingenuous air, as plainly discover'd that what she had now spoke, flow'd infinitely more from the greatness of her sense, than from experience and cunning; this, I say, made such an impression upon me as words could never describe. Whether it were the dread I was under of being for ever excluded the possession of so enchanting a creature! or the confusion with which I was seiz'd, to consider that I had, in reality, deceiv'd her, by the false idea I had made her entertain concerning my intentions; whether it were reason or transport, I could not forbear making the only confession, by which it would be possible for me to justify myself. However, I did this by a round about way. Charming miss *Cecilia*, says I, throwing myself at her feet, heaven is witness, that no man ever lov'd more sincerely than I do. My heart is full of you; and I love you more dearly than ever man lov'd. Oh! that it were possible for you to see into the inmost recesses of it! lovely *Cecilia*, you'd then find that your image is deeply engrav'd in it! No, no, it cannot deceive you. It adores you. It feels, that the happiness of being yours, is the supreme good: it wou'd make me chuse to be your consort, rather than to be the greatest monarch upon earth. — She interrupted me; and interpreting these last words in a manner agreeable to her wishes, she said to me, (holding out her hand with a tender smile, which seem'd to shew that she was already consoled) how cruel you were, to keep me so long in suspense, and not explain yourself sooner! This answer confounded me still more; and thereupon I refus'd her my hand, and interrupting her; hate me, says I, look upon me with horror. — Or rather pity my unhappy fate. Alas! dearest *Cecilia*, 'tis impossible for me ever to be yours; I am married.

This declaration threw her into an astonishment, which can be much better felt than describ'd; she seem'd ready to faint away in my arms. She fix'd her eyes upon me for some time with an air of the wildest distraction; and tho' I consider'd them attentively, I yet cou'd not read her thoughts in them. At last, she recover'd herself, when she burst into a flood of tears, and vented the most

moving complaints. She did not once mention me, but seem'd to forget that I was on my knees before her; when her grief being now pointed against her own person, she reproach'd herself bitterly with her imprudent conduct. I am lost, says she, over and over; I am dishonour'd to all intents and purposes. Here her sighs and tears stopp'd her words for a moment, after which she again broke into the most mournful exclamations, that she was a wretched creature; wou'd now be the scandal of her family, and the sport of all who knew her.

As I had own'd my marriage to her, inadvertently; and was myself prodigiously troubled, I did not know what to do, in order to calm her distracted imagination. I did not, indeed, think that she would have afflicted herself in this manner; but rather, that she would have pointed all her resentment against me, and not herself. I look'd upon her with an air of so much consternation, as wou'd have sufficiently justify'd me, had she been capable of attending to any thing. However, she still continued to turn her eyes from me, whatever might be the reason of it. But now I had resolution enough to speak, when I protested that her complaints were altogether groundless; and that nothing which had now happened ought to give her the least pain, her honour being as uninjur'd as ever. She wou'd not give me time to conclude what I was saying, but rising from her seat on a sudden, she ran from me with a kind of horror, calling me, at the same time, by the most opprobrious names.

This sudden transport, plainly shewing that she was highly exasperated, I was afraid she would run out of the room in spite of me; and that she very likely would be seen by some of my servants, as she was roving about the park; for it was now very near day-break. It would have been a mortal pain to me, had such an affair as this been discover'd; and it affected my honour no less than it did hers. This reflection made me run to the door, and lock it; when having done this, I walk'd up to her, and altho' she endeavour'd to hide her face, I nevertheless took a chair, and sat down by her. Her tears were still streaming, and this was succeeded by so deep a silence, that I was afraid something fatal had happened to her, after having seen her in these violent agitations. Nevertheless, af-

ter I had conjur'd her in the most respectful terms, to allow me a moment's hearing, she, at last, consented to listen to me. I began, by assuring her that her honour was as unblemish'd as ever. I prov'd to her that we might very easily execute the plan which we had concert-ed while we were in the coach. The moment that *Dring* is return'd, we may, says I, acquaint your father with your being here, and your reputation cannot suffer in the least, after 'tis known that he had consented to your being in my house. Moreover, says I, I don't intend he shall know that I have spent part of the night alone with you. I, at first, did not intend to let my sister and niece know of your being so near them; but I have now chang'd my resolution, and I'll desire 'em to come to us, before I send for your father. In case he should come to see you this morning, he'll find you in their company; and neither he, or any other person will have the least suspicion of what has pass'd between us here. You therefore, says I, with a deep sigh, have reason to be easy. Alas! miss *Cecilia*, you ought to be so, for your honour will be no ways expos'd on this occasion. You may likewise depend upon having another advantage here, which you seem to have no less at heart; and that is, the being deliver'd from my presence, which is on a sudden become so odious, that you thought me worthy of the most injurious appellations. Heaven, who knows the rectitude of my soul, is conscious that I did not deserve them: the name indeed, which I justly merit, is, that of the most unhappy wretch breathing; but you have not thought fit to make a distinction between ill-fortune and guilt.

I held my peace, after having spoke these words with a most sad and mournful tone, and waited to hear what answer she'd make to them; however she only vented a few sighs. I then observ'd that she open'd her eyes twice or thrice to look at me, but shut them a moment after. Her silence was a thousand times more grievous than the most injurious expressions cou'd possibly have been. I then gaz'd upon her with so much attention, that my heart was again sensible to its former ardours; and the freedom which my reason had acquir'd a moment before, was immediately destroy'd. Grief and tears, so far from lessen-

ing her charms, seem'd, on the contrary, to heighten the lustre of 'em. I seem'd to melt away as I gaz'd upon her; and my passion, which was enflam'd by the several incidents of the night, to a surprizing degree, appear'd now to have broke all limits; and an involuntary transport forced me to cry out, Gods! must I be hated by *Cecilia*! Is it possible that the strongest proof I could give her of my esteem and love shou'd draw down her hatred upon me? This short exclamation seem'd to make a stronger impresson on her, than a long discourse had done. She turn'd about hastily towards me; and whether it were that what she was going to say was premeditated; or that she had been rous'd, as it were, by the few words abovementioned which had escap'd me; she deliver'd herself in such terms, as gave me a much higher esteem than I had ever entertain'd of her humanity and understanding. This, says she, is a very obscure exclamation, which raises my curiosity to a very great degree, and heightens the confusion I was in with regard to you, the moment that it broke from you. I recollected, sir, your whole conduct, from the time you discover'd a friendship for my father, and have compar'd it with the circumstances which have happen'd this night. Methinks I perceive a strange contradiction between your person and your behaviour; and I wish you could assist me in reconciling them. I won't conceal, says she, with an apparent air of tranquility, that my resolution is fix'd with regard to you. In case it be true, that you had a design to impose upon my father, by a specious appearance of honour and integrity; and upon me by a feign'd sincerity and honour; I shall consider you not only as a perfidious and most wicked wretch, but an abominable monster, whom we ought to fly from. But in case you are really what we thought you, how will you yet be able to persuade us that you are so, now you confess to me that you are married? when, before this, you employ'd the most sacred oaths and protestations, to persuade me of your passion, that is to say, to seduce my innocence, and make me throw up all pretensions to modesty? Alas! I will confess to my shame, that I abandon'd myself to the suggestions of my inclination, and thought myself extremely happy in being possess'd of such a lover as you. Is it possible for
you

you to be a perfidious wretch? you have, says she, weeping afresh, so tender, so amiable an air. Must I hate you, after you have so long been dear to me! Tell me therefore, what I am to think of you; for I cannot live, in case you intended to impose upon me. I was going to answer her, when she interrupted me by saying, that I must not hope to impose upon her by idle stories; that tho' she had before been so simple as to flatter herself that she was dear to me, because she then had no reason to doubt of it; she yet defied me to impose upon her hereafter; and that, in case I should employ artifice, 'twould only serve to encrease her contempt and hatred.

I was enchanted when I gaz'd upon her, but was much more so when she spoke. I had not, till now, been engag'd in a serious conversation with her, and therefore had not an opportunity of knowing the great depth of her understanding; so that this unhappy incident serv'd only to heighten my despair, as it reveal'd a thousand charms which till then I had not seen; and at the same time bereav'd me of the hopes of even enjoying the innocent pleasure of admiring them, which was the only one I had propos'd to myself at first. I saw but too plainly, that what answer soever I might make to these questions, it would be impossible for me to justify myself to her satisfaction; and on the other side, I was incapable of searching for evasions to impose upon her; and was sensible, that I could never justify myself completely, unless it had been possible for her to read in my heart. She there would have seen, that in case some frailty had escap'd me, I yet was honest in the main; and such, undoubtedly, as she desir'd I should be, in order to recover her esteem. Perhaps she'd have discover'd this, without the circumstance abovemention'd, had she consider'd that I had reveal'd my marriage to her of my own accord; and at a time when she might suppose I would not have disclos'd it to her, had I really been so vile a wretch as she imagin'd me to be. I was going to beg her to weigh this reflection, when I found it would be impossible for me to make a more solid defence; but as the words she spoke had affected me prodigiously, and that I had meditated for some time what answer it would be proper for me to make; she look'd upon my silence as a tacit confession of
my

my guilt, and was persuaded that her reproaches had quite confounded me. Upon this she rose up, when I intreated her to stay; but she frown'd upon me with the utmost indignation, and declar'd, that she would never have any thing to say to me more, nor make my house an asylum; and be assur'd, says she, that I'll go this instant, and acquaint my father what a wretch you are.

The only reason of my being so circumstantial, is, to shew, by my example, to what fatal excesses the passions may carry us. I was so struck to see her in this passion, that seeing her get to the door, and myself at too great a distance from her to keep her from going out; I drew my sword in such a transport as is inexpressible; and torn to pieces still more from the fear of losing her, than from the shame she threatned to bring me to, I cried, I would stab myself to the heart, in case she went away without hearing what I had to say. The melancholy tone with which I spoke these words, made her turn her head, just as she was going to unlock the door; when the posture I was in frighted her to such a degree, that she continued motionless for some moments. Upon this I threw myself at her feet in the place where I stood, and stretching out my arms to her; cruel *Cecilia*! says I, hear me for a moment; I conjure you to listen to me, and you shall hear the story of the most unhappy man that ever liv'd. I confess my guilt, and don't pretend to justify myself, but am sure you will not deny me your compassion: Hear me but for a moment, for I die in case you refuse to do it. *Cecilia* was too tender-hearted, not to be touch'd with my earnest entreaties; and, after continuing irresolute for a moment, she took her hand from the lock, and sat down on a chair that stood near her. You wanted to frighten me, says she, but I ought never to be so upon your account, since you have employ'd such vile artifices. But let's hear what mighty matters you have to tell me. Hearing this I drew nearer to her; and love, which had a moment before made me furious and stupid, now made me guilty of indiscretion, by prompting me to reveal what I had resolved never to discover. Alas! says I, deign only to hear me, and then see whether I deserve your hatred!

I began by acquainting her with who I was ; when I related part of the sad circumstances of my infant years. I afterwards acquainted her with most of the melancholy particulars which the reader has already heard, 'till I came to the grievous circumstances of my wife's infidelity. Tho' the incidents I related had been of a less gloomy nature, yet the air and manner in which I describ'd them, could not but in the whole be vastly affecting. She at first listned to me with greater curiosity than emotion ; but I observ'd that she seem'd to melt, in proportion as I told my sad tale, and would every now and then change colour. She would often move about in her chair, as tho' she sought for some new posture, in which she might listen to me with greater satisfaction. I saw by the heaving of her breast that she breath'd short, and sometimes a sigh should steal from her. This however was nothing, in comparison of what she seem'd to feel, when I told her of my inward agitations ; and how strongly I had combated on the side of virtue, or against grief. Her eyes wou'd then be fix'd upon me ; the various emotions of her soul were painted on her face, insomuch that she seem'd to suffer all I related. At last I came to the unhappy part of my adventures, which must naturally affect her most. I had not conceal'd from her the excellent qualities which my wife possess'd, nor the excess of passion with which I once lov'd her. Thus I confess'd to her, that I was seiz'd with the sharpest pangs when I lost her. I represented my sorrows in such lively colours, that I saw the tears stream from her eyes ; and tho' she endeavour'd to hide them from me, by wiping them as they fell, yet others would immediately gush from her eyes, so that 'twas impossible but I must see 'em. Having concluded ; such, says I, is the heart you have accused of artifice and perfidy. I believ'd it was entirely cur'd of love, and become a prey for ever, to grief. But as it is impossible for it to cease to be upright and sincere, neither can it help being tender. I saw you, lovely *Cecilia* ; I drank in love at my eyes ; and was inform'd with a stronger passion than ever I felt before. Your delightful presence banish'd all my sorrows. Delicious passion ! alas ! that alone would have made the remainder of my days happy, for my desires extended no farther. I never lost
sight

sight of the invincible obstacle which ought to suppress them, and you yourself are sensible, with how careful an eye I watch'd over 'em for some time; but is it surprising that they should go a little beyond due bounds, when I was capable of adding to the pleasure of adoring you, that of having a place in your heart; of learning it from your own mouth, and of receiving a thousand tender assurances of it? Is not every man, when he is rais'd to such felicity as I tasted, apt to swerve from the dictates of wisdom. Besides, please to recollect whether I have abused your goodness so far, as to deserve the opprobrious names with which you aspersed me? Did I not at once reveal to you the unhappy ties, which kept me from being yours? Can you reproach me with misleading you into one single error. No——I have pursued the most rigid laws of virtue and honour: I have put such a constraint upon myself, as merits your compassion and esteem, so far from deserving your hatred.

I had spent almost an hour, in relating these several adventures of my life. The agitation I had been in before, and that which I felt, during this long and passionate discourse, almost exhausted my spirits, which Miss *Cecilia* took notice of, and discover'd some uneasiness upon that account. This was the first mark she gave, that a change was wrought in her disposition. She advis'd me to take something to chear up my spirits, and I follow'd her advice. I then came up to her again, but with so sad, so desponding an air, that I had not perhaps appear'd more dejected in my greatest misfortunes. Altho' I thought myself infinitely oblig'd to her, for this testimony she gave me of her kind uneasiness, I yet did not dare to look her in the face. I lay trembling and fearful at the feet of a young girl of sixteen, as tho' I had expected from her mouth, the decision of my fate. She had too much penetration not to discover by my air and countenance, that I was vastly uneasy in my mind. Nothing is so easily discover'd as the indications of sincerity, even without the aid of experience. She was already reconcil'd to me; and was griev'd to find it would be impossible for us, to be ever join'd in the bonds of marriage. However, she did not tell me this herself, but only assum'd a more smooth and serene air, and began to discourse me with
her.

her usual affability. She ask'd me several questions with regard to my wife; what was the cause of her inconstancy; whither she was withdrawn to, and if I still had some regard for her? I answer'd these several particulars with the utmost sincerity, and we did not change the subject of our discourse, till the time was come when I had order'd *Dring* to come back again.

He came, when she herself desir'd him to whisper to my sister and niece, and acquaint them that we were in the park, and waited for them there with the utmost impatience. She had strictly enjoin'd him, not to let a soul in the house besides know any thing of our being in the tenement. You'll come back to us, says she, as soon as you've done this, and then I've something else to desire of you. *Dring* turn'd about to me, in order to know my commands, but finding I did not give him any, he went out immediately, in order to execute those of Miss *Cecilia*. He might justly be surpriz'd, that I had not once open'd my lips before him. One would have thought, that the several past circumstances, had given Miss *Cecilia* some authority over me; and that she assum'd the air of it, as much as I did that of obedience and submission. I was standing up, but she desir'd me to be seated; my hat and sword being on the ground, she bid me take 'em up, in order that my sister might not mistrust any thing. 'Tis true, indeed, that she did not discover the least pride or haughtiness, in thus ordering me to do these several particulars. She deliver'd herself as a person who is certain she is lov'd; who still loves, but is afraid of owning it; but at the same time wishes she may be thought to do so, and is not sorry to have it perceived. With regard to myself, I obey'd as much thro' shame, if I may presume to express myself in this manner, as from love. My being a husband, lessen'd me to so great a degree in my own imagination, that I thought Miss *Cecilia* might use me with what contempt she pleased, since she still suffer'd me to be so happy as to enjoy a moment of her company. I could not think any chains which she should think fit to put on me, too weighty. Such was the excess of my weakness. I was the sport of love, and of my own heart.

My

My sister and niece being come, they were vastly surpriz'd when they heard the unhappy circumstance which had oblig'd *Cecilia* to conceal herself for some time in my park. They promis'd to give her their company all day long, and to do whatever lay in their power to divert her. We agreed, that in order to conceal this matter from the servants, my sister and her daughter should pretend to want to take the air of the park sometimes; that they should lie in the hovel, and get a bed carried into it, which was enough, there being one in it already. 'T would be an easy matter for them to get provisions into it without occasioning the least suspicion. *Dring* and the two servants who were in *Paris* with my equipage, could order that affair very well, without any other assistance; and I myself had so often taken my meals there, that this would not be a new thing. Whatever else could be wanting, might be sent thither with as little difficulty. The only difficulty would be, how to keep this affair from Mrs. *Lallin* for any time; for it would be impossible for my sister not to see her, whenever she should make her a visit. We therefore concluded, that it would be absolutely necessary to let her into the secret; and the only difficulty I found in this, was, her being of the *Romish* persuasion; and consequently that she might scruple to conceal a heretick; however, I was persuaded she had too much good sense to boggle at this; and besides, I did not see it was necessary, to inform her of the real cause why Miss *Cecilia* was conceal'd. Hereupon we resolv'd to tell her only, that her father had desir'd she might be conceal'd in my house, for fear of her being carried off by a lover. Too much precaution sometimes ruins an affair. An ingenuous confession would have had a better effect upon a woman of Mrs. *Lallin's* character, than evasion and artifice; this would have engag'd her, in honour, to secrecy; whereas, not being upon her guard, because nothing of privacy had been enjoin'd her, she did more harm, thro' imprudence, to Miss *Cecilia*, than we could possibly have dreaded, had we acquainted her with the whole affair.

We sent for her immediately, for fear lest a longer delay should raise some suspicion in her mind. Being come,
we

we inform'd her of no more particulars than had been agreed upon between us. Miss *Cecilia* afterwards sent *Dring* to acquaint her father that she was nearer him than he imagin'd. We thought proper not to lie down to take a little rest, 'till he came back. But this I wanted more than any one, for all my senses were still in very great disorder. *Dring* came back, and told us, that Mr. R——, according to what was agreed upon between us, gave out that his daughter had been stole, and that he pretended to search for her every where. He added, that he approv'd very much of the change we had made in our design; and that he'd come and return me thanks in person, the very first opportunity, for the friendship I had shewn for him and his daughter. Miss *Cecilia* blush'd when this part of the story came to be related, and I was more disconcerted than she. By good fortune, I had retir'd to one end of the room with her, in order to hear the answer which *Dring* brought. But foreseeing that hereafter I should seldom have the happiness to discourse her in private, her blushes seem'd to raise my courage, and I spoke to her with greater boldness than I did an hour before. Without once mentioning the word *love*, I conjur'd her to remember that 'twas in her power to make me either happy or miserable, and that death would be less grievous to me than her hate. The tone with which I spoke these words, was as melancholy as my air and countenance. Miss *Cecilia* look'd upon me for some moments without making me any answer, as tho' she had been in doubt whether she should indulge me this favour. Nevertheless, I observ'd her eyes to look milder on a sudden, and was surpriz'd to see her stoop her head towards me, and say; poor, unfortunate man! I really pity you!—She then, after pausing a moment, said; I'll tell you however; in case you really love me, you may still be happy. Saying these words, she left me and went to the ladies.

I was not calm and unruffled enough to appear before them; for my anguish would have appear'd in my countenance, and I wanted to conceal it from every one. Upon this I went out of the room, as though I withdrew purposely to give her an opportunity of taking a little rest; and being unwilling to be seen by any of my servants, since
my;

my sister Mrs. *Lallin* knew of my return, I struck into the park, with a design of indulging myself in reflection. Those which first occur'd did not relate as they had hitherto done, to the diseases of my heart, or the disorder of my reason. Altho' I could not but be sensible of the gloomy situation of my mind, I nevertheless strove to sooth it as much as possible, I even banish'd such ideas from it with a kind of fear. Remorse and shame seem'd to wind themselves round me; as tho' they sought to enter my soul; and I on the other side seem'd to struggle perpetually to keep them back. What shall I say? I now fondled, as it were, my evils; and was grown so blind, that the remedy was more obnoxious to me than the poison.

What therefore now employ'd my whole soul, was, the obscure meaning of the last words which miss *Cecilia* spoke to me; and the tender marks of her compassion, which she bestow'd upon me as she went away. I endeavour'd to dive into the meaning of those words, but could not. I did not doubt but she still had some affection for me; nay, I was sure she had, for love is hardly ever deceiv'd. But after what had pass'd the night before, I did not find the least room to hope for the happiness with which she had endeavour'd to inspire me: if you love me, you may still be happy: these were her words! alas! love her, how faint is that expression! I rather adore her. But in case it appear'd manifest to us both that neither of us ought to procure happiness, at the expence of virtue and honour; how will it be possible for her to reconcile these jarring particulars? surely no way can be found; and therefore to hope it would be a mere illusion. In case I have any happiness to expect from her, it can be that only of seeing and loving her. Let this be the limits. I did not propose any other. Alas! says I, I ought indeed not to exceed those bounds, but do I now keep within them? and if I have already gone too far beyond them, will it now be an easy matter for me to return back to them? — This unhappy night had, indeed, wrought a surprizing change in my mind. The body must certainly have an accountable power over the soul. From the moment that I touch'd miss *Cecilia's* hands; had been alone with her; had intoxicated myself, as it were, with her
breath,

breath, and that her glances had shot into my heart; I felt a strange uneasiness whenever I was absent from her. Methought something whisper'd to me every moment, that a most essential part of myself was wanting. I was carried as it were, towards her, by something stronger than all the emotions of sympathy, and as powerful as enchantment. The bare sight of her, therefore, sooth'd my passion, but in a very faint manner: to make me happy, it was necessary that I should possess her, whom I look'd upon as my only treasure. This I cou'dn't now expect; and consequently love, which I flatter'd myself would form my felicity, cou'd henceforwards only make me wretched.

After these useless reflections I took a few hours sleep. In the evening I went to *St. Cloud*, in order to wish her highness a good journey, who was to set out the next day with the king and the whole court. His majesty pretended to undertake this journey, merely to take a view of the frontier cities of *Flanders*; but 'twas whisper'd; that a deeper design was conceal'd under this; and that a resolution had been already taken, to make war against *Holland*. 'Twas of great importance to *France*, to get *Great-Britain* on it's side; or at least that it should be neuter, whilst the *French* army was engag'd against the *Dutch*. As king *Charles II.* had a very great affection for her highness, she consequently was capable of being highly serviceable on this occasion; and 'twas known a little after, that this was the sole reason why *Lewis XIV.* insisted so much upon her accompanying him to *Flanders*. She had even promis'd king *Lewis*, that she would go over into *England*, purposely to confer with her royal brother upon that account. Without explaining the project that was upon the anvil, she hinted to me, that she wish'd king *Lewis* wou'd give her leave to cross over into *England*, and believ'd he would indulge her desires in that particular. Her highness asked me after this, whether I was willing to accompany her in the voyage? This question perplex'd me a little. I could have wish'd to go for the sake of my children, as it could be scarce possible for me to meet with a more favourable opportunity, to remove all the difficulties which might arise, with regard to the estate that was to devolve on my children: but then the reader may
guess.

guess the reason, why I had a strong inclination not to leave *France*. Accordingly I made a few random excuses to her highness, which she was so good as to allow of.

After I was come from the dutchess, I paid a visit to Mr. R —, whom I found at home; but was very sorry to find the jesuit, who was come to console Mr. R —, upon hearing that his daughter had been run away with. This zealous comforter, who was sensible that I had some affection for miss *Cecilia*, whisper'd me in the ear, and said, that he did not doubt but I was as much troubled as her father could be; and that he intended to do me the same office, as he was then indulging that gentleman. Hearing him say this, I begg'd him to delay this, at least, 'till another day. However, he was so far from being discourag'd, at my delivering these words with so cold an air; that he answer'd, he was come from *Paris* purposely to spend the night at my house; and that he had persuaded himself I would not refuse him that favour. His persisting in this manner, made me very angry: for as I had no manner of inclination to murder half the night in discoursing with him; and intending to go and visit miss *Cecilia* and her two companions, in their apartment in the park; I gave him to understand by proper innuendo's, that his visit would not be at all grateful to me that day. This jesuit was, like most of his brethren, a very subtle fellow; so that I don't doubt but he partly guess'd the reasons why I refus'd to receive him; and that this made him machinate a most detestable project, which prov'd poor *Cecilia*'s ruin. Nevertheless he affected to treat me with the utmost civility and complaisance. I then took my leave, and left him at Mr. R —'s, whom I told privately, in what manner I had dispos'd of his daughter; and the great care I had taken to prevent people from knowing where she was.

BOOK VII.

I SPENT some weeks in the uneasy situation of mind, which I just now represented. I us'd to see miss *Cecilia* several times a day, or rather I was incessantly with her, but then there was always somebody with us; for her three companions never suffer'd her to be alone, and her father and mother came so often to see her, that she very seldom had a minute to herself. Tho' the opportunity I had of seeing and conversing with her, prevented me from being engag'd in other affairs; because it would have been impossible for me to deprive myself voluntarily of her presence; I yet was not more easy upon that account. My blind desires still continued to exercise their tyranny over my heart and all my senses; and her presence must naturally heighten my wishes. I was perpetually thinking on the mysterious words by which she had endeavour'd to comfort me; and I waited, with an impatient submission, for the time when she should please to let me into their meaning. I did not dare to gratify my curiosity in this particular; besides I could not have found an opportunity to do this, as we were never together alone; and then I did not presume to communicate my thoughts in writing for fear of displeasing her. There was but one reflection only, which was sometimes capable of soothing my anguish. I consider'd that as she discover'd so much complaisance and good nature to me upon all occasions, I consequently must still have some share in her affection. Now, would I say to myself, in case she loves me, I consequently must be present to her mind; she must still pity me, and wish me happy; and in case it depends on her to make me so, she'll do all that lies in her power to create it. I therefore must leave the care of this to her, and must wait till she acquaints me how it can be obtain'd. This, certainly, was not a just way of arguing, and was the effect of fear rather than of love; for I ought to have consider'd, that a young lady of *Cecilia's* good sense, had indulg'd me a very great favour, in permitting me to entertain the least hopes, after knowing that I was married. But to confess
the

the truth, which possibly may recover me the esteem of my readers, some remains of honour and virtue were added to my fears. Uncertain with regard to the meaning of the offers which *Cecilia* had made me; and not being able to explain them, with the least shadow of reason, I trembled when it occur'd to me, that they, perhaps, might not be agreeable to the dictates of modesty. The experience I had during the first night, had taught me both her weakness and my own; for altho' she had come off victorious in that dangerous kind of combat; 'tis nevertheless certain, that her virtue had been put to the greatest trial. It might again be expos'd to the like danger; possibly I myself might wish it to be so; but this desire was a monster that did not dare to appear; which conceal'd itself in the most retir'd recesses of my heart; and which my reason would have been able to stifle, had it spoke loud enough to make itself be heard. From these several reflections it may be concluded, that I was not altogether criminal, but vastly unhappy. However, I was upon the point of being infinitely more so. The reader may prepare himself to hear a new scene of misfortunes.

Cecilia, in giving me the obscure hopes which had thrown me into such perplexity, had advanc'd nothing but what she thought it in her power to perform. But she wanted my assistance for this purpose, and was surpriz'd to see me so backward in offering it, after she had explain'd herself so far. In the time, therefore, when fearfulness or duty forc'd me to silence; she wish'd for nothing so earnestly, as to hear me ask from her, what she was so desirous of speaking to me about. She would even have doubted the constancy of my affection, finding me thus cold, as it were, had not my uninterrupted assiduity, and the passionate air with which I always approach'd her, been a strong indication of my love.

During this, I had receiv'd frequent visits from the jesuit, who was ever talking of miss *Cecilia*, and expressing the greatest sorrow whenever he mention'd her suppos'd flight. He even affected to be persuaded of the truth of it; and thereupon endeavour'd to comfort me with a very serious air, as tho' he believ'd me to be deeply afflicted. But besides the conjectures he had form'd at Mr. R—'s; so

so artful a man as he was, cou'd easily discover by my answers, that I wasn't so much affected with the loss of my mistress, as was natural for one so fond as myself to be. He therefore was more strongly confirm'd in the thought he at first entertain'd, *viz.* that this elopement was only an artifice to impose on the world; and to conceal something, the mystery whereof he could not yet dive into. As his curiolity and over-active zeal prompted him, whenever he was at my house, to observe whatever past in it; he soon discover'd that there was some change in the methods and oeconomy of it. Altho' he always heard at his coming, that I was in my solitude in the park, I yet did not receive him in it as I had always done before; for now I had ordered that word shou'd be brought to me of his being come, when I used to go and wait upon him in the great house. The ladies, particularly my sister and niece, who were always with miss *Cecilia*, never appear'd before him; so that he never saw any other woman but Mrs. *Lallin*, and she too always in the evening, when she return'd out of the park; so that, in most of his visits, he seldom saw any other person but me. This change, which perhaps was not brought about with sufficient caution, rais'd his suspicions to a very great height. He didn't doubt but I was concern'd in miss *Cecilia*'s elopement; but was perswaded that she was in my house, and that something vastly mysterious was conceal'd under this intrigue.

All that now remain'd for him to do, was to find it out. Possibly he at first guess'd the real affair; but as he did not dare to try any methods, the success whereof he was not sure of, he employ'd such an one as was infallible. Mrs. *Lallin* had made choice of him for her confessor; and he thought she could inform him of all he desir'd to know. And indeed, after having employ'd the greatest artifice, by giving her to understand that he wanted to discourse her upon an affair in which the salvation of her soul was concern'd; he ask'd her whether miss *Cecilia* was not conceal'd in my house; and whether I and the rest were not acting a religio-comical farce? Mrs. *Lallin*, who imagin'd it would be a crime to conceal the truth from her father confessor, was prodigiously puzzled. I since heard, from her own mouth, that finding she was in doubt with
regard

regard to the answer she should make, he answer'd all his scruples by the following *dilemma*. The thing, says he, you are afraid of revealing to me, either is lawful, and consequently allow'd of by the principles of our most holy religion, or it is not so. In case it is not allowable, you cannot conceal it from me without committing a deadly sin; and in case it be lawful, you may secure your peace of mind, by opening your self to your confessor; and 'tis plain you can run no risque in this, since it will be infallibly veil'd under the secrecy of confession. Hearing him say this, she answer'd all the questions he put to her. Altho' Mrs. *Lallin* didn't know the real cause why miss *Cecilia* was conceal'd in my house; he yet guess'd the real cause of it, when she told him so unlikely a tale, *viz.* that her father had her remov'd to my house, for fear that a person who had stole her away should carry her off. He was too well acquainted with whatever related to the family, not to know that miss *Cecilia* had been brought up in so recluse a manner that I must necessarily be her only lover. But he with reason suppos'd, that the *carrying off* which her father dreaded so much, was the king's order for her being confin'd in a convent. This he was more strongly persuaded of, when after having ask'd Mrs. *Lallin* a great number of questions, he at last made her confess, that I intended to return to *England* very soon; and hearing this, he no longer doubted but he had discover'd the whole mystery of the affair; and in all probability argued thus — Miss *Cecilia* is conceal'd in *Cleveland's* house; and this can be done upon no other account, than that she may thereby have an easy opportunity of quitting the kingdom, — *Cleveland* also designs to leave it; that is, he intends to convey her to *England*. — They have deferr'd their departure for some time; this is done, in order that Mr. *R* — may have time to dispose of his effects, after which they'll all set out together. — No conjectures could possibly appear more just. But then, the jesuit's penetration will not be so surprising, when the reader is told, that at this time, there were many examples of the same kind every day; multitudes of protestant families flying their country continually, in order to avoid the persecution with which they were threatned.

As the jesuit had already meditated a project, highly worthy his zeal, from the ideas which my coldness suggested, and the confusion he saw me in, when we met at Mr. R—'s; the particulars which Mrs. *Lallin* acquainted him with, made him act upon a new motive. Possibly he might have entertain'd some affection for me till that time; but he since was so offended at my conduct, that he afterwards breath'd no other sensations than those of hatred and revenge; for I cannot ascribe to any other cause, the extremes to which he immediately carried matters. Mr. R— always listned to his instructions, with so much seeming earnestness, that he did not doubt but he should at last make a convert of him; and was persuaded that he shou'd have much less trouble with his daughter. As he had done me very great service, he fancied this would make me the more willing to attend to him; and that he should thereby have, one time or other, an opportunity of bringing me over to the *Romish* persuasion. Three conquests of this importance, would have sooth'd his vanity prodigiously; for nothing was at that time more in fashion among ecclesiasticks, than charity and zeal for the conversion of their *wandring brethren*, as they then call'd the protestants. So that, as he accus'd none but me of robbing him of his hopes, and the fruit of his labour, since I had advis'd Mr. R—— to go to *England* with his family; he resolv'd to make me know, that he was not to be impos'd upon with impunity. He, however, had too much cunning, to acquaint Mrs. *Lallin* with his design; but at his taking leave of me, he waited upon the archbishop of *Paris*, whom the king had empower'd to act with an almost absolute authority, in all ecclesiastical matters. There he drew me in the most odious colours; represented me as an emissary of the church of *England*; who was come into *France*, upon no other account but to serve the protestants, and favour their flight into *England*. The archbishop, whose name was Mr. *de Perefixe*, had too much good sense to yield blindly to the impulse of the jesuit's zeal. However, he thought this too important an affair to be neglected; and thereupon he caus'd strict enquiry to be made into my character, and the motives which kept me in *France*. Some of my neighbours inform'd his

VOL. II. L lordship,

lordship, that I, indeed, did not profess any religion, but led an easy and irreproachable life; and that the dutchess of *Orleans* seem'd to have a very great esteem for me. This testimony made him suspend his resolutions, till his majesty's and her royal highness's return. His lordship only set several ecclesiastical spies of *St. Cloud* over me; whom he order'd to inform him of whatever they could hear with regard to my conduct.

Notwithstanding this, the jesuit still continued to visit me regularly; and in his conversation with Mrs. *Lallin*, he gather'd whatever might assist the vengeance he meditated. He had carried matters so far, as to advise the archbishop to confine me in the *Bastile*, and to shut miss *Cecilia* in a convent. He had even hinted to that prelate, that besides the evil I should be prevented from doing by their throwing me into prison; this would perhaps be an excellent method to procure my conversion: because, as I was vastly fond of miss *Cecilia*, I then should be prompted from a double motive, to embrace the *Romish* religion; viz the strong desire I should have to get my liberty, and the impatience of seeing a woman I ador'd. As he fancied he had gain'd so strong an ascendant over Mrs. *Lallin*, as to make her enter into his views, when they should be cloak'd under the specious appearances of religion, he communicated this last project to her. However, policy and artifice were the chief motives which prompted him thus to confide in Mrs. *Lallin*. The archbishop had declar'd, that he would not touch me, 'till his majesty and the dutchess were return'd. The jesuit was afraid of my slipping away to *England*; and his design, in thus opening himself to Mrs. *Lallin*, was, in order to engage her to give him notice of my departure. Tho' he had disguis'd his intentions in the most artful manner, he yet did not succeed according to his wishes; for his uncommon zeal raised the suspicions of his confidant; for Mrs. *Lallin* trembled when he mention'd the *Bastile* and a nunnery; and her affection for me, prevailing over every consideration, she one day came and told me all that had pass'd between the confessor and herself.

The reader may imagine that this fill'd me with the highest astonishment. You have ruin'd us, madam, says I,

I, by your indiscretion. Had you forgot what treatment we met with in *Angers* and *Saumur*? We are in a hundred times more danger in *Paris*. The dutchess is absent, and I have now no protector. These reproaches brought tears into Mrs. *Lallin's* eyes, but this was a useless remedy. I then desir'd her to repeat, even the minutest circumstances, of whatever she had heard; but these only fill'd me with the highest dread. I thereupon resolv'd to send word to Mr. R —, that I wanted to speak with him immediately, about business of the highest consequence. He came to me forthwith, when we discours'd a long time, on the danger to which his family and I were expos'd. Had it been, says he, any other time but this, I would have advis'd you not to value the jesuit's machinations; for his majesty is so just a prince, that he would not suffer a foreigner to be ill us'd! but I must confess to you, that as matters now stand, I don't see but you are in as much danger as my self. I am more griev'd, says he, upon your account than my own; for 'tis plain, that your friendship for me, and the love you have for my daughter, have brought this calamity upon you. Upon what pretence could the government seize you, but for concealing my daughter, and intending to procure our escape into *England*? 'Tis this circumstance gives me pain, and I would with pleasure give half my blood, to atone for the injury I have done you. This generous man was so affected as he spoke, that the tears trickled down his cheeks. I begg'd him to believe, that so far from repenting what I had done for his daughter; I should be very glad to do him service, tho' what I held dearest in the world, was to be the purchase of it. I cannot say whether it were the affecting tone of voice with which I spoke, or bare friendship, which prompted him to explain himself farther; but after having mus'd a moment; let us quite unbosom ourselves, says he: You love *Cecilia*; she's my only child; you are sensible that she'll be a good fortune; I therefore would advise you to marry her. This is the only means by which you can ward off the danger with which we are threatned; you cannot be punish'd for giving an asylum to a woman, whom you intended to make your wife.

Hearing these words I embrac'd him with transport, but hadn't power once to open my lips. He seem'd to be vastly surpriz'd at my silence, when I cry'd out: Dearest friend! if you know that I love *Cecilia*, how can I have the face to tell you that I'm married? — So unexpected a declaration, disconcerted him prodigiously. I suppose that he had hitherto depended upon my marrying his daughter, and that this only had prompted him to entrust her with me. I recollected that she herself had told me so. But now all my love and my misfortune tortur'd my soul in the same instant; so I cou'd not suppress a thousand passionate and melancholy complaints, which then broke from me. Mr. R—— saw but too plainly, that there was something very extraordinary in this adventure. What idea soever he till then had entertain'd of my prudence and honour, he now, in all probability, suspected the sincerity of my passion; and being afraid lest his daughter's virtue should be in danger, whom he knew had a great affection for me, he left me after we had exchange'd a few more words. We were then in one of the walks in the park, when he walk'd towards the hovel in it. I now continu'd alone, deeply involv'd in thought. As we had always been very familiar, I didn't even go after him; because he told me at his going away, that he intended to lie in my house that night.

About a quarter after I saw him coming back. The only reason why he went away so suddenly, was his uneasiness for his daughter. He went to her, in order to know from her own mouth, how matters stood between us, and to inform her, that as I was married, it would be criminal in her to receive my addresses. What he then heard fill'd him with the highest joy, which I saw plainly in his face as he approach'd me. He came up, and taking me in his arms, I won't say he, conceal from you, that I was very uneasy when I left you. You have a wife; this you told me indirectly; I knew that you lov'd my daughter, and that she return'd your passion; possibly paternal tenderness prevail'd a moment over friendship. But why didn't you let me into this secret as well as *Cecilia*? I then would have told you at once, that your misfortune may be remedied. I am even surpriz'd

surpriz'd that you are ignorant of what is generally practis'd on these occasions; and my daughter, who is not a child, has seen an example of it in our family. She told me, that she her self offer'd to inform you of it, and therefore was surpriz'd that you didn't enquire farther. I answer'd between joy and fear, that so far from receiving with coldness, some obscure words which miss *Cecilia* had dropt, they, on the contrary, had fill'd me with the highest uneasiness, and I was perpetually reflecting on them; but that as I had never been so fortunate as to guess their meaning, despair had fill'd me with fear, and prevented me from desiring her to explain them. — This, says Mr. R —, I'll do myself; but then it must be upon a double supposition; first, that you really wish to marry my daughter; and secondly, that your wife's infidelity, and her going away with another man, can be well prov'd. In this case, says he, it will be an easy matter to procure a divorce, and consequently be at liberty to marry again. The very same thing happen'd to my brother, and 'twas this *Cecilia* thought on, when she hinted a remedy. 'Tis true indeed, that neither the *Roman* laws or those of *France* allow of marrying a second wife, after a man has been divorc'd from his first; but our laws are different. All you have to do is, to address your self to the consistory of *Charenton*. Besides, being an *Englishman*, you therefore are not the king of *France*'s subject, and in case this shou'dn't succeed, you may easily obtain a divorce in *England*, where that custom prevails very much. He added, that the only difficulty wou'd be, to get certain proofs of my wife's infidelity.

Here, I want a new set of expressions, in order to describe one of the most odd situations that ever the heart of man was in. I am now going to relate an unparallel'd incident, which will fully persuade my readers, that no man ever had a turn of mind like me. Can it be imagin'd, that loving miss *Cecilia* so dearly as I did; after the strongest wishes I had form'd to have her mine, and the deep pangs I felt when I thought it was impossible for her to be so; that I yet was capable of receiving this overture of Mr. R — any other wise than with the utmost acknowledgment, and the highest transports of joy?

What was there wanting, to my heart, when every thing had been offer'd that could possibly make it happy? Hadn't I craz'd my wife from my remembrance? Didn't I hate her? Was not she a perfidious creature, who had brought me to shame, and fill'd me with sorrow; and therefore deserv'd nothing from me but hatred and contempt? However, the instant I understood what Mr. R—— was going to propose, I trembled in every limb. Every time I heard him utter the word *divorce*, I thought he tore my heart to pieces. 'Twas a bare sensation, abstracted from any idea, and I was struck dumb after he had spoke.

He then ask'd me what I thought of his proposal. This question drew me out of my lethargy, when I took his hand and squeez'd it, but without uttering a word. He imagin'd that this silence was the effect of my joy; and therefore continued to explain in what manner all difficulties might be remov'd. I had time to make several reflections as he was speaking. I admir'd what I had just before felt; but what impression it might still have left upon me, I endeavour'd to banish it entirely from my heart; by recollecting the just abhorrence I ought to have of my wife's conduct. And then I needed only but to paint miss *Cecilia's* charms in my fancy, and the delightful image immediately fill'd all my soul. Thither I directed all my attention. Mr. R—— having repeated, that the greatest difficulty would be, to get proofs of her incontinence; he ask'd me if I knew what was become of my faithless wife, and what I knew of her guilt? I answer'd, that she was retir'd to *Chaillot* under the dutchess's protection; and that my whole family were ready to attest, that she ran away with her gallant. 'Tis a happy circumstance, says he, that she is so near us. You yourself must propose to her the separation; there's no doubt but she'll consent to it at once, and by that means matters will be sooner concluded. This last proposal fill'd me with the highest uneasiness; and thereupon I desir'd Mr. R—— to do whatever he thought necessary, assuring him, (which indeed was not true) that I myself was wholly ignorant of the laws and the ordinary forms of justice.

I urg'd him to return to our rural habitation in the park, which I was not so much prompted to from the necessity

necessity I was under of reposing myself, tho' I made this the excuse; as from my unwillingness to hear a discourse, every word of which increas'd my pain. I rely, my good friend, says I, on you; and therefore would have you act as you shall think proper. I thus endeavour'd to check, by vague and random ideas, the birth of a thousand afflicting reflections, which seem'd ready to start up in my soul. I ran with the utmost haste into the room where miss *Cecilia* was, and seated myself by her. I sigh'd as I sat down, as though I had just escap'd some imminent danger; and was then just beginning to breathe, in a place where all my fears were to cease. And indeed, her presence restor'd joy to my heart, and her countenance discover'd that she herself was easy. She did not doubt, when she saw me return with her father, but that I had at last been inform'd of what she so eagerly wish'd I shou'd know. She imagin'd my mind was easy, and her's was completely so. Possibly 'twas the same reason had prompted me, so contrary to my usual custom, to go and seat myself by her in so free a manner.

Mr. R — supposing that Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister were let into all our secrets, resum'd the discourse we had held in the park. After having declar'd to his daughter before them, that I had a very great affection for her, and intended to sue for a divorce, and afterwards to marry her; he again began to speak of the methods how it might be best brought about. I now listned to him with much less distraction than I had done before. He then offered to go to *Chaillot*; and to desire my wife to consent to our divorce. I approv'd every thing he said, and thereupon he prepar'd to set out immediately. Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister were prodigiously surpriz'd at so unexpected an adventure. I observ'd that they gaz'd upon me with astonishment. They had, perhaps, perceiv'd, that I had a passion for miss *Cecilia*, but they never could have thought that it would have increas'd to such a degree, or have produced such an effect as they had just heard it had done. Nevertheless, they seem'd vastly delighted upon that account, because they were perswaded I was now at ease, a circumstance they till now despair'd of; and thereupon lavish'd their caresses upon miss *Cecilia*, whom they sup-

pos'd had wholly produced this happy change. We spent the afternoon very agreeably, till Mr. R —'s return; and I was so overjoy'd at my being with miss *Cecilia*, that I thought but very little on the business her father was gone about. He came back, and discover'd the greatest joy and satisfaction in his countenance; and I myself continued in the highest transports for some moments.

Every one was mighty eager to know what success he had met with, especially Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister, who did not know, till then, that my wife was so near us, and that I knew the place of her abode. He then told us all that had past between my wife and myself. He at first had enquir'd for her at the convent-gate, by the name of Mrs. *Cleveland*, which I told him was mine, just as he set out for *Chaillot*. Mr. R — was answer'd that there was no person of that name there. And indeed my wife had changed hers, in order to prevent her being known; it happen'd by a very odd turn of chance, that the new name she had taken, was almost the same with mine, which was *Kingsby* and hers *Ringsby*. Mr. R — found it a very difficult matter to point out the person he wanted, there being a great number of boarders in that house; and would have come to no purpose, hadn't he ask'd for an *English* lady, whom the dutchess had recommended to that convent. By this means she was known; but when word was brought her, that a person at the gate desired to speak with her, she had sent word, that she didn't receive any visits; so that Mr. R — was obliged to declare several times, that he came upon business of the greatest consequence, and therefore he must see her.

Altho' there was not any thing very affecting in this preamble, I yet cou'dn't hear it without being mov'd. Possibly I might have been less so, had Mr. R — come at once to the chief end of his commission. But now a look I cast upon miss *Cecilia* recover'd me, and I continued to listen. — At last, says Mr. R — your spouse was prevail'd on to come: I then was brought into a closet, and a moment after I saw her appear at the grate. She was dress'd in deep mourning; and appear'd with so sweet, so modest an air, that I could not help making a reflection on the treachery and injustice of nature; who frequently conceals a vicious soul under the most specious appearances

appearances of virtue. — Mrs. *Cleveland* ask'd me, with a fearful tone of voice, what I wanted with her. I answer'd, that I came from you, which immediately brought a colour into her cheeks. Observing this, I gave her time to recover herself, when I deliver'd my message in the civilest terms I possibly cou'd. Hearing this, she turn'd her eyes towards heaven; afterwards kept them shut for some time, then sigh'd and burst into tears; and at last, after I began to be uneasy at her silence, she ask'd me whether I knew the woman you intended to marry. I answer'd that I did. So do I, sir, says she, the tears streaming afresh down her cheeks; so do I. Tell therefore Mr. *Cleveland*, that I wish he may live more happily with her than he has done with me: Tell him, that I shall beg this earnestly of heaven. And since my consent only is wanting to make him happy, assure him that he has it; and only remind him, that I never in my life oppos'd his happiness. — I answer'd, continued Mr. R —, that you would undoubtedly be highly pleas'd to hear she was so pliable; and that knowing your good nature, I didn't scruple to assure her in your name, that you forgave her all that was past. She then was going to leave me; but I told her, you desired she would give her consent in writing. This she did not scruple to do, and calling for pen, ink, and paper, she writ whatever I thought fit to dictate. Here, says he, is the instrument sign'd by her. — After she had done, I my took leave of her in a very polite manner, without saying a word more.

I took the instrument into my hand, which trembled at the same time. I yet cou'd not tell what it was that agitated me in this manner, I being almost depriv'd of my reason, and could hardly either see or hear. I then turn'd my eyes towards miss *Cecilia*, I perceiv'd her; but, as tho' my heart was oppress'd on a sudden, I did not feel the secret charm, which the least glance from her eyes us'd to awake in my heart. A rock would not have felt so heavy on my bosom, as the dead weight with which it seem'd to be then loaded. I could not fetch my breath; — I don't know, says I, turning about to my sister, what's the matter with me, I am ready to faint away. Immediately they ran to fetch something, and miss *Cecilia* was

preparing to give it me; when taking up her hand eagerly, I applied it to my lips, and cry'd with a deep sigh, alas! dear *Fanny*! — I undoubtedly intended to say, dear *Cecilia*! but my imagination was so disturb'd, that it represented every thing in a confus'd manner. I continued in a kind of distraction for some time, but by the care of those about me, I at last recover'd from it.

The whole company continued silent, and seem'd to look upon me with astonishment, especially Mr. R——. I was vastly so myself, when being recover'd, I recollected what had just before happened. I fancied myself just come out of a dream; and reflecting a moment more on what it was that could possibly occasion so great a change in me, I was forced to own to myself, that I did not yet know my own heart. Tho' I was recover'd from the kind of swoon into which I was fallen, nevertheless I still felt a great weight at my stomach. I struggled with myself when I consider'd the ill effects this accident might produce. Mr. R — continued to look steadfastly at me, but without speaking a word; nor was miss *Cecilia* less surpriz'd. At last, words forc'd their way from me, when delivering myself with my usual freedom, I vented a deep sigh. Alas! says I, I am as much surpriz'd at what has just now happened to me as you can possibly be. I lov'd my faithless partner with such a passion as is beyond the power of words. What you have now seen in me, must owe its birth to some dying remains of affection which I still entertain for her. But dear friend, and lovely *Cecilia*, says I, directing myself to both father and daughter at the same time; this will give you but a more favourable idea of my heart, which sure is the most tender that ever man was inform'd with. You both know the great ascendant you have over it. You perceive in what manner I hate; judge from thence how strong my love must be!

They receiv'd my excuses in the kindest manner, and I did not perceive that their affection was lessen'd. I likewise assum'd my usual behaviour, and fell to caressing Miss *Cecilia*, when her lovely eyes awak'd all my tenderness. I then read the instrument my wife had sign'd, before her. Tho' the sight of her name written by herself, occasion'd a surprizing revolution in all my faculties, I yet
had

had the power to prevent any notice being taken of it. We then thought of proper methods for completing what was then begun. Mr. R ——— undertook to present a petition from me to the consistory. He told me, that if we met with no more difficulty, than his brother had done in an affair of the same nature, he didn't doubt but I should be his son-in-law, in less than a fortnight; and we resolv'd. that in case we should meet with any obstacle from the consistory, we then would go for *England* forthwith. One thing we were afraid of, *viz.* that the jesuit would set every engine at work to prevent our escape; but this we were forced to run the hazard of. 'Tis impossible for a whole family to leave a kingdom in one night, and carry off all their effects. 'Twas enough, in the present occasion, that I had depriv'd my enemies of the only reasonable handle they could make use of, in order to deprive me of my liberty. 'Twas very plain that I intended to marry Miss *Cecilia*; so that I cou'dn't be accus'd of having shelter'd her in my house, merely to favour heresy, in opposition to his majesty's edicts.

I was highly satisfied with this disposition of matters, and spent the rest of the day in *Cecilia's* company, with the utmost satisfaction. Nevertheless, there was something very mysterious in my heart which I cou'dn't unravel; and I found its perplexity increase, when I prepar'd myself to take some rest. The image of my wife, and the several circumstances of her discourse with Mr. R — painted themselves so strongly in my fancy, that I could not banish them. I spent part of the night, in endeavouring to drive away those melancholy ideas, which were fit only to fill me with distraction. I avoided even searching into the foundation of my thoughts, for fear of meeting with something in them, which my reason would force me to disapprove. I differ'd so much from what I was before; that instead of endeavouring to know myself, at a time when every thing appear'd dark within, and around me, I dreaded nothing so much as the pains and confusion of such an enquiry. In case any ancient philosophical lights darted upon my soul, I immediately chafed them away, for this reason, *viz.* because I had prov'd their inefficacy. With regard to my wife, I was surpriz'd that her name and the remembrance of her, were

were capable of giving me so much uneasiness; but then I also rejected with obstinacy, whatever tended to make me think favourably of her. What! an ungrateful, a perfidious, and infamous creature! No, no; she is now to expect nothing from me but hatred and horror. All my tenderness is reserv'd for my amiable *Cecilia*. She has heal'd my heart, and brought tranquility to my soul; I therefore owe myself wholly to her charms. In this manner did I go to sleep, deluded by this idea of tranquility, which I was far from possessing; and indeed my slumbers were far from peaceful, and I had a dream which will be eternally fix'd in my memory.

The vision presented my wife and Miss *Cecilia* at one and the same time to my fancy. The former in the mourning weeds in which Mr. R ——— had describ'd her, but more lovely and charming, than ever she had before appear'd; with that air of sadness, which I was told she wore at *Chaillot*. On the other side, *Cecilia* rose before me, with all her native graces and sprightliness. I fancied myself seated, and that they both were standing before me. Their glances were upon me, and fix'd me, as it were, to my chair, notwithstanding all the endeavours I used to rise up from it. My eyes wander'd over them both, with inexpressibly avidity, as attracted by two objects which my heart panted to have united. Nevertheless, every glance excited a different emotion in my soul. The languishing and afflicted air with which my wife appear'd, damp'd my heart in a surprizing manner; while at the same time, *Cecilia's* sprightly and delightful air, had almost the power to force a smile from me; but altho' a smile is always the effect of a pleasant sensation, I yet found that mine was merely superficial; and that my heart was afflicted at the bottom. This frame of mind was vastly painful to me. My desires were attracted two different ways at one and the same time. My wife's infidelity did not occur to me; for then, *Cecilia* would undoubtedly have turn'd the scale. I saw nothing but two amiable objects, which claim'd an equal share of tenderness, and rais'd the strongest emotions in my soul. In fine, I imagin'd I saw my two children leading their mother in by the hand; and as she drew nearer, methought she took up that part of my heart which *Cecilia* had fill'd before.

fore. Nevertheless, there was something bitter in the pleasure I felt, in finding her so near me. Even the very instant that I was going to embrace her, I fancied I saw tears trickle down her cheeks, and mine also. I awak'd, when I did not taste that gentle satisfaction, which remains in the heart, after a man has seen in slumbers, what he dotes so much upon when awake; so far from it, that I never rose with so much heaviness upon my spirits. I dress'd myself as fast as I could; and avoiding even to revive this importunate illusion in my imagination, I hastened to my *Cecilia*, in order to dispel the gloom which hung over my spirits.

But these moments of sorrow, were nothing in comparison of what I was to suffer a little afterward. It was usual for Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister to give my niece and the children an airing in the coach, and afterwards walk in the delightful solitude about *St. Cloud*. This custom they had discontinued ever since Miss *Cecilia* had been with us, they never stirring from her. However, they determin'd to go and amuse themselves after the same manner, the very day after Mr. R — had been with my wife. They did not tell me the reason of their going abroad, which I suppos'd was merely because they were weary of the house. They left my niece with Miss *Cecilia*; and taking my two sons, they told me they were going to take the air for a few hours. Their design in this was, in order to get a sight of my wife at *Chaillot*. They did not intend either to enquire for her at the gate, or make her a visit, but Mrs. *Lallin* being acquainted with the customs of convents, had assur'd my sister, that she wou'd not fail of seeing her in chappel, when the nuns chant vespers; and all she design'd was, to examine her features a little.

It was pretty late when they return'd home. Altho' the fair sex disguise their thoughts better than men; I yet discover'd at their coming in, that they were chagrin'd; and thereupon I ask'd them whether any thing had vex'd them. They answer'd, with coldness, that nothing had. Nevertheless, as I still kept my eyes upon them, I plainly perceiv'd that they were both deeply afflicted. I did not carry my curiosity any farther; but happening to meet with both my children, I saw their eyes were bath'd in tears.

tears. I then examin'd them together and apart, but found them persist obstinately in refusing to tell me any thing. Tho' I did not yet suspect the truth of this matter, I yet judg'd that something had happen'd which I ought to know. Accordingly, taking my sister-in-law aside, I am surpriz'd, says I, that you should scruple to tell me what has happen'd to you. You shall never persuade me that the children cry for nothing; or even that I mistook when I observ'd some change in yours and Mrs. Lallin's countenance. I am absolutely resolv'd to know what it is that troubles you. — She did not know what to do for some time; but as I still continued to urge her very much, she at last made the following confession.

You force me, says she, to relate, what will touch and affect you as much as it did us. Alas! I shall never forget what I have seen. You are to know then, that instead of taking an airing in the country, curiosity prompted us to go to *Chaillot*. We arriv'd there just as the nuns were at vespers. We went into chappel in order to get a sight of your spouse, and accordingly we saw her. She was upon her knees, in a mourning habit, as Mr. R — had described her yesterday. I knew her, though she had her back to me. I did not intend to let her see us, much less did I desire that the children should. However, I could not help staying 'till she had turn'd her head to us; designing, as soon as I had seen her face, to go away. We stood at the grate, which divides the choir from the nave or body of the chappel; and consequently, as she was at the other end of the choir, we were at a considerable distance from her. At last she turn'd her head; however, I scarce believe that she knew us at first; for altho' she discover'd some little emotion in her countenance, she yet seem'd not to know us. I was then going to lead your two sons out hastily, but the poor children knew their unfortunate mother. It would be impossible for me to describe the transports with which they were going to fly to her; not considering that the grate prevented them from doing this. Their cries, or rather groans echoed thro' the whole chappel. They thrust their arms thro' the grate; and would have call'd out upon their mother, but had lost the faculty of speech; so that they broke only into a tender and confus'd murmur,

mur, which must have soften'd the most savage hearts; but this was only the beginning of the melancholy scene. You may easily believe that their mother soon heard them. but 'tis not in the power of words to describe the impetuosity with which she flew towards them. She ran with open arms, not considering the place she was in, or the persons; and so strong were her transports, that I was afraid she would have dash'd herself to pieces against the grate. However, these violent agitations having exhausted all her spirits in an instant, she fainted in the middle of the choir. This frightened all the nuns, who immediately came up and gave her all the assistance possible. While she lay in the swoon, I endeavour'd to get the two children out of the chappel, but there was no making them stir. Their tears gush'd like rivulets from their cheeks, when they saw their mother lying on the ground; and they still continued to stretch out their arms, and strive with all their might to get thro' the grate; so that at last, the youngest fainted away at my feet.

This relation pierc'd my very heart. I was standing up, when I desir'd my sister to let me take a little breath and sit down a little. She then went on. Mrs. *Lallin* then had the child carried into the open air, in order that he might revive. As for me, I didn't stir from the eldest, who I expected would also fall in a swoon; however he did not. Your spouse being at last revived by the care and assistance of the nuns, she desir'd to be carried to the grate. 'Tis here you'd have melted, to see and hear the child and his mother. As they could not embrace one another, their mouths seem'd glued to the grate that was between them; and they repeated with a most passionate tone of voice, the tender names of mother and son. Your spouse afterwards took her child's hands, and kiss'd them a thousand times, bedewing them with her tears. As she didn't see her other son, she enquir'd very eagerly what was become of him; when I told her that he was out of order, and therefore had been carried into the air. Hearing my voice, she found that she was speaking to me. Alas! sister, says she; Is it you I see and speak to? How infinitely I am oblig'd to you for bringing my two children! Does friendship still inspire you with compassion for a wretched woman? Seeing all the nuns about her, notwithstanding the
confusion

confusion she was in, she nevertheless had the presence of mind to consider, that perhaps some words might slip from me thro' inadvertency, which it was not proper for the nuns to hear; so that without giving me time to speak, she desir'd me to retire with her children into a room, where, she said, she would come to me immediately.

I was in doubt, continued my sister, whether I should indulge her this small favour; 'twas not but I was deeply afflicted to see her take on so much, but I recollected that I was in a convent; that 'tis a kind of prison in which your two sons might, perhaps, be shut up; in fine, that it was necessary I should use the utmost precautions—I answer'd, that I was oblig'd to leave the convent immediately; that I didn't dare to stay in *Chaillot* without I had your permission for that purpose; and that I would desire your leave, to visit her another time. What! says she with a flood of tears: you refuse to give me a moment's hearing! you won't indulge me the satisfaction of embracing my children? Undoubtedly my husband must have forc'd you to be thus cruel; for alas! what harm did I ever do you, and why should you hate me? On the other side, your son begg'd me so earnestly to acquiesce with her desires, that I was upon the point of yielding. While this was doing, Mrs. *Lallin* came back with your son *Tommy*: When your spouse had no sooner set eyes upon that lady, but she fell again into a swoon. The nuns seeing the confusion this made in the church, remov'd her instantly, in order to assist her in another place. One of these entreated me to retire into a little room, where I might discourse her in private. However, the fear I was under of displeasing you, and to expose the children to the danger above-mention'd, prompted me to get into the coach, and return home forthwith. I cou'd hardly prevail with the children to come away with me, they being absolutely determin'd to stay with their mother: insomuch that I was oblig'd to threaten them I would tell you of it; but this not working upon their minds, I made the footmen force them into the coach. To comfort them I promis'd to come some other time with them to *Chaillot*; and strictly enjoin'd them not to acquaint you with what happen'd. Your footmen observ'd, says she, a man, but who he is they knew not, ride hard after us. He, at first,

first, came upon a full gallop; but when he was got near enough to know the coach, he follow'd it softly; and turn'd back his horse, as soon as we were got into the house.

My sister look'd stedfastly upon me, as she ended her relation, in expectation of her hearing me speak. I must own to you, says I, that I am prodigiously affected with what I have now heard. I know not whether it be love or compassion; but 'tis certain there is something in my heart, which still combats in my guilty wife's favour. Alas! how wretched is my fate! says I, with a deep sigh. Most men are oblig'd to struggle with themselves, in order to preserve their affection for their wives, after they have been married but a few months; whereas I am oblig'd to maintain a perpetual war in my own bosom, and yet cannot forget an infamous woman who has cover'd me with shame; and whom I ought to hate for a thousand reasons! I didn't think, says my sister, your case so deplorable; but fancied we were more obliged to miss *Cecilia*, whose charms, we suppos'd, had dispell'd your melancholy. I won't, says I, deny but that she is dear to me; and this you cannot doubt of, since I intend to marry her. She has sometimes exhibited such transports in my bosom, as, methought, I never felt before; but I must confess to you, that I am not able to describe what I feel. Figure to yourself a man who being lost, as it were, endeavours to recover himself, but cannot flatter himself with the hopes that he ever shall; and who fixes, thro' despair, upon every thing that sooths his affliction.

This is the sad image of me. I have now, sister, says I, unbosom'd myself more to you than I have done to any other person. Nature inform'd me with too tender a heart. The greatest evil that could possibly have befallen me, was the losing what I lov'd. Perhaps I should have consol'd myself by the same reason which made me lose her; had I been capable at the same time, of extinguishing the passion I have for her: but it still burns in my bosom; tho', what is a most cruel torment, I no longer possess the object of it. I languish'd for a long time, in the most violent agitations of sorrows, the extremes of which you are utterly a stranger to. This excess ought naturally to have lasted so long as life itself; and yet it lessened the moment I began to love *Cecilia*. You are sensible that
she

she is a charming creature; and, indeed I was suddenly struck with her. My heart, as I observ'd to you before, was form'd for tenderneſs; it was inflam'd with her perfections; and the return ſhe indulg'd me of her love, increas'd mine to a prodigious degree. But in caſe I judge of all I have felt hitherto for her, by what I feel the inſtant I am ſpeaking to you, and by the perplexity you ſaw me in yeſterday, I am oblig'd to confeſs, that I love her but very little; and that the paſſion which inclines me to marry her, is not ſuggeſted by me, but by another. I don't doubt but what I now ſay will appear dark to you: however don't deſire me to explain myſelf farther, for this would fill me with the utmoſt ſhame and confuſion. I even endeavour to divert my eyes from turning themſelves inward. I cannot, nor will not know myſelf.

My ſiſter was a woman of very good ſenſe. She perceiv'd that I perhaps was going to be replung'd in my former ſorrow, and conſequently ſtood in need of a ſupport. This made her make ſuch an answer as I was far from expecting, after ſhe had told me the abovementioned particulars of my wife. I gueſs, ſays ſhe, part of what you explain in ſo myſterious a manner; but continued to obſerve, that what affection ſoever I might ſtill have for my wife, as her crime was of ſuch a nature, as would not ſuffer me to indulge the leaſt hopes of our ever being reconciled, her opinion was, in caſe I thought fit to hear it; that I ought to make my court to miſs *Cecilia* more aſſiduouſly than ever, and not oppoſe the tender inclinations I had for her; that it matter'd not what it was that gave riſe to my ſoft ſenſations, ſince they were directed to a worthy object, and prov'd an agreeable amuſement; that ſhe had obſerv'd a fault in me, viz. that I refin'd too much on the nature and principle of my impulſes; that a little more ſimplicity, and leſs argumentation were neceſſary, in order to make myſelf happy; that ſhe hadn't approv'd any thing I had ſaid, ſo much as the reſolution I had taken not to ſtudy my own mind ſo much as I had done; that the uneaſineſs I complain'd of, was owing to my reflections, rather than to the natural diſpoſition of my heart; and after all, that ſhe did not think my preſent circumſtances ſo very unhappy: that, indeed, I had loſt a wife whom I lov'd to diſtraction; but then, that 'twas

a great happiness I had rid myself of her, since she was so unworthy of my esteem; that I was very happy in being so dear to miss *Cecilia*; that therefore I ought to think of her only; and be assur'd, that all my past afflictions would be remov'd, when once I was possess'd of *Cecilia*, especially when we were got safe to *England*. — Altho' I approv'd part of this advice, and was resolv'd to follow it, it yet was not capable of charming my anxiety. At her leaving me, she ask'd whether I should approve of her going to *Chaillot* again? I answer'd, that she might do as she pleas'd.

The next day in the afternoon, word was brought me that a clergyman was in the parlour, who enquir'd for me by the name of *Cleveland*. Altho' I was surpriz'd to hear a person ask for me by that name, I yet order'd him to be brought in. He told me that he was chaplain to the convent of *Chaillot*; and that my wife, having experienc'd his probity and discretion, had not scrupled to let him into our whole story; and that she had begg'd him to conjure me, by all that was holy, to let her have the satisfaction of seeing and embracing her children; that she might, indeed, cease to be my wife, but that it was impossible for her not to be their mother; that she waited with inexpressible eagerness to see them; that she wish'd I might be as happy with my bride, as I cou'd wish to be, and that she wou'd do all that ever lay in her power to promote my felicity; that in consequence of this she would never trouble me by her presence or reproaches; but that, in return for the implicit submission she had always paid to my will, she begg'd me upon her knees, not to deny her the satisfaction of seeing her two children. — That as for her having ask'd for me by the name of *Cleveland*, this ought not to give me the least uneasiness; that my wife having appointed a person to follow my coach, a little after she was recover'd from her swoon, which had prevented her from asking Mrs. *Bridge* where I liv'd; the footman whom she had sent after us, had told it her; but not knowing I chang'd my name, she therefore had me enquir'd for by my real one; and that he had not heard any where but in my own parlour, that I did not care to pass for
Oliver's

Oliver's son, a circumstance he promis'd not to reveal to any person.

After he had ended this discourse, in the most polite and affable manner, he assum'd a graver air, and as his words had struck me so far, that I was oblig'd to meditate a moment, on the answer it would be proper for me to make him; he had time to anticipate it. This, sir, says he, is what your wife desir'd me to tell you: I have only repeated her own words, pursuant to the urgent orders she gave me. But now I have declared her desire, give me leave to explain my self with the liberty, which the character I am invested with allows me. Cou'd one possibly believe, that so wise, so good natur'd a man as you have always appear'd to be, according even to your wife's description, could have taken so unaccountable a resolution, as that you are going to execute? I am sensible that a man of good sense may sometimes be deluded by an irregular passion; and may for some time swerve from his duty. But then, to pass all bounds to break the most sacred of all ties; to renounce all virtue and justice, is what can never be perpetrated but by a man whose heart is corrupted very much; and consequently all this in a man of your character is incomprehensible. I know you only, as I before observ'd, from the character which your lady gave me of you. I find, that notwithstanding the just reason she has to complain of you, she yet does justice to your merit. I am justly persuaded that you are a very deserving gentleman; the testimony she gives you, is the highest panegyric on you both. But what use do you make of it? Where is your good nature, when you abandon a woman that adores you; and whose excellent sense, virtue, mildness, heighten'd by a thousand natural graces, ought to have bound you eternally to her? Where is your wisdom and judgment, when you prefer a woman to her, who has no other merit but what your passion bestows upon her? This I judge from my own eyes. I saw her yesterday in *Chaillot*. Heavens! how wide is the difference between her, and the person for whom you abandon her? In fine, what honour have you, when, notwithstanding your good sense, you yet make your self a slave to a shameful passion,

passion, and expose your self to the raillery of all who know you?

I was for interrupting this injurious harangue, which appear'd to me equally irrational and impolite. But he went on with the same warmth.— But a moment or two more, sir, says he, I have but a word or two to say, and as 'tis not probable, that I shall have an opportunity of seeing you often, I shall enjoy this satisfaction, *viz.* that I have done my duty; and left such hints with you, as are worthy of being consider'd. Hitherto, I have only taken notice of such particulars in your conduct, as are repugnant to reason and moral honesty; but d'ye think it does not interfere equally with conscience and religion? By what right, and upon what pretence, do you think to dissolve the holy ties of marriage? I don't know what religion you profess; but are the laws of any so detestable, to authorize the violation of an oath, when your wife has kept strictly to hers? I am sensible that she was so weak as to sign an instrument of divorce, which I told her she ought not to have done. The only answer, she made, was, that she did it in consequence of the resolution she had made, to prove to you, so long as she lives (by her obedience and submission) that she does not deserve the treatment she has met with from you. 'Tis plain, that this excess of good nature does not justify her. But you are infinitely more unjust, for thus presuming to plunge your self into guilt, without the least shadow of reason, except it be that of a wild, abominable passion. This, sir, added he, is what I thought my self oblig'd to tell you for Mrs. *Cleveland's* sake; and as we are alone, I imagin'd it wou'dn't be impertinence in me. I have, indeed, deliver'd myself with the utmost freedom, and wish it may produce a happy effect. All that remains, is, for you to acquaint me with your will and pleasure, with regard to the principal affair which engag'd me to trouble you with a visit.

Notwithstanding I was highly shock'd at what he said; and that considering how affairs stood between my wife and me, it was natural for me to look upon all he had spoke, as very injurious and absurd: I nevertheless should have argued upon several particulars he had mention'd to me,
had

had they been utter'd to me by any person but an ecclesiastick: but the remembrance of what had so lately past between myself and the jesuit, raised the strongest suspicions in my mind. Notwithstanding my perplexity, I yet was so much master of my temper, as to content myself with answering the chaplain, that I would pardon him for employing so many invectives; that in case he was so much in my wife's confidence, as he declar'd himself to be; he ought to accuse her for having given him but a very imperfect account of matters, which consequently shew'd but little esteem and confidence; that in case she would open herself more, she cou'd inform him of such circumstances, as wou'd very much lessen what he call'd his zeal; and plainly shew him that my conduct was more honourable, rational and religious than he suppos'd it to be. As to the request with regard to my children, I promis'd to send them sometimes to *Chaillot*; not being so unreasonable as to deny them the satisfaction of seeing their mother sometimes. He desir'd the favour to see and embrace them, in the name of the person who had sent him, which I immediately granted.

It was impossible for me to banish the reflections which occur'd after he was gone. I recollected, involuntarily as it were, the most insignificant expression in his discourse and my answers. The only point I imagin'd I had clearly discover'd, among the several obscure reproaches he had made me, was, the character of the lady I intended to marry. I did not doubt but this woman, whose merit he declar'd to be so vastly inferior to that of my wife; and whom he said he had seen at *Chaillot*, was Mrs. *Lallin*, who, in all probability, my wife imagin'd I was going to marry. I cou'dn't but smile at the mistake. But as what the chaplain added afterwards was a mystery to me, all I concluded, was, that this was wholly an artifice of my wife's; who, in order to preserve her reputation in the convent, endeavour'd to disguise her ill conduct, and to throw the whole blame of our separation upon me. 'Tho' 'twas but natural that she should act in this manner, after having been so vile as I suppos'd her, I yet was highly offended with her upon that account. However, this reflection lessen'd the uneasiness I before felt upon my wife's account. What lengths,

lengths, would I say to myself, won't that woman go, who has violated her conjugal fidelity! One crime draws many after it. My wife was upright, sincere, and incapable of dissembling; and now she is the very reverse. She has dishonour'd herself in a most scandalous manner, and yet she would be look'd upon as innocent. Perfidious woman! who would have believ'd that so vile a heart lodg'd in thy breast! By what indications shall we henceforward know, that a woman is modest, sincere, tender and virtuous? After having made these reflections, I return'd to the park, in order to sooth my mind as usual, in the company of dear *Cecilia*. The impression I still retain'd of what now happen'd, made me vent a deep sigh as I enter'd the room where she was. That amiable creature undoubtedly saw into the tumults of my soul, and in all probability guess'd the cause of them; but then she was convinced that I lov'd her dearly, and she herself was passionately fond of me. She receiv'd me as an endearing but sick lover, who stood in need of her tenderness and indulgence. She would sometimes look upon me with a troubled and languishing air: on which occasion I could read in her eyes, all the tender impulses of her soul; and strengthened, in some measure, by the testimony she gave of her compassion. I thank'd her kindly for it, as being so well adapted to check the violence of my disease.

While these things were doing, Mr. R ——— was labouring incessantly to procure a divorce for me. This he had propos'd to the consistory at *Charenton*; and notwithstanding the protestants were treated with so much severity in *France*, as to be daily dispossest of one or more of their privileges; he yet had found so much credit with the elders, as to prevail over their fears, and make them consent to receive my petition. The day was even appointed, for receiving the depositions of the witnesses. My sister-in-law, her daughter, Mrs. *Lallin*, and my head servants, were to be examin'd by the commissioners, and after such unanimous and positive depositions, it was suppos'd that a divorce wou'd be immediately granted. 'Twas undoubtedly heaven which put a stop to this blind project. at a time when one would have imagin'd, nothing could have prevented its being put in execution.

cution. I myself wish'd to have it soon ended; not but that I was always tortur'd with uneasinesses and fears, which a person of a fearful mind wou'd, perhaps, have look'd upon as so many bad omens; but I was persuaded, agreeable to my sister's motion, that nothing could dispel the gloom with which my mind was clouded, but my marriage with *Cecilia*. Besides, her charms continued to have the same power on my soul; or that in case, as I had observ'd to my sister, it were possible this lovely creature had not inspir'd me with love; I yet was sensible to all the transports of a genuine passion.

But now the day appointed by the consistory for hearing the depositions of the several witnesses was come. The morning of this fatal day, word was brought me, that a canon of *St. Cloud*, whose name was *Audiger*, with whom I was a little acquainted, desir'd very earnestly to speak with me; and that he had an unknown person along with him, who appear'd to be no less urgent to see me. I was alone in my room, sitting on a couch, where I was revolving with sorrow the several particulars which were to be transacted that afternoon; and this reflection having increas'd my habitual melancholy, ever since the morning; I order'd my servants to deny me to every body. Nevertheless, having some respect for Mr. *Audiger*, he being a man of excellent sense, and a person of great merit, I bid the servant introduce him to me in the room where I then was. Accordingly he was brought in with the unknown person. Excuse, Sir, says he to me, my being so troublesome; I should not have insisted upon seeing you, after I found by some words that your servant dropt, that you were determin'd not to have any person admitted to you; but I had promis'd, at the request of an intimate friend of mine, to introduce this gentleman to you, who has affairs of very great consequence to communicate to you; I then desir'd them to sit down, when I call'd to mind, that I had seen this stranger somewhere: but a handkerchief which he held before his mouth, as tho' he had got the tooth-ach; and a large perriwig which hid a great part of his face, prevented me from immediately recollecting who he was. Besides, I should have been equally astonish'd, had he not disguis'd himself in this manner; and could scarce have believ'd, that a wretch whom

whom I suppos'd to be dead; and who, for a thousand reasons, ought to have shun'd my presence in case he were living; cou'd appear before me with so much seeming tranquility of mind, at a time when I so little expected him.

As soon as he was seated, he discover'd his face to me, when I presently knew him. Nevertheless, the improbability of his being the person I took him for; and the vast surprize which the sight of him threw me into, made me still doubtful for a moment. A thousand tumultuous emotions were rising in my soul, when he himself declared who he was. Your eyes, says he to me in *English* (in order that the canon might not understand him) were not mistaken; I am *Gelin*. I disguis'd myself in this manner, in order to get myself introduc'd to you, undiscover'd by your family. I beg therefore that we may talk matters over calmly; and in case you are a man of honour, you won't suffer me to be insulted under your roof. You hate me, says he, with a resolute tone of voice; a circumstance I don't wonder at; for I have done all that lay in my power to incur your hatred; and, indeed, I am not come hither with a design of suing for your friendship; I now appear before you, only to complete the measure of my iniquity. I seduc'd your wife, murder'd your brother my good friend, and am now resolv'd either to take away your life, or lose my own; and therefore enjoin you to meet me sword in hand, and to appoint the time and place.

These furious words check'd the mark of astonishment which I undoubtedly discover'd when he first appear'd before me; but now I was so strongly inflam'd with rage, that I was going to rush from my seat, and punish him for his abominable crimes. Nevertheless, after a moment's reflection, I consider'd that as I was unarm'd, I very easily might come off by the worst. Nor was there need of deliberating on his challenge, for neither honour or reason would permit of my accepting it; and I consider'd that I ought to deliver him into the hands of the magistrate, whose business it was to punish him for his horrid villany. All the difficulty was, how to get this infamous wretch seiz'd; for I did not doubt but he had pistols about him for his own security, besides a long

sword which he seem'd to wear merely for show sake. I continu'd silent for some moments, revolving how I might best seize upon him; and considering what could be the reason why he should desire to take away my life. His impatient fury discover'd itself in all his motions; when he urg'd me to give him an answer; advising me, with malicious raillery, to accept of his challenge, both for my own security and honour. At last I was determin'd; and how greatly soever I might always abhor artifice, I yet resolv'd to make use of it upon this occasion. I told him, in order that he might explain himself farther, that I cou'd not think of any reason he cou'd have to hate me, and that any other man but he would have look'd upon me with another eye, after the high injury he had done me, and the many favours I had indulg'd him; however, that I accepted of the opportunity he gave me of punishing all his crimes; and that I would not suffer him to escape; but that in order to keep my servants from suspecting any thing, it would be necessary for us, as he had desir'd at his coming in, not to make the least noise, but to assume an unruffled countenance. I ask'd him whether Mr. *Audiger* knew any thing of the business he was come about? he assur'd me he did not, upon which I invited them both to breakfast with me, and they accepted of my invitation.

I thereupon call'd one of my servants, whom I immediately order'd to prepare breakfast. I had advanc'd so far towards the door, that I had an opportunity of whispering to my servant that I wanted help; and that my life was in danger, in case I was not favour'd with immediate succour; and therefore I bid him order all the servants to come up well arm'd. Such an order as this, which possibly might be given with an air of confusion, could not but alarm the whole family in an instant. My servants were dispers'd up and down; and the hurry of getting them together was so great, that those in the park had notice of it. The ladies heard the danger I was in; and their affection increasing the fear with which they were seiz'd, they imagin'd that I had been assassinated. *Cecilia* trembled most for my life; and thereby forgot, that it was of the highest consequence, not to let it be known that she was in my house. She ran, with the
women

women after her, and got to the stair foot before the servants were come with their weapons. *Gelin* had, perhaps, mistrusted something upon seeing me whisper the footman; but hearing a noise, and hearing Miss *Cecilia* call aloud for me, he did not doubt but I intended to seize him. Immediately he was fir'd with rage, when he drew his sword as quick as lightning, and made a thrust at me. However, I had the good fortune to parry it; but as I rose from my chair in order to lay hold of him; he threw me on the couch which stood just by, and run his sword twice thro' my body; so that I now lay on my back, the blood streaming from my body. The canon, who, perhaps, had endeavour'd to seize upon the assassin, but miss'd him twice, catch'd hold of his arm just as he was going to make the third thrust. The sword fell to the ground, and rol'd to some distance from the bed; which *Gelin* seeing, he did not offer to take it up, but pulling a brace of pistols out of his pocket, he presented them, and endeavour'd to run down stairs.

The reader may suppose, that all I have just now related was done in an instant. *Cecilia* was got very near to the door, when *Gelin* push'd her with so much violence, that he had like to have thrown her down; but recovering herself, she came into my room, the tears gushing from her eyes. Here the first thing she saw, was *Gelin*'s sword all bloody. She laid hold of it, when not doubting, but that the canon who stood by the bed side, and was assisting me, had contributed to my death, or was killing me; she advanced towards him with the point, in order to run him thro' the body. I don't know how he came to be so happy as to escape her, but he turn'd about so suddenly, that at the first push, the sword only run thro' his gown; but she still continued to thrust at him, and he was so fortunate as to ward them all. As I still had all my senses about me, I begg'd her in a faint voice to spare him, but this seem'd only to exasperate her the more. However, by good luck for the canon, some of the servants came to his succour. *Dring* was at their head, who had seiz'd *Gelin* notwithstanding the great resistance he made. That villain, seeing nine or ten men arm'd at the bottom of the stairs, had threatned to shoot the first man through the head, who should presume to

stop him. But *Dring* who was a very bold man, made him no manner of answer, but running to him, and presenting a pistol, bid him lay down his; which disconcerted *Gelin* to such a degree, that he suffer'd himself to be seiz'd. After this he was very easily disarm'd, and four of my servants held him fast.

Dring was surpriz'd at his coming into the room, to see Miss *Cecilia* running at Mr. *Audiger*; and seeing me wounded and stretch'd on the bed, he also imagin'd that the good canon was one of the assassins; and so far from endeavouring to assist him, methought I could see by his uncertainty, that he would have been glad to have seen him punish'd by the hands of a woman; and indeed, had he really been guilty, no kind of punishment would have suited better for an ecclesiastick. I thereupon bid them take the sword out of *Cecilia's* hand, which she deliver'd at once, and coming up to me, gave me the fondest marks of her affliction. My sister, Mrs. *Lallin*, and my niece came in at the same time, and began to view my wounds. Immediately a surgeon was sent for from *St. Cloud*, who being come, and probing my wounds, found they were both dangerous, but could not say whether they were mortal. What, however, gave him the best hopes, was, to find me so calm and easy, notwithstanding I had lost so much blood.

The sending for the surgeon from *St. Cloud*, prov'd of fatal consequence to the assassin. I had given orders for his being secur'd very carefully, intending to have him brought into my room, as soon as my wounds should be dress'd; and to ask him the reasons, why he had perpetrated so horrid a crime. But the footman who was sent to *St. Cloud*, not having been order'd to keep the affair a secret, had told it to every body. Soon after this it got to the ears of the chief magistrate of the place; who immediately sent their officers, and these took him from my house, and carried him to prison. My wounds were dressing at that time; and as the people about us, were not willing to give me the least uneasiness in the condition I was in; they therefore didn't take a word of notice to me about it. However, I did not approve of what they had done, when I was told that the wretch had been carried to prison; for besides, that I should have had the
generosity

generosity to forgive him; I found myself frustrated by this means, of knowing what had prompted him to commit this wicked deed. Mr. *Audiger*, who was now reconcil'd with Miss *Cecilia*, and of whom I ask'd several particulars with regard to this sad incident; protested to me that he had never seen *Gelin* before that day; and that he had brought him merely at the request of the chaplain of *Chaillot*; who had desir'd that favour of him by letter. This recommendation certainly shew'd, that my wife still kept up a correspondence with *Gelin*; but altho' I could not ascribe her professing, notwithstanding this, to lead a holy life, to any thing but the most detestable hypocrisy; I yet could not carry my suspicions so far, as to think she had any hand in, or the least knowledge of, the barbarous action I have just now related. She, in that case, did I say, could not be a woman, but a detestable monster and fury. I thereupon endeavour'd to banish this thought, as tho' it would have been criminal in one to entertain it. It had even made me shudder, in a manner, the first time it occur'd to my imagination. Nevertheless it would still present itself, tho' I did my utmost to keep it out. My sister took notice that I was very uneasy at something, which made her ask me what it was? — What construction, says I, can you put on *Gelin's* correspondence with the chaplain of *Chaillot*? Is it possible that my wife cou'd be so base? — I did not dare to go on; but my sister knew what I hinted at; she threw her eyes on the ground, and did not dare to make a word of answer; upon which I desir'd her to speak her thoughts. This she at last did, but with the utmost reluctance, when she confess'd to me, that Mrs. *Lallin*, *Cecilia*, and herself, had the same apprehension as I, since they had heard the particulars Mr. *Audiger* related. This cruel confirmation of a doubt, which I at first look'd upon as a crime. made a mortal impression on my heart. I felt the tears, as tho' they had been of fire, run down my cheeks. Heaven! says I, thou now compleatest the measure of my woe. Barbarous *Fanny*! alas! what have I done? All that is wanting to complete thy pleasure and thy iniquity, is, to stab my heart! *Cecilia* was present, who, so far from being offended at my complaints, I plainly saw by her eyes, that they affected her prodigiously:

Alas ! *Ceciliz*, says I, looking mournfully at her ; your kindness only can give me consolation. I should hate life, which the treacherous *Gelin* and my more cruel wife, endeavour'd to deprive me of, had I not the sweet assurance of leading a most delicious one with you.

Her father, who had got that day nominated for the commissioners to meet, and to take the depositions of the witnesses, arriv'd early in the morning at *Charenton* ; but was very much surpriz'd not to see my family there, at the hour appointed ; and therefore he came to my house at night, when he heard the fatal accidents which had happen'd. In his passion, he resolv'd to have *Gelin* prosecuted with the greatest rigour ; and to trace the horrid action he had committed as far as possible, in order to discover all his accomplices. I endeavour'd to soften his rage, by telling him that I dreaded too much to know, what I desir'd to be for ever ignorant of. Besides, says I, consider that it affects my honour. Wou'd you advise me to blaze my own shame, and by that means, perhaps, make my infamous wife die by the hands of the common executioner ? She does not, indeed deserve a better fate ; but then, I ought to sacrifice my own resentments to her father's memory ; to my own honour, and even yours, since you have consented that I should marry your daughter. I therefore, says I, approve so little of your advice, that I on the contrary, entreat you to employ your credit and that of your friends, to stop *Gelin's* prosecution, and to save him, tho' he is so unworthy to live. 'Twas upon this account I so earnestly desir'd to speak with you. The dutchess of *Orleans* is daily expected, only prevail with the judges to delay the prosecution 'till she is come, and I don't doubt but her highness will indulge me in whatever favour I shall ask. Mr. R — approv'd of these reasons ; and going to *St. Cloud*, he got the prosecution postpon'd 'till the dutchess's return ; but cou'd not so easily be admitted to see *Gelin* in prison. I had desir'd him to request this favour of the judges ; and to do all that lay in his power, to make *Gelin* confess ; but he was not permitted to see him. However, I was very well satisfied with the favour he had obtain'd ; and to hear from him that the dutchess would come before 'twas long ; being the greatest part of her baggage arriv'd at the palace.

And,

And indeed, she came two days after, with the whole court. This we knew by the ringing of the bells, and other testimonies of publick joy; for this excellent princess was so universally belov'd, that every one was extremely sorry, when she was absent. Pleasures were never tasted but when she was present; but alas! she was to taste but few more in this world, for her life was now drawing to a period. How frail is human grandeur! In the bloom of youth, but one remove from the throne, in the midst of delights, and a profusion of all things that can make life delicious; she was a few days after this, to see all these things torn from her; and serve as an example to those who lay too much stress on the advantages of high birth and riches. Her return was not only fatal to herself, for *Cecilia* was included in the same sad decree, which snatch'd her out of the world; and if this illustrious princess serv'd as a *memento* to those who are too fond of the fading glories of this world; *Cecilia*, was a dreadful one to all such as set too high a value on the lovely gifts of nature, and the charms of beauty. I only, who, for so many years had been the sport of fortune; after having past thro' a series of calamities, was destin'd, at a time when I least expected it, to be happy beyond imagination. But then I was doom'd to a long course of suffering, before I cou'd attain to this felicity; and, pursuant to the usual course of my fate, my bliss was to cost me dear, after possessing it but a few moments.

B O O K VIII.

THE tragical death of the dutchess of *Orleans*, threw the whole kingdom into the deepest affliction. This is not saying enough, all *Europe* mourned on that occasion, and I may justly affirm, that no one was more griev'd upon that account, than my self. This princess had been long at variance with her consort, occasion'd by the *Chevalier de Lorain*, whose history is so well known, that I need not take notice of it in this place. Fame added, that this domestic misunderstanding was greatly increas'd, by the frequent visits the *French King* paid his

sister-in-law. The duke of *Orleans*, tho' of a feeble constitution, was yet animated with very strong passions, so that he grew jealous of her; and the voyage which her Grace his consort had made just before to *England*, in order to have an interview in that country with King *Charles* and the duke of *York* her brothers, very much heightned the fatal suspicions of her husband. Her bloom of youth, and her exquisite beauty, were circumstances no ways adapted to weaken the impression they made. Nevertheless, the only design of this voyage, notwithstanding the mysterious constructions which were put upon it, was to strengthen the interest of *France* by its uniting with *England*; and accordingly a treaty was concluded between the two crowns, which declared war against the united provinces. But what is not jealousy capable of! This disease, all the symptoms of which are so furious, rouses every faculty of the soul, and prepares it for the blackest designs, and the most enormous crimes. It eclipses the judgment, or at least darkens it very much. It disguises every object; represents innocence and virtue under the image of guilt and deceit; and the most virtuous conduct passes for infidelity. Is not this assertion prov'd by the surprizing change this silly passion wrought in the heart of the unhappy *Fanny*? 'Twas on such foundations as these the publick did not doubt but that the too amiable dutchess of *Orleans* had been poison'd. This is said to have occasion'd her death; but surely nothing can be more unjust, than to affirm things the truth of which we know but imperfectly.

All I can say on this occasion is, that her Grace's sudden death depriv'd me of the only protection I could boast of in that court. The jesuit, whose visits I had admitted, merely out of respect to that princess, had now no further obstacle left, to prevent his executing the vengeance he meditated. 'Twas indeed a very cruel one, but then it produced a felicity I should never have enjoy'd, had it not been for an unforeseen accident.

The wounds which the perfidious *Gelin* had given me, were not mortal; and as I was in the hands of a very able surgeon, I did not doubt of a speedy cure. Mr. *de R.* had not laid aside his design of getting me divorc'd from

Fanny,

Fanny, in order that I might be united with his lovely daughter; but had disposed every thing with so much diligence and success, that my recovery was the only circumstance wanting to compleat this important affair, so strongly desired by all parties. However, the jesuit had like to have quite put a stop to it. As the society, of which he was a member, were all-powerful at that time, it was not difficult for him to get an order from court, to force away *Cecilia*, and throw her into a convent. The principles both of his morality and religion bore a great affinity to the blackest crimes: Accordingly, he was impowered to carry her off, and commanded to undertake the entire conversion of his pretended proselyte. The jesuit had had time sufficient to form his several projects. We now began not to be so reserv'd, with regard to the retirement of Mademoiselle R; nor was it any longer a secret in my family; so that he might very easily rob me of the object my soul so dearly priz'd, in order to sacrifice it to his brutal desires. He still frequented my house; and the unhappy accident which had befallen me, serv'd as a specious pretence to his importunities. Now, since I consider'd him as the man, to whose good offices I was oblig'd for the passion *Cecilia* had for me; could I ever suspect he would have been guilty of the abominable action I am going to relate?

One day, after having discours'd an hour with me, he left me abruptly; struck into the embower'd part of my garden, and there, very unfortunately for me, met with the charming *Cecilia*. His design was to carry her off privately, for which he now had but too favourable an opportunity. Accordingly he ran up to her before she had time to escape, and began to sooth her with soft, insinuating words. He address'd himself in such a manner, as gave her to understand, that I was privy to this opportunity he had taken to meet and converse with her. He then congratulated her on the intended marriage, and wished her all the joy and felicity that state can possibly give. He was so profound a hypocrite, as to offer her all the service in his power; and, continuing to entertain her with soft, insinuating words, he led her to an outlet of the park, where some persons,

completely arm'd, with a coach attending them, waited for him. This innocent victim having suffer'd herself to be conducted to the place of sacrifice ; and seeing four persons come forward very fast, whose design was but too obvious ; Heavens ! cried she, I am betray'd. She then endeavour'd to fly back to my house, but the villain catch'd hold of her ; gave her up to his ruffians ; and these thrusting her into the coach, they all went off immediately.

A servant happen'd to be spectator of this sad scene, who thereupon returned back ; with the utmost speed, to alarm the family. The moment Mr. *de R.* heard the news, he fell into a dreadful passion, and did not consider the danger to which he was going to expose himself. Immediately he began to rail at the clergy in general ; and was so greatly exasperated, that he did not spare the pope himself. He resolv'd to pursue the ravisher of his daughter that instant ; however, I represented to him, but to no purpose, that in an affair of so much consequence, he ought to take such resolutions only as were the result of wisdom and prudence ; that certainly the jesuit had not attempted so bold an action without an order from the higher powers : That the best thing he could do would be, to address the King ; to employ all his credit with his friends, in order to get his daughter restor'd to him. I observ'd further, that I was as great a loser on this occasion as himself, but that it would be impossible for me, (in the deep affliction with which I was seiz'd) to assist him. However, that heaven would not abandon our just cause, but would revenge it on the jesuit, whose treachery or false zeal had prompted him to commit so detestable an action. I added the King is so gracious, that he will not fail to do us justice, of which I have had the strongest testimonies. in my adventures of *Saumur* and *Angers*. We are so near the court, that I would advise you to go this moment and throw your self at his majesty's feet.

In giving him this advice, in the view of soothing his sorrows, I put the utmost constraint upon my self ; for alas ! I lost what, at that time, form'd my greatest felicity. I lost the lovely *Cecilia* whose exquisite charms had often calm'd the remembrance of my former misfortunes.

fortunes. *Cecilia* ! my adorable *Cecilia* ! I lose thee ; thou who wert to compleat my happiness . . . What tortures did I not feel ! and yet, I did all that lay in my power to appear easy and undisturb'd. Heaven ! thou only knowest the cruel pangs this cost me.

Nevertheless, Mr. *de R.* imagining, that the tranquillity I affected was a proof of my indifference, reproached me in the severest terms upon that account, and thereupon, mounting his horse in a very abrupt manner, attended by one servant only, and but indifferently arm'd, he rode after the jesuit. He came up with him the next day, when drawing out a pistol, he flew towards the russians who guarded the coach, and laid one of them dead upon the spot. The russians upon this charg'd him in their turn, and immediately shot him. His servant, who also had received several wounds, seeing this, return'd back, but with the utmost difficulty, to acquaint us with the sad news. I very possibly might have met the same fate, had my wounds, which grief had inflam'd, suffer'd me to follow Mr. *de R.* in order to rescue my dear, too lovely *Cecilia*.

Severe law ! cruel necessity ! I now had no hopes of consolation left. The absence of my *Cecilia*, and the death of her father, threw me into inexpressible agonies. She was as dear to me as my soul, and I was no less dear to her. These sad, these dreadful scenes call'd up a numberless multitude of gloomy images in my soul. *Gelin's* prosecution increas'd my woes. I was firmly persuaded, that his depositions, before the magistrates of *St. Cloud*, would make me appear infamous to the whole kingdom. Heavens ! how dreadful was the situation I was then in.

Audiger, the canon, who had introduced the infamous *Gelin* into my family, was of service to me, in the design I had to discover the state of this affair. He only was present when that villain assassinated me, and was oblig'd to give an account of it to the magistrates. The esteem he had gain'd, and his intimacy with the principal of these, made me resolve to employ him, in order to discover what *Gelin* had depos'd with regard to the carrying off of *Fanny*. This the canon could easily do, and he told me, (but how great was my astonishment at what

what I heard!) that the wretch having confessed his crimes without the least disguise, had declar'd, that neither his prayers nor menaces, were able to engage the dear, unhappy *Fanny* to satiate his impure desires. Words can never express the tumults which this news rais'd in my soul. In an instant, I forgot the once-ador'd *Cecilia*; I forgot her father, and thought of nothing but my dear, dear unhappy wife. She alone employ'd every faculty of my soul. What the reader has read on this subject in the preceding volume, shows clearly, that my tenderness was only suspended; and that I in vain endeavoured to suppress the passion for her, which was still conceal'd in my breast. I sought for reasons to strengthen the deposition of *Gelin*, and secure to my self the virtue of my *Fanny*. She, would I say to my self, lov'd me too well, and is sprung from too virtuous parents, ever to deceive me. Her sentiments were all so pure, so chaste, that I have not the least grounds to suspect her of infidelity. Her withdrawing to *Chaillot* is a strong testimony of her innocence.... No! cried I the same instant; she's guilty. The infamous creature has betray'd me. She forsakes me, merely to give her self up to the embraces of the most wicked of men! she forsakes the fruits of our love, her two sons whom she ought to idolize! she crosses the sea with her adulterer! She!.... my voice now fail'd me, and had I not been favour'd with immediate assistance, death would have put an end to all my misfortunes.

Neither Mrs. *Lallin* nor my sister-in-law suspected the true cause of this accident. I had convers'd alone with the canon. The consolation they gave me could not fail of being pernicious, as they awak'd the remembrance of *Cecilia*. Alas! said I to them with a faint tone of voice, the remedies you give only inflame my disease. Speak to me of my all-lovely *Fanny*; assure me that she is innocent: prove to me that I may again unite with this sweet creature, without injuring my honour. *Fanny*, my adorable *Fanny*! pardon my injurious suspicions.

Never were people seiz'd with so much consternation as Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister in-law. They could not comprehend what all this meant; and I was so confus'd,
that

that it was impossible for me to give the least explication on this head. They therefore imagin'd, that all they heard was a chimera, the effect of a fever, of a delirium, or of melancholy.

I never spent a more dreadful night among the savages of *America*, than that which follow'd this gloomy day, and inexpressible were the struggles with which my heart was tortured. It now endeavoured to justify *Fanny*, and would still love her; and the next moment strove, but all in vain, to quite forget her. One moment I was persuaded of my wife's innocence, and the next, abhorred her; ignorant as I was of the motives of her behaviour. Had I, would I say to my self, given that barbarous wretch a just occasion to forsake me, I should not think my self sufficiently punish'd, should I shed the last drop of my blood at her feet. Were there just grounds for me to accuse the villain *Gelin* of a rape, I then might be allowed to take her again, after the example of lord *Axminster*. But, too treacherous wife! was not my whole heart yours, and yours only? Were not you the delight, the charm of my life? What could tempt you to forsake a husband who ador'd your every action? to leave children whom you ought to have consider'd as the dearest pledges of his love? Was it not from choice, was it not from inclination, nay from the loosest of principles that you left my bed at *St. Helena*, to fly into the detested arms of *Gelin*, that traitor, that false friend, whose crimes, ten thousand deaths could never expiate? Wipe off, if that be possible, this infamy, or rather confess, too cruel *Fanny*, that you are guilty; that you are an eternal reproach to an adoring husband; to the tenderest of children, and to your whole family. Your seducer owns, that he only is guilty. He protests in the most solemn manner, that you are innocent. But have I not just reason to suspect, that this is a new crime, an artful declaration, made by this abominable wretch, merely to heighten my confusion, and increase my disgrace? Just Heavens endue me with strength sufficient to support such a multitude of calamities! . . . Or rather end at once the rigours of my fate.

The light of the sun, so far from lessening my torments, serv'd only to increase them. I wish'd
from

from my soul never to behold the day-light again, or else to be once more buried in the subterraneous solitudes of *Rumney-Hole*, in which I had pass'd easy and undisturb'd, the most happy days of my life. In the transports of my grief. I spar'd neither Mrs. *Riding* nor Lord *Axminster*, but accus'd them both, as having been the cause of all my misfortunes. 'Twas, would I say to myself, their fatal advice which engaged me to leave my thrice happy retirement: 'Twas they plung'd me into the abyss of misfortunes from which death only can extricate me. Deceitful charms of my faithless *Fanny*, added I, you are the inexhaustable source of all my torments!

These plaints into which I broke, my sobs, my sighs and fast-flowing Tears, did not permit me to consider that I had people round me; no, my agitations were too violent; but a little after I felt, on a sudden, softer emotions succeed these furious transports, so that I fell into a kind of lethargy, by which means I got a little repose.

In my sleep (which was but short) methought I saw the ghost of Lord *Axminster*, or rather fancied I saw and heard that nobleman himself, who chiding me in the severest terms, for having contributed to the dishonour of his family, reproached me for the tenderness he had always indulged me, and assur'd me that his daughter was innocent. I would never, cried the shade, forgive you, were I not sensible that your conduct is owing to your indiscretion rather than to villainy; and that the treachery of a faithless friend, has involv'd you in all the calamities you complain of.

But 'tis still in your own power to be happy ———
Haste then to the felicity which awaits you.

I never was one of those weak minds who have a superstitious credulity with regard to dreams; and yet I must be so ingenuous as to confess, that this vision made a strong impression on my mind. I thereupon recollected the several ideas of it, and endeavoured to affix them to the circumstances of my present condition. I would have ascribed the cause of them to the hurry of the animal spirits, which, when the body is dissolv'd in sleep, represent the most extravagant ideas to a heated imagination. Considering the situation I was then in, this supposition could not but agree with the common system of naturalists: but,

after

after considering this matter very seriously, I thought myself, obliged to abandon it, from a belief that it was not built on a solid foundation enough; and at last persuaded myself, that there was something supernatural in my dream. I sought to solve it from the system of occasional causes, and would suppose, that God has thought proper to establish certain spirits, and that these are the occasional causes of the conduct of men with regard to certain events. I must no longer wonder, said I to myself, that the characteristics of grandeur or of gravity, are not found in the images which admonish us in dreams. Whether they be confus'd or childish; whether they vary according to time, place, and the constitution of persons; all this ought not to surprize those who know how greatly human creatures are limited; and the obstacles which occasional causes of various kinds must reciprocally make. Do not I myself experience every day, that the soul and body traverse one another mutually in the course of the operations which are peculiar to them? An intelligence which should act on our bodies as well as minds, must necessarily meet with divers obstacles in the laws, which establish these two principles; and these are the occasional causes of certain effects. I confess, that dreams are infinitely less mysterious than the vulgar imagine; but on the other side, I believe they are a little more so than certain philosophers will allow. Historians of all ages and nations have related so many extraordinary particulars, with regard to dreams, that such as scoff absolutely at every thing of this kind, are suspected either of insincerity, or of such an incapacity as will not allow them to discern clearly the strength of the proofs. An inveterate prepossession, or a certain cast of mind they received from nature, throws a deep cloud over their understandings, when they attempt to compare the reasons *pro* and *con*. But as for myself, I will endeavour to be more reasonable, and to explain this profound mystery of nature, according to the most solid principles. I am persuaded, that some dreams really prognosticate futurity. Now, God only pierces into futurity; consequently he is the first cause of these dreams which exhibit to us things which are to happen hereafter. But then he is not the immediate cause on this occasion, and here follows the manner in which I conceive
this

this mystery. All creatures in general are linked to, and intimately united with, the author of their existence, in like manner as they are linked to one another, by simple and general laws. By these God preserves them; all things that exist are equally subject to these laws, and death only destroys a certain mode of existing. According to these principles, I can conceive that God may, if he pleases, employ, to give me certain informations, such or such creatures, who exist no more corporally, under the same form in which they appear'd in their life-time. For the destruction of a mode of existing, does not destroy the relation which creatures, by their existence, bear to one another, by virtue of the general laws which link them together, and unite them to the supreme Being.

This series of reasoning appeared to me so solid, that I concluded I ought not to neglect my dream. Overlooking therefore, the reproachful, harsh terms wherein the vision spoke, which at first gave me great uneasiness; I considered that part of it only which related to my wife's innocence, and how I might best make myself happy. Upon this my mind began to be much calmer; and a little after, I desir'd my sister-in-law to send my two sons often to visit their mother at *Chaillot*. I spent some days in revolving on the two objects of my dream, which had fixed my ideas. I quite obliterated the remembrance of my passion for *Cecilia*; and in case I happen'd to think of her, 'twas only to indulge her a few tears of compassion.

At this time I was visited by Mr. *de Groot*, who was come into *France* with the character of Embassador of the United Provinces, in order to prevent the war with which they were threatned. This great man having heard talk of me, paid me a visit, but from no very considerable motive, in outward appearance. After the first compliments, he told me that he was very fond of persons who made deep reflections; who argued with great justness, and were not slaves to any system of thinking, till they had first examin'd them all. He then told me, that I had the character of one of those rational beings, whose number is so very small; and that nothing could give him so much pleasure, or contribute so greatly to his improvement as my company. This gentleman discover'd such

an amiable frankness in his behaviour, and so much humanity in his countenance, that I could not refuse him my esteem. I found, by some words he let drop, that he came to visit me from a very important motive. He had been told, that the late dutchess of *Orleans* had honoured me with her friendship; and I pass'd at court for an *English* gentleman of very great importance. My withdrawing to *St. Cloud*, appeared affected and mysterious, because the real design of it was not known. Mr. *de Groot*, who was very much prejudic'd in my favour, tho' he had never seen me before, asked me whether I continued to correspond with the *British* Court? His design was, to make me instrumental in reconciling King *Charles* with the States-General. This was the chief object of all the *Dutch* politicians; for in case they could have broke the alliance between *Lewis* the XIV. and that Prince, the former would not have been so formidable to them. I answer'd Mr. *de Groot* very sincerely, that I was wholly unacquainted with the arts of Courts, and had never endeavour'd to penetrate into the mysteries of them. He seem'd to doubt the truth of what I said, but express'd himself on this occasion in so delicate, so obliging a manner, that I could not be displeas'd with him, and after this he mention'd that topick no more. I had several interviews with Mr. *de Groot* during the year 1671; and in a visit which I paid him about the expiration of his embassy, we discours'd on the war which was upon the point of being declar'd against his country. The fate of Kings, said this gentleman, is more to be pitied than that of any other men. Their true virtue consists in making their subjects happy; but such as have an inclination to do this often have it not in their power. A thousand passions divert them from it; and those of their favourites and ministers, are of still more dangerous consequence. A war, which in all probability will be very bloody, is just ready to break out; the only cause of which, is, the envy that *Louvois* bears to *Colbert*; a circumstance I discover'd in the course of my embassy. This is making war for war's sake, and nothing can be more repugnant to the laws of nature. The United-Provinces, however, will not act from such unjust principles. We shall be obliged to defend our liberties by force of arms, since 'tis we who shall

be

be invaded. The war will therefore, with regard to us, be just, because all laws human and divine, impower a nation, when unjustly attacked, to defend themselves; and this will oblige us to take up arms against creatures like our selves. Too fatal necessity! What a shame is it to human nature, that war should be unavoidable on some occasions! The king of *France*, doubtless, does not consider, that he is going to eclipse his glory forever; and that his ministers, by thus soothing his ambition, will draw down innumerable evils on his own subjects, and on his own neighbours. I will confess, replied I to Mr. *de Groot*, my studies and reflections have taught me, that the calamities of war exhaust a state; and frequently drag it to the very brink of destruction, even when the most shining victories are gain'd. How advantageously soever a people may engage in a war, they yet are uncertain, whether they may not be exposed to the most tragical reverses of fortune before 'tis ended: tho' they have all the advantages imaginable at the giving battle, nevertheless the least misreckoning, a pannick fear, the meerest trifle in the world may dispossess them of the victory they till then had gain'd, and shift it to the enemy. Tho' a people should keep victory chain'd, as it were in their own camp, they yet destroy themselves in destroying an enemy; they depopulate his country, they prevent its being cultivated, and stop the current of trade. But a much worse circumstance is, the best laws are thereby weakened, and an almost general depravation succeeds. Young people no longer apply themselves to learning, and necessity obliges them to tolerate such a licentiousness as is of pernicious consequence to the army: Justice, policy, all suffer from this havock. A King, who sheds the blood of so many men, and is the cause of so many evils, merely for the sake of acquiring glory, or to extend the boundaries of his dominions, is unworthy the glory he pants after; and deserves to lose what he is possessed of, for his endeavouring to usurp what did not belong to him. With what blind fury are mortals possess'd, they who are allowed so few years of life upon the earth, and these years too, so wretched, so miserable! Why then should we add so many woes to those which are inseparable from life? Mankind are brethren, and yet they tear one another to pieces! such

Americans.

Americans as devour their captives fill our souls with horror; but are we less cruel than those *Canibals*? Do not we exercise greater barbarity than wild beasts? These attack those animals only which are of a different species from themselves: But man, in spite of the reason with which heaven has illuminated him, perpetrates such horrid acts as are unheard of among lions and tigers. I again observe, wherefore are these wars? is there not earth enough on this globe for the use of men; nay much more than will be possible for them to cultivate? What! shall a vain idea, an empty title of conqueror, a refusal to strike to an admiral, the jealousy which one minister bears to another! the stupid insolence of a news-writer! shall, I say, such trifling motives light up the firebrand of war, and spread the most dreadful havoc in wide-extended countries! How unreasonable a creature is man! to satiate the glory, the vanity, the jealousy, and the revenge of an all-powerful minister? Must whole countries suffer; must they be devoured by surrounding flames; and must, whatever escapes fire and sword, be destroy'd by the more cruel jaws of famine? And all this, merely to sooth the glory, as 'tis falsely call'd, of one man, who makes mankind his sport, and spreads universal desolation! How monstrous is this glory! should not kings therefore be very cautious how they engage in war! 'tis not enough that it be just, but it must also be necessary. Part of a nation's blood ought never to be shed but in cases of the most extreme necessity, that is, to serve a nation. Nevertheless, flattering counsels, a false idea of grandeur, vain jealousies, an insatiable avidity, covered with specious pretences, engage kings insensibly in wars, which render them unhappy, and prompt them to hazard all things without the least necessity for their so doing; which prove as fatal to their subjects as to their enemies; and which, at last, cause them to be considered as the scourges, the horror of mankind. *Mr. de Groot* seem'd vastly delighted to hear me argue in this manner.

But to return to my own history, after begging pardon for this long digression. The instant my wounds were heal'd I waited upon the magistrates of *St. Cloud*, and obtain'd from them leave to see *Gelin*, in company with two trusty,

trusty persons, in order that they might be witnesses to what he should declare. Being come into the place where that wretch lay; a few hours hence, says he, I shall suffer an ignominious death. This my crimes have justly merited; the only thing I regret is, that I did not fill up the measure of them, by murdering you; and no words can express my despair, when I reflect that you will again be united with the lovely, the chaste *Fanny*. I could not prevail with myself to insult this miserable wretch; for that would have been mean; but was even so generous as to wish very sincerely, that it had been in my power to secure him from the ignominy of the punishment he so justly deserv'd. He had carried off my wife, he had stabb'd me in my own house; and yet my heart, quite different from that of other men, whisper'd me that *Gelin* had been my friend. He had murder'd my brother; but on the other side I could not blot from my memory, that he had sav'd his life in the colony of *St. Helena*. I therefore intreated him to calm his transports, and to inform me of the reasons why I had incurred his hatred. I hate you, replied he immediately; and your presence is horror to me, because I betrayed you, and the chastity of your wife prevented my reaping the fruits of my treachery. Saying this, he related the several artifices he had employed at the *Havana*, in order to inspire *Fanny* with jealousy, and her great credulity on this occasion. The moment, continued he, I had persuaded your wife, that your heart was divided betwixt her and Mrs. *Lallin*, I observ'd, that it was her duty to abandon you, and not be a spectator of your shocking incontinence. She hinted to me, that she was very desirous of retiring to *France*, and there immure herself in some convent. Finding her in this resolution, I offered her my service; and notwithstanding the prodigious reluctance she discovered upon this occasion, I yet acted my part with so much cunning and dissimulation, that she at last complied; and we concerted the whole affair at the *Havana*. Scarce a woman in the world but would fall a sacrifice to hypocrisy when artfully conducted. Now, your wife is in the bloom of life, she had very little experience, by which means it was no difficult matter to seduce her; not to mention, that the jealousy which I had either wak'd in her soul, or very
much

much strengthened, would not permit her to reflect on the sad consequences that must inevitably attend the execution of the advice I gave her. However, we had not been above one day at sea but she was sensible to all the horrors of my counsels! She was seiz'd with such deep despair, that I was afraid her last hour was nigh. I therefore was oblig'd to suppress my guilty desires (for I acknowledge them to be such) and could not be urgent with her to satisfy them, tho' this was death to me. Besides, the ship, now sailing on the high seas, was not a proper place to attempt her chastity. I therefore suspended my design, till such time as we should be landed in *Spain*; for notwithstanding the inexpressible aversion she now had for me, I yet thought it would, then, not be very difficult for me to triumph over her virtue. We had landed at *Corunna* (the *Groyne*) just as you came into the harbour. I need not tell you what happened at that time. Your wife seeing me dangerously wounded, stole away, and it was not till long afterwards that I heard she went for *France*. But the moment I heard this news, I followed her, and made the strictest search for her in several Provinces, but all to no purpose. At last, I heard of you at *Paris*; and was told at *St. Cloud*, that your wife was in a convent at *Chaillot*. I us'd my utmost endeavours to get a sight of her, but all in vain. Upon this I address'd myself to the chaplain, and entreated him to give me a recommendation, in order to my being introduced into your house; assuring him that I had found out a method, and that an infallible one, to prevent your intended marriage with *Cecilia*, and to unite you again with *Fanny*. This was a circumstance he passionately desired, and thereupon he directed me to Canon *Audiger*. I need not go on with the story, says *Gelin*, looking upon me with eyes of fury. This was all the informations I could get from that villain; and he now vented a million of oaths, to confirm the truth of the story he had told, and *Fanny's* innocence.

A few days after, he was carried to *Paris*, and imprisoned in one of the strongest goals of that city. A little after he was sentenced to be broke alive upon the wheel, as having been convicted of committing a rape, and of assassination. But could the reader believe that this arch-villain escap'd the sword of justice, by turning

ing

ing Papist; and that the magistrates found means to impose on the publick? However, this is matter of fact. Conversions were the mode at that time; and so great was the zeal of the converters, that they threw, on this occasion, a veil over crimes, tho' of the most enormous kind, that of Heresy excepted. Two jesuits promised *Gelin* that they would save his life, provided he would abjure the protestant faith. They succeeded in their endeavours; *Gelin* turn'd Papist, and promised to withdraw to a monastery. The judges yielded to every thing, and accordingly a pastboard figure was made, and this being dress'd in *Gelin's* clothes, sentence was pronounced on the criminal, whose effigy was cruelly executed at the * Greve, by torch-light. As for the fiend himself, he was thrown into a convent, where he assumed the habit of *St. Francis*. There this worthy profelyte was tormented for some time by remorse. In this manner does a false zeal for religion give a sanction to the most horrid crimes.

In the mean time, my sister-in-law had made my wife several visits at *Chaillot*; and never return'd from thence, but was more fully persuaded of her virtue and innocence. This she never mention'd to me, without feeling the most tender emotions of compassion, and shedding a flood of tears. And the condition in which she represented *Fanny* was so moving, that it might have melted a heart of adamant; mine was extremely tender; and those who have ever felt the sweet passion, know that 'tis possible for the fires of love to lessen, but never to be totally extinguish'd. These broke out again in my heart with inexpressible vivacity; and prov'd that it would be impossible for me to enjoy any felicity, unless I should again be united with my wife. One circumstance troubled me, and this was, the difficulty there would be to persuade the publick of the truth of what love made me believe. I had told *Mr. de Groot* the deplorable state I was in; and was very urgent with him, a few weeks before he left *France*, to favour me with his advice; and besought him, not to consider so much, on this occasion, his friendship for me, as my honour and reputation, in

* *The same for Paris as Tyburn for London.*

order to prevent my being made the laughing-stock of the publick. After reflecting some time on what I had told him, he assured me, that I mistook the shadow for the substance, and that I swell'd a pigmy to a giant. Wise and prudent persons, added he, ought not to shape their conduct from the disadvantageous, but ill-grounded idea the world may entertain of it. The very regular and virtuous life your lady has led, will baffle the blackest efforts of calumny and malice; she certainly did very wrong in forsaking you but then your imprudent behaviour, and the regard you shew'd Mrs. *Lallin*, were the causes of it. Your errors occasioned those of Mrs. *Cleveland*; and therefore 'tis your duty to forgive one another. You protest that you are innocent, and your spouse must be persuaded of the truth of it: on the other side, she assures that no one can be more so than herself, and this is sufficiently confirm'd by *Gelin's* oaths; so that neither your heart, nor even your reason, will allow you to be any longer diffident on this article. Now this is sufficient to compleat your felicity: despise therefore the very worst that a sett of dark-minded wretches can either think or say. Your story is not publick; change therefore but the place of your abode, and you will change your acquaintance. Be no longer in suspense, whether you shall take your lady home again, and end at once your own and her calamities. However, says he, I give you this counsel, upon the supposition that you are entirely persuaded of your spouse's innocence; for, in case you have the least remains of doubt on that head, I would advise you to let her continue where she is; for she'll be much happier in the solitude of a cloister. — Alas! replied I, interrupting him, my heart is intirely shut to all injurious suspicions with regard to my dearest *Fanny's* virtue. In order therefore, says Mr. *de Groot*, to keep your heart for ever in these favourable dispositions, it will be absolutely proper for you to get some new informations with regard to the conduct of your lady, and that of the wretch *Gelin*. 'Twill not be difficult for you to find out the captain of the ship who convey'd them to *Spain*. You may dispatch some faithful servant to *Corunna*; and after these several informations, you will know whether

whether Mrs. *Cleveland* be innocent or guilty ; for I cannot conceive it possible, that all these people should have the least interest to deceive you. After this, you may regulate your conduct according to the accounts that will be told you ; and in case they are favourable to your lady, you then will be secure from the most inveterate attempts of calumny.

I thought this advice so very just and natural, that I listened to it with the utmost pleasure, and soon put it in execution. The next day I desir'd my sister-in-law to enquire very exactly of my wife, what road she had taken after her leaving *Spain* ; and was told that very evening, that she had left *Madrid* in company with a *Spanish* nobleman, named *Don Francisco del Campigno*, who had taken his lady and son with him, in order, as was suppos'd, to shew them *France*, but in reality to transact some secret affairs with the court. This nobleman was still at *Paris*, and acquainted with Mr. *de Groot*, who visited him sometimes. This determin'd me to wait upon him and his lady, but without declaring who I was, in order to make all the discoveries possible, with regard to my wife. A little after I saw him, I turned insensibly the subject of the conversation on his journey from *Spain* to *France* ; and had the delightful satisfaction to hear him bestow the highest applause on my wife's modesty and excellent behaviour. *Don Francisco* and his lady were prodigiously uneasy, that they had not been able to find out what was become of her ; and had made all the enquiries imaginable, but in vain. They told me, that they observed she was possessed with a perpetual melancholy, but had never been able to find out the cause of it ; and on this occasion they made a thousand random conjectures, which could not fail of giving me infinite delight. Mr. *de Groot*, who knew the whole story, and had been pleas'd to introduce me, had also his share of the pleasure. Nothing affected me more in that conversation, than the following words of *Don Francisco*. " I cannot tell, says he, what country woman that lady is, nor of what family ; but her polite and prudent behaviour, prove that she is honourably born, and has had an excellent education. In a word, she is a perfect model of wisdom and modesty. "

Had

Had I listned to the dictates of my love only, I should have immediately set out for *Chaillot*, and taken my wife out of the convent; but on the other side, it was proper to hear reason also, in an affair of so much importance to my happiness. Accordingly the next morning, in pursuance of the repeated counsels of Mr. *de Groot*, I made *Dring* set out post for *Corunna*, ordering him to get the most exact informations with regard to the day my wife arrived in that town; the time she had continued in it, and her behaviour with respect to *Gelin*. I commanded him, in the strictest manner, to procure the most authentick certificates of whatever should be told him, firmly persuaded he would be vastly careful in all these particulars, as they concerned me so very nearly; and indeed I had the strongest reasons to be satisfied with his fidelity. At the same time, I dispatched another servant, to enquire of the officers of the navy, where the vessel then was in which *Gelin* and my wife had gone from *St. Helena*; and it happened very fortunately to be still lying off *Calais*. I my self went thither, in order to speak with the captain, from whom I learnt, that my wife was seiz'd with the deepest transports of grief and despair, after that a few hours had given her the liberty to consider, in its just light, the fault she had committed. The lady, continued he, conjured me upon her knees to return back from whence we came, Possibly, said she, I may be able to soften my husband; or in case he should prove inflexible, I will die by his hand, and thus fall a victim to his suspicions. Thou perfidious, thou wicked wretch! added the lady, addressing her self to *Gelin*, thou hast abused my simple credulity; thou hast violated, in a most inhuman manner, the sacred laws of friendship. Wretch that thou art! what could be thy view in tearing me from the arms of the fondest of husbands, by thy envenom'd arguments. No; nothing but my blood and thine are capable of washing out so enormous a crime. Either kill me at once, or restore me to my husband and my dear children. The lady, continued the captain, was perpetually venting such complaints; and 'twas with the utmost difficulty I prevented her making away with her self. *Gelin* did not dare to enter her cabbin; and all the arguments I could use to calm her sorrows, only enflam'd them the more; which threw me into so great a perplexi-

ty, that I determined not to proceed so far as *France*. I therefore resolved to ease my self of this heavy burden at *Corunna*, where no body knew me; and to prevent any evil accident from befalling my self, I landed them in the night time, and set sail again immediately. But now added he, as I find this was your lady, I beseech you to take pity on me, and not put me into the hands of justice, as 'tis in your power to do. 'Twas merely for the sake of a little money, that I engaged in this dangerous affair. . . . The captain had no great occasion to employ entreaties to obtain my pardon; after which I return'd to *St. Cloud*, highly satisfied with the discoveries I had made.

Mrs. *Lallin* beheld with an air of melancholy and indifference, the joy which began to diffuse itself over my whole family. She cast her eyes upon me, and seemed to dread reproaches she had no ways deserved. At last, says she, I ought to be punished for the calamities you have undergone, since I have been the cause of them. If Mrs. *Cleveland* was jealous of me, 'tis certain that my imprudent conduct gave her some grounds for it. Live therefore happy with her: Heaven form'd you for each other; but as for me, the gloom of a cloister is the only asylum it has left to my choice. In the solitude of it will I bewail till death shall snatch me from the world, the disorders which my presence brought into your family: But then don't fail to assure Mrs. *Cleveland*, that I was no more than the innocent cause of both your misfortunes. In two days I will bid you an eternal adieu, and I conjure you not to enquire the place of my retirement; for that I will never reveal.

This resolution of Mrs. *Lallin* gave me great uneasiness, and I used all the arguments possible to make her change it. My wife, says I, is bound in justice to entertain the most advantageous idea imaginable of your merit and of your virtue. We all three have acted very imprudently; we therefore must forgive one another, and unite our selves by the bands of a perfect esteem. My wife will not doubt your innocence; and I am persuaded, that after she has heard the whole affair, the friendship she then will conceive for you, will be stronger, in proportion to the aversion which an ill grounded jealousy made her before entertain. But I can never consent to
you

your leaving us, and will do all that lies in my power to prevent it. Resolve therefore, madam, to live and die with us, for this is the only resolution I can approve. Mrs. *Lallin* seem'd at first inflexible, but at last, the tender entreaties and arguments of my sister-in-law and young *Bridge*, began to make some impresson on her.

I desired them to go to *Chaillot*, and there found the dispositions of my wife with regard to me; and to see whether she would approve the reunion I projected. They all approv'd the design, and accordingly set out for that place. After making some overtures, says my wife, I can never consent to your proposal. Alas! I was born of too unhappy a mother, and under too impropitious stars, to aspire any more after a happiness of which I have made my self unworthy. The grief that for ever tortures my soul, is the most gentle punishment I deserve. The only favour I ask, is, that I may be admitted to see my dear children often, in order to teach them by my numberless misfortunes; and I shall think my self thrice happy, if I can persuade Mr. *Cleveland* of my innocence — She here shed such a flood of tears, that she was unable to proceed for some moments — Let Mr. *Cleveland*, says she, seek for some new felicity; for he must never expect to meet with any in the society of an unhappy wife, whose heedless conduct made her virtue suspected. I will waste my few ebbing' days in sorrow, since fate will have it so.

Mrs. *Bridge* told her, that there was a wide difference between suspicion and guilt. Your leaving us, says she, made us conjecture that a criminal passion for *Gelin* had dragg'd you after him; but then these conjectures are far from proving your guilt. Mr. *Cleveland* is so judicious, that he cannot but make a proper distinction between things so different in their natures. You on the other side, rashly surmised, that Mrs. *Lallin* shar'd your husband's heart with you, and that they held a criminal correspondence. But in case you still harbour the least suspicion, you ought to banish it from your mind; and be persuaded, that if Mrs. *Lallin* possessed Mr. *Cleveland*'s esteem, you was happy in his love. Alas! said *Fanny*, I can hardly persuade my self, that Mrs. *Lallin* and my husband will have generosity enough to obliterate the

memory of my unjust, my cruel suspicions. I can no longer doubt of their innocence, nor of Mr. *Cleveland's* affection for me ; but tortur'd by jealousy, the eye of reason was quite shut in my soul ; teiz'd by an artful wretch, and seduced by his ill-grounded stories, and the insidious marks of an hypocritical passion, I unhappily abandon'd my self to evil counsels. However, neither inclination nor love prompted my flight ; but the wild passion which then tyrannized over my heart, threw such a cloud over my understanding, as quite depriv'd me of the liberty either to reflect or act. Once again ; let me only be thought innocent, and then, let me be permitted to deplore, in solitude, the remainder of my wretched days.

My sister-in-law did not think proper to let my wife know directly the dispositions of my heart with regard to her ; and the thoughts of our calamity, waked the tenderest compassion in her bosom. When Mrs. *Lallin* and my wife parted, they gave each other the fondest marks of a reciprocal esteem ; and a surprizing circumstance is, that each endeavoured to persuade the other that she was guilty, tho' both were miracles in virtue. Alas ! to my imprudence, all these errors were owing ; and I had not only my own folly to answer for, but that of my wife also.

In the mean time my sons were for ever asking me when their mother would come home ; and, embracing me with inexpressible tenderness, they would beg me to take her from *Chaillot*, they not being satisfied with barely visiting her. They would ask me, why their mother was confin'd in that prison ? what crime she had committed ? why she wore a religious habit ? with a thousand other particulars which strengthened my passion for her. However, it was proper for me to wait *Dring's* return, and I did not wait long. This domestick gave me fresh proofs of his fidelity, by the exactness with which he fulfilled my orders. *Gelin's* adventure had made so much noise in *Corunna*, that he soon found out the inn where that wretch had been heal'd of his wounds. *Dring* was told the exact day of his arrival in that town ; and also when he left it. He was farther assured, that a lady who came with *Gelin*, had left him the second day after his arrival,

arrival, that is, the third day after he had assassinated my brother: That she had declared, the company of this man was odious to her, for reasons she could not reveal; that a person of distinction in that city, being sent for to court, she had taken this opportunity to go for *Madrid*, and from thence had set out for *Paris*, in company with a nobleman and his family who were travelling thither; that the least suspicions could not be entertain'd with regard to her virtue, but that 'twas certain she detested the person who came on shore with her. *Dring*, after this, waited upon the nobleman, who had carried my wife in his coach to *Madrid*; and for this purpose, pretended he was sent, by that lady's relations, in order to enquire what was become of her; and very happily, the highest eulogiums were then made of my wife's virtue. He afterwards desired to have the most authentick testimonials possible of all he had heard; and was indulged them with pleasure. But not satisfied with this, he procured a certificate from the magistrates, declaring the probity of the several persons who had made these declarations; and after obtaining these several pieces, he returned with incredible dispatch, to inform me of particulars which could not but give me the highest satisfaction.

I had writ to the Lord *Clarendon*, to desire his advice also in affair of so much importance. The answer with which he favour'd me, corresponded so happily with my own inclinations, and Mr. *de Groot*'s council, that all my suspicions were now quite remov'd. I had the strongest reasons to believe, that these two illustrious friends were persons of the greatest honour and probity; and consequently incapable of advising me to things, which they themselves would not have done. I thereupon resolved to set out for *Chaillot* the very next day, to end at once my own and my dear wife's calamities.

'Tis beyond the power of words to express what we felt in this tender interview. The instant I perceived the adorable creature, my wandering glances quite died away. I endeavoured to speak, but the sweet agitations I felt sufficiently discovered the state of my soul. Our glances now seem'd commixed; we both fetch'd the deepest sighs, and afterwards burst into tears. How enchantingly-delightful is the secret charm which two persons;

equally dear to one another, taste, who after a long, long absence, which was thought eternal, feel in each others arms, the soft object of all their inquietudes! Overjoyed with one another, we fancied that love was descended from heaven, purely to seat himself again in our hearts. Our cheeks were along time fastened to each other; and neither of us was able to pronounce a word. At last; heaven, says I, is still propitious to me! my felicity is complete, since I again enjoy the all-adorable *Fanny*. Dearest of creatures, continued I, blot from your memory the numberless evils I have made you suffer! harbour no longer the least suspicion, either concerning my love or my fidelity; and be firmly convinced of Mrs. *Lallin's* virtue. My heart has been for ever yours, and yours only—— Love prompted ten thousand other melting expressions; and the agitations I felt prov'd the sincerity of my passion. My wife heard me with a respectful modesty, and at last declared, that she only was guilty, and that I was too generous to forget her errors, and impute them to my self; that it was but just she her self should feel and bewail them, since, instead of preventing all our misfortunes, by revealing her suspicions to me, she had abandoned herself to the fatal suggestions of a groundless jealousy. 'Tis true, continued she, that, had it not been for Mrs. *Riding*, I should not have been thus fatally silent. Jealousy, would she say to me every moment, may arise in our minds in spite of our selves, but then 'tis our duty to silence it. You would exasperate your husband, should you acquaint him with your injurious suspicions; and he, who possibly is innocent, may by this means be prompted to guilt; or at least, it may expose him to such a temptation, as may quite overpower his offended virtue. Alas! had I not listned to her, I then should not have disturbed your tranquillity. But, will it be possibly for you ever to love me, after I have involved you in so much woe? Can your heart still feel the least tenderness for a wife, who tho' she never loved any one but her dearest of husbands, did yet harbour a most cruel, a most unjust jealousy? Yes, replied I, thou sweetest of creatures! I still love thee; and my heart pants after my lovely *Fanny* only, and —— But in what manner do you love me, said she, in the greatest transport?

Alas!

Alas ! said I to her, I love you as I loved you formerly ; for I can compare the passion I now feel, to nothing but that I before felt for you, and for you my angel only. I have heard you applauded in the most advantageous terms, by all who have seen you since our absence. These encomiums give me infinitely more pleasure than if they had been bestowed upon myself ; and I am more sensible than ever, that your interest is inseparable from mine. Let us then, my sweet, my virtuous *Fanny*, live happy ; and may the most rapturous pleasures repay the numberless infelicities we have met with. At my pronouncing these words, I gaz'd still more tenderly than ever upon her ; she advanc'd towards me, and transported with joy : I embraced my *Fanny* ; when methought my soul flew from my bosom to animate hers.

A little after this we prepared for our departure. My wife then took leave of the ladies her friends, who all testified with an agreeable simplicity, the satisfaction they felt at this so unexpected a return of her felicity, and at the same time, the sorrow into which the loss of so amiable a person would plunge them. Floods of tears were shed on all sides, which I considered as an infallible proof of my wife's virtuous deportment.

We stay'd at *St. Cloud*'s some months longer ; all which pass'd in the utmost delight. Every moment I could steal from love, I employ'd in settling my affairs ; resolving to embark for *England* as soon as possible. Lord *Axminster*'s estate, which devolv'd upon me and my children, called me into that kingdom for their interest ; and a little after I had reason to believe that my family would be increas'd. I was rich ; but persons who have children think they never have wealth enough, at least, ambition covers itself with this specious veil.

'Twas but a few days before we quitted *St. Cloud*, that Mr. *de Groot* left *France* to return to his own country. The king and his whole court gave him the highest testimonies of their esteem. He also was for some days a spectator of my reconciliation with Mrs. *Cleveland*, which gave him prodigious pleasure ; and we both return'd him a million of thanks for the excellent advice he had given me on that occasion ; an advice that was productive of both our felicities. He complimented us upon it in the handsomest expressions, and wished us perpetual felicity.

I shall not take notice of a great number of subjects on which we discoursed (most of which related to religion in general) during his stay at *Paris* or at court. The reader will imagine, from what he saw in the beginning of my history, that I was too much a philosopher to pay the least regard to religion. I will be so ingenuous as to confess, that I was far from being fixed on that head, having scarce been taught the first principles of it; but found in the course of the conversations abovementioned, that it would be very proper for me to learn them. Mr. *deGroot* and I had very strong disputes on the Christian religion, in the belief of which I at last was firmly grounded. I shall say no more on this subject at present, because I shall return to it very soon; and will only observe by the way, that I have meditated very intensely on the instructions this great man gave me; and that the more knowledge I attain'd in the Christian religion, after perusing the sacred writings very attentively, the more imperfect I found that philosophy which is not principally guided by it.

War being declared in 1672. against the United Provinces, the *British* channel became very unsafe to those who sailed that way. The sea was cover'd with the fleets of *France*, *Great Britain* and *Holland*; and tho' we were in no danger from the two former powers, yet the *Dutch* were very formidable. I will confess that the motives of this war were in no manner honourable with respect to *France*, but reflects an odium on *Louvois*, secretary at war: The jealousy of the ministers; ambition, a thirst of glory, which too often is a vicious principle; and a strong desire, as I observed above, of taking vengeance on a paltry news-writer, for certain insulting expressions; these, and the offence taken at some satyrical medals, prompted *France* to declare war against the States of *Holland*, notwithstanding the submissions they made. However, the *English* had more just reasons for taking part in the quarrel, the *Dutch* being naturally enemies to their trade; whereas the *French* invaded a Commonwealth, whose trade and alliance was very advantageous to them. In this manner are men blinded by passion, so that they cannot perceive what is truly for their interest. Possibly the king of *England* (*Charles II.*) might have been guilty of the deepest ingratitude on this occasion, by his again forgetting the favours

favours he had received from the republick of *Holland*, during his exile, after the beheading of his royal father.

Whilst that the *French* were forcing their way to the very center of the United Provinces, I went to *Roan* with my whole family. Mrs. *Lallin* did not judge proper to discover herself in that city; and we at first intended to make but a very short stay there; but the danger of the passage to *England* obliged us to reside a long time in the last mention'd city. Altho' I visited, and saw company at my house, yet no one knew me. The woes with which I had been tortured, and the fatigues I had undergone for some years, had wrought a great change in me; and as I no longer went by the name of *Cleveland*, no one imagined me to be *Oliver Cromwell's* son.

The Lord *Clarendon*, whom I had been acquainted with at *Orleans*, and with whom I had corresponded by letter for above two years, was the only friend in whom I put a strong confidence. Fully persuaded of that nobleman's merit and integrity, I did not conceal any thing from him. He was then at *Roan*, so that we were forever together. Our hearts seem'd to be formed so perfectly one for the other, that we mutually communicated all our thoughts and all our affairs. I may affirm that we were a model of the most exalted friendship. I had not yet found a man more worthy of the great esteem I formerly had devoted to lord *Axminster*. There now was no void left in my soul. I have at last, would I often say to my wife, found a person, highly worthy of bearing the glorious name, which so many others degrade. I shall live forever with lord *Clarendon*; and so great is the sympathy of our souls, that 'twill be impossible for us to be angry one with the other, at the same time. Each of us would stand strictly on his guard on this occasion, which is the only way to make friendship lasting. Lord *Clarendon* is of a steady, solid turn of mind, which despises all mean and sordid views. Ambition can never engage him in any transaction, which interferes ever so little with the duties of friendship. He is even one of those choice spirits, who sympathize with their friends, when oppressed by ill fortune. All his sentiments are extremely noble: Himself, and all who think as he does, form, among rational creatures, a peculiar species. He has the art of en-

tering into the thoughts and sentiments of others, and the taste of his friends is his taste. Our inclinations are the same in all respects, and we have exactly the same way of thinking. The same things affect us both; we abhor double dealing, and detest all who mask their souls. We have nothing to reproach one another with; and neither calumny nor slander are able to lessen our mutual esteem. We love virtue, and should sooner openly hate, than dissemble with one another. Our tempers are free from every thing of a critical, sower turn; and if we rise to anger, the only object of it is the insincerity of mankind. Our behaviour is easy, and every thing of a severe melancholy cast is banished from it. Our commerce is tender and free: Our friendship is naturally gay, easy and cheerful. I beheld in lord *Clarendon* a faithful image of myself: He is always present to me when absent; and there is not the least shadow of flattery between us. Our friendship is built upon the most lasting foundation, because virtue is the basis of it. What, my dearest *Fanny*, can be more delightful, than to possess a friend, to whom we may speak as to our selves? Is not the pleasure we receive from any happy incident greatly increas'd, greatly heightened, when we are blest in a friend, who is no less affected with it than our selves? and how comfortable is it, when any sinister accidents befall us, to enjoy a person who is no less grieved at them than we our selves are? All other things which may be wish'd for in life have their respective uses, but then they have but one. Riches enable us to live in splendor, credit and authority, and raise us higher in the world; dignities and employments gain us praise, when we fill them with justice; and very often procure us encomiums very unjustly. Love gives us a delight, which has been infinitely encreased since our reconciliation. Health preserves the body from pains and diseases, and enables us to act. But friendship, heavenly friendship, is of service on all occasions. 'Tis felt in all places, and is never unseasonable. For ever chearful and never importunate, it heightens the pleasure, the beauty of prosperity; and lessens the weight of afflictions by dividing them. To live unblest with friends cannot be called living — Says my wife, I am overjoy'd at the satisfaction which lord *Clarendon*'s correspondence gives you. His friendship will overpay the calamities into which the traitor *Ge-*

lin involved us; and our love will increase the sweets of the friendship which unites you to that nobleman. Improve therefore, my dear Mr. *Cleveland*, the precious friendship of a man who justly merits all you can bestow: thrice happy both, to find so reciprocal, so perfect a harmony in your souls! The pleasure I taste in the converse of Mrs. *Lallin* and Mrs. *Bridge*, is no less exquisite than that which lord *Clarendon* indulges you. The care of improving the minds of our children and my niece, will form one of my most agreeable employments. Firmly persuaded that I possess entirely your heart, methinks nothing can ever more disturb my felicity.

I was so delighted with the society of lord *Clarendon*; that tho' I had resolved to stay no longer in *Roan*, till such time as I should meet with an opportunity of crossing with security into *England*, nevertheless the months and years slid away insensibly, till 1674. As I was one day discoursing with that nobleman, I intreated him to relate to me the history of his disgrace; and as he was always proud to oblige his friends, he gratified my curiosity with the following account.

Nothing remarkable, said he, befel me in my youth, and I was educated in a manner suitable to my birth. Fortune, who was determin'd to make me her sport, procured me very early the favour of king *Charles* the II^d. who rais'd me to the highest posts in the government. This king, a little after his restoration, heightned the splendor of my employments of prime minister, and of lord high chancellor, by giving me the title of earl of *Clarendon*. Thus surrounded with honours, I thought myself bless'd with the smiles of a monarch whose admirable conduct in the beginning of his reign, justly won him the affection of his subjects. Adversity is the best school for princes; and king *Charles* had spent many years in it. His first actions confirm'd the publick in the advantageous idea they had entertained of his character; for he seemed to possess all the virtues which finish the good monarch, and the great Hero. Wholly attentive to his subjects ease and happiness, he signalized his return to his dominions, by granting a general pardon to all persons concern'd in the late unnatural rebellion; forbidding, upon certain penalties, any one to reproach those who had been concerned in it. None were excepted out of this general pardon, but the forty nine judges.

judges who had pass'd sentence on his unhappy father. Nothing could possibly have been better calculated to make the interest of the king inseparable from that of his people; for this union strengthens the authority of the sovereign, and makes people happy. I was perpetually exhorting the king to continue in dispositions so truly worthy a monarch, and at the same time, so necessary and advantageous to himself. He never spoke to me of his subjects but in the most tender terms. I imagined him sincere, and possibly he was so then; so that I always listened with delight to the repeated assurances he gave me of it. He seem'd to have the highest regard for the church of *England*, (which however was merely specious;) and being firmly persuaded that the kingdom would never enjoy peace so long as the sectarists should be tolerated; I embrac'd all the opportunities my employment gave me, to inspire the king and parliament with real fears, by informing them of authentick facts, in order to prompt them to quite ruin the sectarists.

But don't imagine that I was fir'd with a fanatical spirit, a spirit of persecution. The conversations we have formerly had together, may convince you, that I have a more human way of thinking; but those who preside at the helm of government, are sometimes forc'd to commit certain actions, they themselves disapprove, in order to preserve the peace of the nation. 'Tis a great unhappiness for a prince to be reduced to so fatal a necessity, but 'tis too often an unavoidable evil. Had my counsels been followed, a great number of disorders would have been prevented, which will certainly break out under this reign. However, the king was far from approving my sentiments on this head. The parliament, which was entirely at his devotion, granted him an authority, the bare demand of which had brought his unfortunate father to the scaffold. Encouraged with this success, he resolv'd to revenge his father's death on the *Scots*. I used all my endeavours to soften his resolutions, from motives of policy, honour and necessity. I set before him the fatal effects which would result from so ill-concerted a revenge. The promises of a prince, would I say to him, ought to be sacred: if you once break these, you'll plunge your subjects into despair, and lose their confidence. Faction will again be authorized to unite all her heads, by the dread of living

living under a faithless sovereign; and by the perpetual fear of being sacrific'd to the caprice of a tyrannical government. The vengeance, royal Sir, you would take is lawful; but then 'twould be proper for you to satiate it by insensible degrees. The presbyterians whom *Oliver* had affected to protect, with no other view but to enable himself to gain his detestable ends, deserve, upon account of their seditious behaviour, to feel the most dreadful effects of your resentment. But, royal Sir, times are chang'd; and 'tis your interest to please those very presbyterians, since they are now perhaps your most faithful subjects. My reasons made so deep an impression on his majesty, that he at last yielded to them.

This Monarch was advis'd not to take off the slavish yoke which his father had laid on that nation; a scheme that was projected by people whose sole aim was to sooth the king's passions. 'Twas with the utmost difficulty that I diverted the king from so cruel a resolution. However at last, my counsels and those of the earl of *Lauderdale*, triumphed over the pernicious designs of these indiscreet, not to say disaffected, flatterers. On the other side, if the *Scots* recovered no more than the empty title of an independent kingdom, I managed things so well, that they were sensible of only part of their loss. However, in spite of all my counsels, the marquis of *Argyle* was sentenced to die, as having been an accomplice in King *Charles* the first's death. 'Twas also against my advice that the king sold *Dunkirk* to *France*, to compensate for the prodigious sums he had lavished away upon his mistresses: and yet, I myself was charged with all the odious circumstances of this affair, and was satyrized upon that account in several pieces, in which, indeed, the king's lascivious conduct was painted justly enough, tho' possibly in too strong colours.

I also was very solicitous to promote another project; which however was not successful. I was of opinion, that it would be absolutely necessary to lessen the power of the Presbyterians, and of all the Nonconformists in general; and accordingly took such measures for that purpose as I judged infallible. Having discovered a plot which was carrying on, in some counties, against the government. I gave advice of it to the king and parliament; and communicated to both houses the names of the accomplices;

plices, the measures they had taken, and their cabals. I intreated them to disconcert the project of the mutineers, and to restore the kingdom to a wish'd for tranquillity. This was endeavour'd, in the act of uniformity, by which all persons were commanded to adhere to the liturgy of the church of *England*. But as the views of his majesty were different from mine, because the *Roman* Catholicks were likewise by this means subject to the same penalties as the Presbyterians; he carried on certain private intrigues, with the mystery of which I was wholly unacquainted. King *Charles* caused a petition to be presented to himself, by which he was humbly entreated to keep the promise he had made in favour of toleration. This affair was proposed to the council, but oppos'd by the bishops and myself. The King, however, represented the engagements by which he was bound; and accordingly the act of toleration pass'd, and a proclamation was published to that effect, which was the signal of my disgrace. After this, not the least regard was paid to me, and I was discharged from the post of secretary of state, in favour of Sir—*Bennet*, my mortal enemy. Nevertheless, the house of commons acted so vigorously on this occasion, that they oblig'd king *Charles* to revoke publicly, his proclamation, in favour of the sectarists.

The court was extremely disgusted at this ill success, and and I immediately was blam'd for it. I was suspected to have fomented the zeal of the commons, and I will confess that this suspicion was justly enough grounded. But then the duty of my employment, the sincere affection I bore the king; and the publick welfare which I had strongly at heart, had prompted me to take these several steps. However not the least regard was paid to these just motives. My destruction was resolv'd, and the earl of *Bristol*, who headed and protected the Nonconformists, had a soul base enough to become my accuser; and accordingly he impeach'd me before the house of lords, of high treason. The articles were, that I had endeavour'd by various artifices to make the king odious to his subjects; that I had occasioned the injurious reports which had been spread, with regard to religion, and his majesty's private conduct. That I had advis'd the selling of *Dunkirk*, embezzell'd the publick monies, made a sale of posts and preferments, diminished

diminished the revenue of the customs, and divided the profits with the parties concern'd. I had no other support in this extremity, but my innocence; and the prosecution ended to the shame of the informer, and the articles of impeachment were thrown out. The discovery of a conspiracy, in order to raise a general insurrection, by the machinations of *Ludlow* and *Lambert*; ought to have made the king sensible how just the counsel I gave him was. Still this did not prompt him to act with greater prudence; on the contrary, he gave a loose to his voluptuous imagination; abandoned himself, without reserve, to the utmost excesses of luxury, and to pleasures altogether unworthy of a king. The pride of his mistresses exhausted his revenues, and reduced him to a most deplorable indigence. During his adversity, he had discovered all the talents requisite for government; a penetrating mind, a sound judgment, an exact knowledge of the interest and state of the several powers of *Europe*: But prosperity corrupted all his good qualities, and he now was famous for nothing but his vices.

He broke with the United-Provinces, and declared war against them, after divers acts of hostility, upon pretence of their having greatly prejudiced the traffick of the *English*. There indeed was some truth in this pretence; but the true design was, to ruin that Commonwealth, in order to establish popery in *England* on the most solid foundation. This he had projected with *Lewis XIV*; and as I could not be entirely ignorant of their fatal intrigues, I refused to sign the resolution of the council, with regard to the war with *Holland*. The earl of *Southampton* refused also; but I was obliged soon after, to desire in the king's name, the concurrence of the parliament, in order to continue with vigour, a war which had been carried on against my advice. The firm persuasion that it would be of prejudice to the nation, had made me disapprove it: But now the same motive and the king's honour inclined me to urge the continuation of it.

In 1665, a plot was discovered that was carried on by the republicans, who attempted to raise a general insurrection, by the assistance of the enemy. The presbyterians endeavoured to persuade the publick, that they had no manner of hand in this conspiracy; and that all the odium
of

of it ought to be thrown upon the fanaticks. As they could not deny the fact, they asserted that 'twas at most but a project, which could not be of dangerous consequence. However, I knew the whole secret of the intrigue; and was certain that a great number of presbyterians had engaged in it. I was besides persuaded, that a rebellion ought always to be crush'd in embrio. Accordingly-I exerted myself with vigour, in order to engage the parliament to pass a severe bill against the non-conformists; and that time I had the satisfaction to humble those restless disturbers of the publick peace. However, they took a very cruel revenge, by burning to ashes the greatest part of the city of *London*. I am firmly persuaded, that the sectarists, particularly the papists, were the chief perpetrators of this guilt; and possibly the k—— and the D—— of *Ro*—— could have nam'd the authors of it. But I was not allow'd to penetrate into this affair; and the king began to protect the papists so openly, that the nation was alarm'd at it.

The ignominious peace which he soon after concluded with the *Dutch*, serv'd as a pretence to my disgrace. The real motive of the king's concluding it, was, that he might have an opportunity of employing the monies rais'd for the continuation of the war, in his riotous excesses. The whole nation made the strongest complaints on that account. The infamous dissolution which reign'd in the court was made publick, and a great number of satyrs were printed on that occasion.

I now had been a long time insupportable to the king as well as the courtiers. I was not born with dispositions necessary for persons who would raise themselves, in so corrupt a court as that of king *Charles*. Altho' I appear to you of a very placid behaviour, I yet am very severe against vice. I am naturally sincere; so that I sometimes made the freest, and perhaps too harsh, remonstrances to his majesty. I discovered, even in his presence, the utmost contempt for his mistresses, and his low-minded favourites. I likewise gave him umbrage upon another account, and that was my setting every engine at work to ruin the *Roman*-catholicks, at the same time that his majesty did all that lay in his power to raise them. I may, without the imputation of vanity, assure you very sincerely,

cerely, that I had done the king the greatest services; and that I often endeavour'd to do him several of still greater importance, in spite of himself. 'Twill be no satyr, when I affirm that my services were forgot as soon as receiv'd. Ingratitude, a crime that is too frequently found in crown'd heads, is but too conspicuous in *Charles* the II^d. He possess'd but very few of the moral virtues: he imagines that honour and probity are merely the result of natural disposition; and that interest is the only rule and standard of man's conduct. Fully perswaded that there is no such thing as sincere friendship, he thinks himself empower'd to dispense with the common laws of gratitude.

In consequence of this principle, he resolv'd I should fall a victim to the universal detestation he had drawn upon himself by his debauchery, and the wrong steps he had taken; and to recover the good opinion of the people, by my fall, he was determin'd to make me answer for the sale of *Dunkirk*. Accordingly, he spread a malicious insinuation, *viz.* That to my intrigues and treachery, was wholly owing the ill success of the war against the *Dutch*, and the odious peace he had concluded with them. A report prevail'd soon after, that I was a pensioner to the states of *Holland*, an imputation which seem'd to be not altogether improbable, from my having oppos'd the war with so much vigour. The common people who judge only from appearances, were soon prejudic'd against me, so that I was consider'd as a traitor to my country. Notwithstanding the dreadful havock which the plague and the fire had made in *London*, I yet had built a very splendid edifice in that city. This imprudent magnificence made the vulgar believe that I rejoic'd at the publick calamities, and so I incurr'd a general hatred. Matters being in this situation, it was very easy for the king to ruin me.

Besides the reasons I have already given you, for the hatred which *Charles* the II^d. had conceiv'd against me, I am to add, that being now grown quite weary of his queen, he was resolv'd to divorce her. Now I oppos'd this design with the utmost vigour. The king was smitten with one of his relations, of the *Stuart* family, and resolv'd to marry her. I had no other way to disconcert all these measures, than by representing faithfully to his beautiful mistress the injustice of such a divorce; and she
being

being a lady of great virtue, immediately suppress'd the ambitious notions she before had entertain'd. I afterwards advis'd her to make choice of some nobleman, whom she might marry without having any cause to reproach herself; and accordingly she join'd herself in wedlock to the duke of *Richmond*. The king immediately wreck'd his vengeance against the new married couple; he banish'd 'em the court, and from that moment set every engine at work to destroy me.

Princes never fail to meet with flatterers, those pests of courts, who endeavour to foment or justify their most shameful passions. That of king *Charles* abounded with those insipid, groveling courtiers, who ridicul'd the gravity with which I always appear; a character that was born with me, and which seems more affected, and still more haughty, when an universal depravation reigns. I saw myself expos'd to the most severe strokes of raillery, and the most malicious turn was given to my actions tho' ever so innocent. I was charg'd with ambition and pride, vices whose tyranny I have never experienc'd. They reviv'd the opposition I had made to *Popham's* design of augmenting the revenues of the crown, and to various other projects for establishing despotick power. By these my fidelity became suspected. The *Roman* catholicks, who, by his majesty's favour had gain'd the upper hand, consider'd me as an implacable enemy of their religion; for which reason they did all that lay in their power to hasten my ruin. The only friend who now stood by me in this unhappy juncture, was the earl of *Southampton*, lord high-treasurer; and not long after this, death snatch'd him from the world. This nobleman had been so generous, as to give the most glorious testimony of my integrity, before the whole council. As my enemies endeavour'd to represent my administration in the most odious light, lord *Southampton* told them, that my fall would inevitably drag after it that of the church of *England*, and of the laws and privileges of the nation. I do not mention this incident out of vanity, but only to show, the irreparable loss I sustain'd, by the death of so faithful, so zealous and generous a friend. Soon after this, the management of the treasury was committed to Sir *Thomas Clifford* and other commissioners. I was removed from the chancellor's

lor's seat, and Sir *Orlando Bridgeman* succeeded me in it; but the vengeance which the king and his favourites meditated, was not yet satiated. They spirited up the house of commons against me, who thank'd the king for dismissing me; and king *Charles*, on the other side, promis'd the house never to let me enjoy any publick employment for the future. He himself did not even scruple to charge me with male-administration; but it's very well known in *England*, that all honest, impartial persons were greatly shock'd at his conduct on this occasion.

I was impeach'd before the house of commons, of several crimes, *viz.* of having advis'd the king to lay aside parliaments, and to reign in an absolute manner; of having been so insolent as to publish that the king was a roman catholick; of having accepted considerable sums of money, upon condition to pass certain patents in opposition to the statutes, and for raising the usual price of wine; of having diverted the course of justice from its natural channel, by decrees contrary to the laws of the kingdom; that by my orders, and without observing the formalities prescrib'd, several of his majesty's subjects had been banish'd to the *West-Indies*; that, by virtue of this despotick authority, others had been summon'd to appear before the council, to give in an estimate of their possessions; that I had called in question the charters of a great many companies, and forc'd them to pay large sums, in order to have 'em renew'd. That after the death of the late king, I had held a correspondence with *Oliver* and his adherents, and had introduc'd an arbitrary form of government into the *American* colonies; that I had caus'd the project, of conquering the *French* settlements in that part of the world, to miscarry; and that it was wholly owing to my counsel that *Dunkirk* had been sold; and finally, that in the last war I had betrayed his majesty, and discover'd his secrets to the enemy.

Nothing could be more palpably false, than all these accusations, and nevertheless, the house of commons, brib'd by the emissaries of the court, impeach'd me of high treason, at the bar of the house of lords, and desired I might be committed to the tower. However, the peers were determin'd not to judge from slight suspicions, and accordingly demanded to see all the proofs of the several articles,

articles with which I was charg'd. This diversity of opinions of the lords and commons, would have been attended with very fatal consequences, had not the king, who was conscious of my innocence, granted me the liberty to leave the kingdom. Immediately after this, I no sooner settled my private affairs in *England*, but I cross'd the sea, and came to *Orleans*, where I had the happiness to meet with you, and to contract the strict friendship which hitherto has not been interrupted in any manner, and which, I hope, will be as lasting as life. I at last am come to *Roan*, with a design there to end my days, which begin already to be burthensome to me.

This sad story, the most essential circumstances of which I have related, rais'd a great number of reflections in my mind, with regard to the inconstancy of fortune, and the depravity of the human heart. I cou'd not forbear communicating part of them to lord *Clarendon*, the day after, finding him very pensive. The relation you gave me yesterday, said I to him, of your life, and the cruel ingratitude of the king with regard to you, after your great and important services recall'd to my remembrance many ideas I formerly entertain'd, which reflect no great honour on mankind; and wou'd almost make me doubt the truth of the christian religion. You may have observ'd, my lord, ever since I have had the honour to know you, that my grand principle was a certain virtue, which appear'd to me common, in a great measure, to all the various nations in the world, at least, to all those with whom I am acquainted. As I had frequently heard of the beauty, the purity and holiness of the christian religion, I entertain'd a very advantageous idea of it. I ardently desir'd to live in a country, whose inhabitants might profess it, in hopes that I should see their conduct regulated by the purest maxims; and that their virtue would be infinitely more enlightned, than that general virtue which I had hitherto made my study. But to deal frankly, my lord, since the story you have told me, and certain incidents in which I myself was concern'd. I perhaps have seen more injustice, and dissoluteness among christians, than in the countries inhabited by savages. How cou'd christians be guilty of the enormities you related to me yesterday! Was it a king, whose duty it is to govern according

cording to the precepts of christ, that persecuted you with so much insincerity, ingratitude and severity! I have had my share of reading as well as of travelling! but never met with so great a depravation of manners, even among the barbarous nations with whom I was oblig'd to spend a considerable time. I never perceiv'd, that cannibals persecuted their friends, and set every engine at work to ruin 'em. Alas! my lord, there either must be but a very small number of real christians, or the maxims of the religion they profess must be extremely difficult not to say impossible, to put in practice. Before, I was bewilder'd and lost in the ideas I had form'd to myself of the insufficiency of philosophy, I plainly perceiv'd, by the conversation I have had with Mr. *de Groot* and you, that this study did not clear up certain perplex'd and gloomy thoughts, which crouded perpetually in my mind. I found, indeed, that the christian faith scatter'd these clouds, but then, what am I to conclude, when I see persons who call themselves christians, so wretchedly corrupted in their principles! Don't extend your reflections farther, dear *Cleveland*, said the earl, interrupting me, I easily conceive what you wou'd say farther on this head. Perplex yourself no longer with regard to the king's ingratitude to me, for I have reap'd much greater advantage from it than you may imagine. After having past thro' such a series of calamities, it is time for me to prepare for death. I was deeply fix'd in that thought when you came in; but you wou'd do me a great injury, should you imagine that my disgrace suggested it. I will confess to you, that, so long as there was a probability of my being suspected to be guilty of infidelity and male-administration, (tho' I found my conscience pure on that occasion) my fall appear'd to me in the most dreadful light. But no sooner had the greatest part of the nation acknowledg'd my innocence, than I rose from a state of sadness and discontent, to a calm which, tho' not altogether so sweet at first, is now infinitely charming to me; knowing how much it is the duty of a christian to think seriously of his condition. In fine, it's in this self-recollection I was more sensible than ever, (and I found the highest satisfaction on this occasion) that among the various religions one only can be true. Now, without descending to an inquiry which

which I leave to divines, I am convinc'd in the strongest and most solid manner, that this religion can be no other than that of christ. You possibly may be induc'd to imagine, that I was prompted to this belief merely from education; but I can assure you 'tis otherwise; and that notwithstanding the multiplicity of affairs in which I have been engag'd, I yet always devoted some hours to the improving my mind in the principles of the christian religion. A mahometan, indeed may declare the same, he has his Alcoran whose commands he possibly may obey more implicitly, than most christians do those of their bible. But leaving to divines the solution of these doubts—My lord, replied I, there is not the least occasion for this; I do not entertain one with regard to the christian religion; I am a christian; it is my glory, and I expect my whole felicity from the principles I profess. However, I will own, that the story you have related, exasperates me highly against the christians. You'll find, replied my lord, by what I can observe to you presently that this ought not to prejudice you against the faith itself. I was going to observe when you interrupted me, that every part of the sacred writings invite to virtue, and to these we are daily exhorted. Hence 'tis manifest, that we must not impute the depravity of christians to the religion they profess outwardly; but to their not studying those sublime truths, as well as to their corrupt hearts. Our depravity prompts us to evil, and we follow it's dictates with much greater pleasure, than the precepts of the gospel, and the urgent impulses of conscience. We must not therefore wonder, that there are so many enormous vices among christians. 'Tis man who takes wrong steps, and despises the laws of his Creator; and yet would he but follow 'em, he then would walk right. He then would pay to God, so far as his weakness will permit him, all the service, honour and obedience which are due to him, and will behave in a proper manner towards his superiors and inferiors. If a man swerves but ever so little from these just duties, he plunges himself into the most dangerous state, with regard both to soul and body. As you are not very far advanc'd in years, you will see that our king having deviated from the good principles he entertain'd, at least in outward appearance, in the beginning
of

of his reign, now making a pretty open confession of the popish religion; and having abandon'd himself to a sett of spiritual directors, who let him riot in excesses of every kind, in order to compass their ends; you will see, I say, the king plunged into still greater excesses, and into a state of misery, which no doubt will excite compassion, though he brought it wholly upon himself. — I understand perfectly all you say, replied I to lord *Clarendon*, interrupting him. For these two years I have restudied the scriptures with the utmost attention, I found in them what our friend Mr. *de Groote* assur'd me I shou'd; and am fully convinc'd of the great truths which the word of God teaches. I believe I have made some progress in the knowledge necessary to all who labour at their salvation, and I endeavour to bring up my children and young *Bridge* in them. As the bible is the only source of my belief, I leave and condemn all the explications with which the pride of man has incumber'd it. Having found that the doctrine of the church of *England* agrees exactly with what the Spirit has reveal'd, I am determin'd to enter into that communion. Possibly some few little ceremonies in it might justly be laid aside; but then, as these don't any way interfere with the tenets of faith, I am very easy on that article. I should have been overjoy'd to join in that worship the instant I came into *England*; but my lord, the story you have told me, has almost determin'd me to take another resolution, and that is, to go in search of *Rumney-Hole*, and there immure myself with my family. Yes, 'tis in some such place I would spend the remainder of my days. In this manner, tho' we shall not join in the outward worship, we yet shall serve God in spirit and in truth, to the utmost of our powers, and this is the worship he requires. Does not your lordship think my resolution suitable to the way of life I was brought up in? I don't envy the splendors of a court, after I shall have taken possession of lord *Axminster's* estate, and added the wealth I already enjoy: I need only observe proper œnomy, and then there will be sufficient to support our family to several generations. In that solitude I shall not be an eye witness, much less an accomplice, any more than my children, of the treachery, the envy and divisions, in which you are sensible the christians

christians immerse themselves. I will endeavour to keep myself pure and unpolluted, and to educate my children in innocence, and in a perpetual fear of offending the Creator. Separated from, and unknown to mankind, I shall not share in the general corruption. I yesterday, indeed, was uncertain whether I should devote myself to this way of life; but your story, my lord, and an hundred reasons more, make me believe, that it will be infinitely more proper for me to spend the remainder of my days in the deepest solitude. Is this a wise resolution and can it be so happy as to obtain your approbation? I conjure you to advise me; I will strictly follow your council on this occasion, which I now am much more solicitous about, than when I consulted you concerning my reconciliation with my wife. I have reap'd so much benefit by the latter, that I daily bless heaven for having procur'd me, during my sad separation, from Mrs. *Cleveland*, two such judicious, such intelligent friends, as you, my lord, and Mr. *de Groot*. Methinks, my determining on the present occasion, is of the utmost consequence to my own welfare, and that of my family. Favour me then, I intreat you, with your assistance. I now am ready to embark for *England*, and will there follow the way of life you shall dictate to me; fully persuaded, that you will propose nothing but what is just and honourable. As I was waiting for my lord *Clarendon's* answer, a servant came to tell his lordship that a *French* nobleman desir'd to speak with him. I was for going away, but my lord taking me into another room, desir'd me to stay there for him; he believ'd that this nobleman would not stay long; however, their conversation lasted much longer than his lordship had at first imagin'd; but at last the other going away, he came back to me, he told me that this nobleman was a zealous *Huguenot* who held a correspondence with persons of the greatest distinction in *England*; and that some letters had been remitted him, of which he was come to give his lordship an account. His letters acquainted him likewise, that king *Charles* incroach'd every day more and more on the liberties of the nation; and that being assisted therein by the king of *France*, there was great reason to fear, that the frame of the *English* government would be quite alter'd, and the nation reduc'd

to the most abject slavery: That the parliament and privy council were seldom consulted about any thing; but that the opinion of the duke of *York*, who supported the jesuits on all occasions, was only follow'd. — It went on thus. As the duke knows perfectly well his brother's blind side, he takes particular care to provide him sums, from time to time, to squander away upon his mistresses and his mad carousals; by which means the duke, whether present or absent, governs and disposes all things. But if the nation does not awake from its lethargy 'twill be absolutely undone.

The earl at his reading these particulars, was prodigiously mov'd; so that I thought proper to leave him, finding he had occasion to repose himself.

As I earnestly desir'd to know the result of the earl's thoughts, I waited upon him the next day to enquire after his health, for he had appear'd very much dejected the night before, but this I ascrib'd to the ill news the marquis *de R*— had communicated to him. However, I found my lord tolerably chearful, but a little pale. My dear *Cleveland*, said he to me after the usual compliments; you have employ'd my thoughts the greatest part of last night. 'Tis certain that the affair you spoke to me about is very delicate. Your resolution of shunning all commerce with your fellow creatures, has something specious and even inviting in it. Educated in the principles of an universal morality, which you very justly endeavour to reduce to the christian system, you are afraid of suffering yourself to be hurried away by the flood, which sweeps along the greatest part of mankind. But one thing is sure, *viz.* that man was form'd by nature for society; and that we all stand in need of one another's assistance. Reflect seriously on this matter, and you will find it true. As the Creator has plac'd you on the earth, 'twas with the design that you should associate with your own species. I will confess that mankind are greatly deprav'd, but still the corruption is not so general as you may imagine; your discernment, however, is so just, that you'll easily distinguish the virtuous from the wicked; after which you may select a small number of friends, to whom you may unbosom yourself. The strict friendship that is between us, may convince you of the truth

of what I assert. 'Twou'd be injuring our neighbour, to believe that mankind without exception are deprav'd. Frequent those most in whom you observe a good disposition of mind, a solid virtue, a probity that resists the strongest temptations, a pure religion that agrees in all points with the scriptures, for which I am overjoy'd to see you entertain so great a reverence. I wou'd not advise you to separate entirely from those of a different persuasion from yourself, there, no doubt, are a great number of good people in all religions, but then 'tis scarce possible for persons of a different communion to converse together without falling into disputes, which lead to feuds, and these often end in treachery and malice. Weigh deliberately what I now tell you, and you will own that 'tis nothing but the truth. My opinion is therefore, that society with our fellow creatures is absolutely necessary, from the order which providence has established. Now, the exterior worship of religion is no less so: Now this includes preaching, and the administration of the sacraments. You, believe, that 'tis enough to serve God in spirit and in truth, and that this is the worship he requires. This maxim is certainly very just, but then you confine it within too narrow limits; for to this outward worship you must join the inward; you must be fully persuaded of the truth of our mysteries, and employ all your faculties in the contemplation of them. The gospel is preached for two reasons; to instruct mankind, and reform their errors. The scriptures are clear, but 'tis necessary that they be explain'd to the vulgar, in order that they may comprehend the whole force of them. The sinner is censured for his crimes; he is exhorted to become a new man, and instructed how to make himself such. Farther 'tis certain, that the sacraments would not have been instituted, had it not been necessary to frequent them; now you would absolutely neglect them, should you withdraw to a solitude. Who can affirm that your soul will always continue in its present happy disposition? As your children not having been baptiz'd, would not join any more than yourself, in the communion of the blessed sacrament could you then call them christians? You would grow negligent insensibly, and become like the antient anchorites whose ridiculous superstitions you blamed a few days since

since. Let me, dear *Cleveland*, persuade you to return to your native country; and when you are arrived in it, avoid all correspondence with the court. Settle in some large town, where you may have an opportunity of giving your children a proper education. The considerable fortune left them by your father-in-law, will enable you to marry them in a suitable manner; but above all, take particular care who you marry them to. After you are quietly settled, consult some able divine, who may prove those things to you in their full extent, which I but barely hint at. To such a one you may start objections, in case you have any; for 'tis not with us, as with those nations where the inquisition is established. We are permitted to declare our doubts, and to maintain them, in order to enlighten our minds — Such is the counsel I give you, and which I myself would follow, were your case mine.

The earl stammer'd as he repeated these last words; he grew very pale, and almost fainted away: But imagining that rest would be of great service to him, I took my leave a little after, and went home.

I was in hopes, during some days, that the indisposition of this excellent man would not be attended with fatal consequences. However, he grew weaker every day, and at last was brought so low, that 'twas a pain to him to speak; so that I had not an opportunity of assuring him that I was firmly resolv'd to follow his advice in every particular. He died a little after in his exile, in the close of *December*, 1674, aged threescore and seven years. His wisdom, his virtue and merit, had been greatly conspicuous both in good and ill fortune. Humble in prosperity, resolute in adversity; his only enemies were those who were friends to vice. He lived at *Roan* in the midst of papists and *English* presbyterians, equally belov'd and respected by both parties, notwithstanding the animosity he had breathed against them in *England*. 'Tis certain however, that the only motive of his severity against the non-conformists, was with no other view than to preserve the peace of the nation, and no ways the effect of a persecuting spirit. He had always discovered the highest esteem for men of probity and honour, abstracted from their persuasions. The only reason of his inveteracy against

O 2

the

the papists as well as presbyterians was, because both had attempted to ruin the church of *England*, and the constitution. The welfare of the publick, therefore, obliged him to persecute, not opinions, but those who profess'd them; because they attempted to disturb the government. By this means all impartial persons, whether presbyterians or *Roman* catholicks, who did not approve the frequent conspiracies of their brethren, thought it an honour to do justice to his merit.

After paying a tribute of tears to the esteem and friendship of this illustrious nobleman, I prepared to go for *England* with my family, which by this time was encreased, my wife having brought me a daughter. And there being now nothing that could longer engage my stay in *Roan*, we embarked in a bad season, viz. the beginning of the year 1675. However, we met with a very favourable passage the first day; but about the middle of the night a storm arose, which continued all the day following. Our cables were broke to pieces, and our ship was long buffeted by the tempest; so that for a long time our pilot did not know where he was. We were several times in danger of perishing; but two days after a calm succeeded, when we discovered, at some leagues from us, a country, which however was quite unknown to us: This oblig'd our sailors to cast anchor till the next day.

As soon as morning appear'd, we perceiv'd a ship coming towards us with all the sail she could make, when I immediately desir'd some of our crew to take the long-boat. to enquire who she was, and the name of the country which lay before us. They brought back word, that we were near the *English* coast, and that the vessel was a collier. This reviv'd us again, so that we put a little to seaward, in order to avoid the rocks which border on that coast, and make the approaches to it very dangerous. However, we had scarce escap'd this danger; but we fell into another; for we discovered at some distance from us two men of war, which advanced towards us full sail. We soon found them to be *French* privateers, who were in search of *Dutch* vessels, in order to make them their prize. I presum'd that we were in no manner of danger, because the passengers were *English*, and friends to *France*, not to mention that our crew consisted wholly of *French-*
men,

men, but I was not yet acquainted with the execrable villainy of pirates, which however I learnt too soon. Presently they sent to ask who we were, when I answered, that I was an *Englishman*, and was going to the *British* court, as my passport prov'd. Notwithstanding this, they pretended not to believe me, and accordingly declared, that if we did not surrender immediately, they would sink us that instant. Are we then, said I, (deeply afflicted at these words) fallen again among wretches as barbarous as the *American* savages? We must perish, or submit to the mercy of an inhuman conqueror; most fatal extremity! But let us surrender, since 'twill be impossible for us to make a resistance. The villains did not allow me time to reflect, for the sea being calm, one of their ships came up, lay a long side of ours, and forc'd us aboard of their own. We met with the most barbarous treatment on this occasion, and they would have separated me from my wife, had they not at last been softned by our cries and intreaties. However, my sister-in-law, her daughter and Mrs. *Lallin* were put on board the other ship; I did not hear a long time after what became of them, tho' I made the strictest enquiry.

In this condition we were carried into *Marseilles*, and I was obliged to pay a considerable sum for our ransom. I also was obliged to continue some weeks in that harbour, before I could get an opportunity of passing safely into *England*. At last one presented itself, and I arrived happily in the port of *London*, with my wife and two sons, for my little daughter died in our first passage.

I now was perpetually revolving the just and excellent advice lord *Clarendon* had given me; and I form'd to myself a way of life which appear'd to me very advantageous. My possessions, as I have already observed, were very considerable; and by the industry and probity of those in whose hands they were left, they were encreased far beyond my expectations. I therefore was now resolved to pursue the study of philosophy with moderation; to apply myself to the practice of a severe morality; and to instruct my family and myself in the mysteries of salvation, which was of daily comfort to me against the sinister accidents of life.

I was no ways solicitous to appear at court ; the idea which the lord *Clarendon* had given me of the king and those who surrounded him, determined me never to go near it. I had a sincere affection for virtue, which had always been the object of my researches. With this disposition of mind, I was easily persuaded that I should soon displease a set of people who were wholly immersed in riot and debauchery. I did not intend to reside in *London*, but to remove into the country, and there spend the remainder of my days.

However, as I was taking the proper measures for putting my design in execution, the king had notice of my arrival, and immediately after I was sent for to court. Being come, the king gave me the strongest testimonies of his esteem, and called to mind, with the greatest pleasure, the many hours of conversation he had been pleased to indulge me, in *France* and in *Spain*. He took notice of the tender affection my grand-father had for me, and the prodigious uneasiness my departure gave him. But bewailed, in a polite manner, the misfortunes which that mistaken tenderness had plunged me into. I told him the artifices which had been employed, in order to persuade him that I had promised Mrs. *Lallin* marriage. This was a good lesson to him, as it hinted how difficult it is for a monarch to discover truth, because he could see it no otherwise than by the representation of persons who oftentimes find it their interest to deceive him. He ought to have concluded, from the example I set before him, that 'tis the duty of a king to examine things strictly himself, and not depend on the account of even his most faithful servants, so far from giving ear to all sorts of people. But king *Charles* was not now in a condition, nor of a turn of mind, requisite for the making of such reflections.

He made me several obliging reproaches, with regard to my staying so long before I came to court. To excuse myself in such a manner as might be worthy of the kind reception with which he honoured me, I replied, that as I had passed through such a scene of calamities, especially after losing my sister-in-law and her daughter, I was determined to lead, if possible, a calm, unruffled life in the midst of my family, far removed from the noise and hurry of courts.

That

That my natural disposition did not suit with them; that I was nevertheless greatly obliged to his majesty for honouring me with so many marks of his esteem; but that, as it would be impossible I could be of any service to him, I besought him to suffer me to live in retirement. That my inclination and even my education made it necessary for his majesty to indulge me the favour I humbly interceded for.

The King was surpris'd at this discourse, and the glances he cast at me, shew'd he did not approve my design. Perceiving this, I thought it was my duty to add, that in case I could be of any service to his majesty, I would freely sacrifice my fortune, and even my life, to serve him; but that as I had no manner of idea of the affairs of so mighty a monarch, I on the other side could never prevail with myself to be as a meer courtier; and, besides, had not the talents requisite for it. That the greatest blessing his majesty could procure me, would be to let me lead a life of solitude; and therefore I again intreated him to approve of a design so laudable in itself, and so agreeable to my present condition.

After some moments silence, the king answered, that he would compensate all my sufferings, by procuring me a splendid, and at the same time an easy fortune. That he was bound in gratitude to take care of lord *Axminster's* family, for the services that Nobleman had done him: That he would never forget the generosity of such of his subjects as had shared in his calamities; that since it was in his power to acknowledge their services, his beneficence should be as boundless as theirs. He therefore desired me to be near his person, declaring I should soon experience, that prosperity had not made him forget his friends; that he had not forgot the zeal my grand-father had ever discovered for his interest; and therefore would indulge those favours to the grand-son, which his former ill fortune had not permitted him to bestow on old *Cleveland*.

'Twas now impossible for me to reject these kind offers, and therefore I told his majesty, that I was ready to obey all his commands, and farther assured him, that as I thought it glorious to be born his subject, I would make it my happiness to obey him. However, I can assure the

reader, that 'twas with the utmost reluctance I complied. Methought I heard lord *Clarendon* censuring me for it, but how was it possible for me to act otherwise?

B O O K IX.

AS soon as I had taken this resolution, I endeavoured to acquaint myself with the state of the court, and the character of the chief persons who compos'd it. In order to make the reader sensible of the uneasinesses I met with in this new way of life, I believe it may not be improper for me to give an idea of the persons with whom I now associated.

I observed in the king a whimsical composition of good and ill qualities; great virtues, but much greater vices. Had he not abandoned himself to corrupt flatterers, he would have been one of the greatest monarchs that ever sat on the *British* throne. His authority was more absolute than either the fundamental laws, or the good of the nation would allow. But then, the nation had given him this authority; and almost every individual wore the yoke of it, without feeling the weight of, or repining at it. The King after having rid himself of the Earl of *Clarendon*, a minister whose wisdom, regularity and severity were obnoxious to him, had plunged into all the excesses of riot and debauchery. The court was now frequented by such persons only, as had a talent for refining on pleasures, and carrying them to the most shocking excesses. An universal depravation had overspread men's minds, whence reason was quite shut out. The monarch was surrounded with a chosen band of intrepid wretches, who were ready to execute the blackest crimes. A contempt of religion, a self-oblivion, a voluntary blindness, with regard to the most common principles of honesty; a low dissoluteness, altogether unworthy of creatures who boast ever so little reason, form'd the character of these worthless personages. The king spent all his days in the most voluptuous effeminacy, betwixt his mistresses and his favourites, who were ever furnishing him with new scenes of debauchery. He had no regard for any thing,
but

but sacrific'd his honour and squander'd his treasures on lascivious women, who made him pay extravagantly for their favours. The courtiers plundered him on all sides, and drain'd the treasury, in order to appear with splendor; and do honour, as they speciously term'd it, to their Sovereign. By this means the king was reduc'd to extreme indigence, so that he shut up the treasury, by the advice of Sir *Thomas Clifford*. By the artifices of the dutchess of *Portf*——*b*, his favourite mistress at that time, he sold himself to *France*, and became the pensioner of that kingdom, weak, fearful, and enervated by pleasures; he was incapable of supporting his enterprizes, and ever ready to sacrifice his most faithful servants.

His principal favourites were, the Dukes of *Buckingham* and *Lauderdale*; Sir *Thomas Os*——*rn*, Earl of *Da*——*by*, afterwards Duke of *L*——*ds*; Sir *Henneage Fi*——*b* Lord Keeper, and Sir *Joseph Williamson* secretary of state. All these noblemen were ready to carry on such measures as the king should give into.

Villars duke of *Buckingham* had long been the chief instrument of the king's pleasures. The fruitful imagination of this man, (the very soul of whom) invented daily such diversions as reflected a great dishonour on the king. He possess'd all the talents which form the great Statesman; but these became useless, and even dangerous, by the excess of his dissoluteness, and his horrid impieties. Having neither religion, virtue or friendship he gloried in professing the most absolute atheism: 'twas he first corrupted the king's heart. He had introduced to that prince the celebrated *Hobbs*, who, upon pretence of teaching him the mathematicks, inspired him with his own ideas, with regard to religion and politicks. But at last *Buckingham* made himself odious to the nation; so that the Parliament besought the king to remove this dangerous minister from his councils. His favourite was near expiring when I appear'd at court; and he at last experienced the inconstancy of kings; for he was quite disgrac'd; and being remov'd from the post of chancellor of the university of *Cambridge*, the duke of *Monmouth* was elected in his room.

Fortune was more constant to the duke of *Lauderdale*. Altho' he was no less odious than his colleague, he yet

found means to keep his employments. He was a *Scotsman*, and of so subtil a turn of mind as was proof against obstacles and dangers. I soon saw into his character, notwithstanding his great cunning and dissimulation. He was bold even to intrepidity, ready at expedients, and exceedingly well skill'd in state affairs. He did not conceal a natural heat, that was nearly allied to fury, and which made him formidable to all parties in which interest had engaged him. He seem'd at first a rigid presbyterian, and signaliz'd his zeal against the royal prerogative; but in 1647, he offered his services to *Charles I.* He was taken prisoner at the battle of *Worcester*, and did not obtain his liberty, till after the frame of the government was alter'd. He was one of the first who went to the *Hague*, and offer'd his service to king *Charles the II.* This nobleman had flatter'd himself with being able to establish a despotick power in *Scotland*. Episcopacy having been restor'd in this kingdom, he became the greatest persecutor of the presbyterians. In 1660, the king appointed him his high commissioner in that kingdom; and by his authority and intrigues, the assembly carried the royal supremacy higher than had ever been known. *Lauderdale* arrogated to himself a power above the laws, for which he had a sanction from his majesty. He nominated the privy counsellors; and appointed such persons for judges who were at his devotion. He, only, gave pensions, dispos'd of places, and bestow'd favours of every kind. He levied or cashier'd the troops, and executed all things with so much severity, that he seem'd to be a director of the most cruel inquisition, rather than a minister, whose duty it was to make a people happy. But notwithstanding the zeal with which he endeavoured to sow the seeds of arbitrary power, he yet adhered to the presbyterian principles, and detested as much as possible the memory of king *Charles the I.* and his partizans. How base, how hypocritical, how dreadful was this conduct!

Sir Thomas Osbo — was born in *Yorkshire*. He was appointed lord high-treasurer in the room of lord *Clifford*; and owed this employment to his genius, which was capable of any attempt; of rashly carrying on any project; of removing obstacles by solid expedients which his inventive mind suggested to him on every occasion. He
gain'd

gain'd all his majesty's confidence, and maintained his post, in spite of the endeavours of the parliament, who took umbrage at the favour he was indulged. He was impeach'd of high crimes and misdemeanors; but for want of sufficient proofs, the prosecution was dropt.

Sir *Henneage F — ch*, who had been appointed lord-keeper, in the room of lord *Shaftsbury*, and was afterwards lord high-chamberlain, was of a supple turn of mind, and gave implicitly into all the king's measures. Regardless of the publick welfare, he sacrificed all things to present interest. He was, by his employment, one of the first noblemen of the realm; and he submitted to the meanest actions, to keep himself in his employment.

Williamson resembled him very much, and so was very fit for the employment of secretary of state; a post of such confidence, that it was not proper to bestow it on any other than a person wholly devoted to the king's will; and by that means capable of concealing the horrid mysteries of the government.

I may truly affirm, that I did not find so much as one man of honour in the whole court. But how dreadful was it to me to associate with a set of corrupt people, who openly despis'd virtue, and gloried in vice! I nevertheless projected a bold, and perhaps rash design; that is, I dar'd to be virtuous, in the midst of the general depravation of the court; and to this I owe the title of *Philosopher* which the king gave me. My wife had an employment under the queen, after which she contracted a very great friendship with Mrs. *Elizabeth Cromwell*, who was as much distinguished by her extraordinary merit, as her father had been odious to the whole world for his hypocrisy, his cruelty, and other vices. A commission was given to my eldest son, and his younger brother was appointed one of the king's pages. His majesty, as a proof of the confidence he repos'd in me, appointed me a member of the privy council, in spite of all the arguments I could use to dissuade him from it. The first time I took my seat in it, the members debated on the methods how to supply the king's necessities, and restore his credit and authority. They were greatly perplexed on this occasion, when, at last I propos'd the only thing that could be of real advantage to his majesty, which was, to recover the confidence
of

of the parliament, by issuing out a proclamation against the *Romish* priests and jesuits. The king had been us'd to this way of proceeding, for which he boasted to both houses, (as he always had done) his great zeal for their interest, and for the security of the church of *England*: but he was very insincere on this occasion; and as I had discover'd the notions he entertained of religion in general, I plainly perceiv'd that his speech was merely the effect of hypocrisy. I knew also that his majesty had embraced the popish religion in *Fontarabia*, and had always profess'd it secretly. I was likewise sensible, that he had no sooner received the sacrament from the hand of a protestant bishop, but he would go and take it from a popish priest. Such abominable principles of religion; so monstrous a mixture, fill'd me with horror; and I would frequently mention them to his majesty, with a liberty which the favour he indulged me seemed to authorize. However, my remonstrances were all to no purpose; for the jesuits had a supreme ascendant over his mind, and allow'd him to sport with religion, in order to obtain their ends by more secret, and for that reason, more secure methods. 'Twas impossible but some part of this must come to the ears of the nation; and hence it was, that the parliament gave him only fair words; and even went so far as to make enquiry into the state of the revenues and trade, which presently alarm'd the whole court.

An incident of a very singular nature quite disconcerted the king's design to advance the popish religion, and increas'd the suspicions people already entertain'd on that head. A *French* priest, *Luzanci* by name, abjured that religion, and preaching in a protestant church, made his apology in such terms, as the rising zeal, and often self-interested views of a proselyte frequently suggest. There was in *London* a jesuit, called father *St. Germain*, who had a great share in the king's confidence. This man went to *Luzanci*, and threatned to hire assassins to murder him, or get him convey'd back into *France*. The new convert, intimidated by these menaces, made a recantation, in writing, of the doctrines he had maintained in publick. This was complained of at the secretary's office, and afterwards in the house of commons. *Luzanci* accus'd the jesuit in the strongest terms, and produced a memorial containing

taining several private circumstances relating to his majesty. This was not without foundation; for the jesuit had been so imprudent as to reveal several things relating to the government, and among the rest, that the king was a papist; that the court was determined to establish an universal toleration, by which means all *England* would be subject to the see of *Rome*, in less than two years. By the way, the jesuits are seldom guilty of so much imprudence; fully persuaded that to execute great affairs, great secrecy is required.

This affair made a considerable noise in *England*. The protestants were alarm'd; the fears of the court increas'd, in proportion to the suspicions of the parliament. Orders were given to prosecute father *St. Germain*, with all the rigour which the nature of the crime, the profession of the person accus'd, and the interest of religion requir'd. The king, in order to get clear of this troublesome affair, feign'd according to his usual custom, a prodigious zeal for the church of *England*; so ordered a proclamation to be published, promising a reward of 200 *l.* for the taking of the jesuit, who by this time was out of all danger.

At the same, king *Charles's* correspondence with *France* was discovered. 'Twas declared, that the conquests of his most christian majesty in the Low-Countries would be fatal to the protestant religion; that king *Charles* would employ the power of *Lewis XIV.* in order to introduce popery into *Great Britain*, as was visible from the great condescension he shewed to *France*. These things made the people murmur, and gave rise to a numberless multitude of pamphlets, filled with odious truths; and alarmed the court so much, that I was afraid of some fatal revolution. In council, scarce any of the members were ever of my opinion; and I had the uneasiness to find myself the only person who spoke in favour of the publick good. My advice was never listned to, but when things were brought to the last extremity; was always despis'd on all other occasions; and after the house of commons came, at last, into the court-measures, I was accused of weakness and timidity. However, it was necessary, in order that some foundation might be given to these vain triumphs, to give the princess *Mary*, eldest daughter to the duke of *York*, in marriage to the prince of *Orange*. This match diffus'd a great joy over the whole kingdom; and I may take the liberty

berty to affirm, that the counsels I gave did not contribute a little to it; however, king *Charles* lost all the advantages he might naturally have expected from them. The secret negotiation he carried on with *France* in order to sacrifice the interest of his allies to the ambition of *Lewis XIV.* were discovered; and therefore the court was obliged to have recourse to new expedients. I myself hit upon one which very much puzzled the house of commons; for I propos'd to the council to conclude a league offensive and defensive with the States-General; and my plan being approv'd, was put in execution soon after. His majesty, in consequence of this, went to the parliament-house, to demand the subsidies necessary to support his new allies. The commons were very sensible, that in case they granted the king the monies he desired, they would be all thrown away; and that if they refused, his majesty might then justly continue inactive, and so the parliament would be responsible for the progress the *French* arms might make: nevertheless, they shewed such a firmness and resolution as quite disconcerted the council. They were urgent with the king to declare war with *France*, whilst I, on the other side, supported, to the utmost of my power, the address of the commons. The house afterwards impeached the ministry, and besought the king to remove especially the duke of *Lauderdale*. This address made the king lose all moderation; and, in order to strike a terror, he immediately rais'd an army of thirty thousand men.

Whilst it was levying, *Van Lewen*, envoy of the States-General, arriv'd in *London*. At his first audience he acquainted the king with the resolution his masters had taken, to conclude a separate peace with *France*, since *Great Britain* refused them even the least succour; and that his majesty's conduct expos'd them to the last extremities. I was urgent with his majesty to declare war, but all in vain; for he treated privately with *M. Barillon*, the *French* ambassador; and the negotiation was concluded at the rate of four hundred thousand pounds sterling. The king would have entrusted me with the care of this negotiation; but finding it unjust, I found means to disengage myself from it.

At

At last the king, notwithstanding the variety of intrigues he had carried on, could not compass his ends. The commons would have disbanded the forces, and even assign'd a fund for their pay to a certain time; but the court did not think that proper. The only pretence of maintaining 'em and of obtaining subsidies was in the view of concluding an offensive league, which was negotiated very happily by Sir *William Temple*. But this was done merely with a view of imposing on the nation, since *Lewis XIV.* knew very well beforehand, that he had no occasion to be under any apprehensions from this league. Nevertheless, the affair was transacted with so much cunning, that most people thought the peace of *Nimeguen* was owing to it.

At the same time a conspiracy was discovered, which very much alarm'd the whole nation. All the part I took in this affair, was founded on my inviolable attachment to the publick welfare, and my sincere affection for the king's person, whose life was expos'd to great dangers. I shall lay open this mystery as follows, observing however, that I shall descend to the particulars of this plot, for no other reason than to proceed, step by step, to the discovery of a melancholy incident relating to myself, which I am perswaded will not be unsatisfactory to the reader. *Israel Tongue* a Minister in *London*, addressing himself to me, reveal'd certain particulars relating to a horrid conspiracy contriv'd by the *Roman* catholicks against the church of *England*, the government, and the king; terrified at this discovery, I disclos'd it to his majesty in a private conference, when I endeavoured to make him sensible of the horror with which I was seiz'd on this occasion. The king seem'd astonish'd; but a moment after I remark'd such an indifference as was not natural to him, and which made me suspect he was not ignorant of the plot. Dr. *Tongue* finding the advice he gave neglected, suspected, very probably, that I had not acquainted the king with it; and therefore engag'd one *Kirkby*, a Chymist employ'd in his majesty's laboratory, to procure him an audience. Accordingly he was order'd to be in the park by eight the next morning. The king was there; took the written memorial of the plot, and, after perusing it with an air of indifference, bid *Tongue* address himself to the lord-high-treasurer. The informer waiting upon that nobleman,
told

told him, that the memorial he had presented to the king, was the copy of a writing which had been thrown into his house by persons unknown. *Tongue* return'd a few days after, and gave in a more ample relation than the former. The earl of *Danby* was sensible of the danger, and desir'd the king to issue out a proclamation for seizing of *Grove* and *Pickering*, who were charg'd with a design of assassinating the king. He also desir'd leave to inform the council of this plot; but, what is vastly surprizing, the king commanded him to stifle the affair, and not once mention it to the duke of *York*. Some time after, *Tongue* gave notice that the assassins were to meet at *Windsor*; but afterwards brought word that they had put off their journey. This uncertainty made the king imagine that the whole plot was a chimera; that the publishing of it might be of dangerous consequence, and might furnish his enemies with the plan of an enterprize, against his person, and also the means of putting it in execution. Such were the reasons he gave me to justify the silence he had commanded on this occasion. I was of opinion, that the conspiracy was levelled only at the church of *England*; and that the king, to remove all suspicions of his being concern'd in this horrid enterprize, had consented that mention should be made of a design to assassinate him. The advantage he intended to gain from this plan is evident: for, in case the conspiracy had been discover'd, was it possible for the nation to suppose he had the least hand in it, since a design was therein said to be form'd against his life?

But an accident which happen'd broke all the measures the King had taken, in order to keep this affair secret. *Tongue* declar'd that *Beddingfield*, confessor to the Duke of *York*, was to receive letters from the jesuits, which accordingly were received. The confessor surpriz'd at the mysteries contain'd in them, communicated 'em to the duke, who told the king of 'em; and being earnestly solicited by the duke to communicate them to the council, he was oblig'd to do it.

The reader is to know, that Dr. *Tongue* was no more; in this discovery, than the tool of *Titus Oates*, son to a ribbon-weaver in *London*, the latter had taken orders, and was possess'd of a living. He had liv'd, under the name of *Ambrose*, in the duke of *Norfolk*'s family; and he at
that

that time held private correspondence with the *Socinians*. Being reduc'd to the extremes of misery, he got acquainted with *Tongue*, who after having kept him some time in his house, advis'd him, in order to make his fortune, to join himself with the *Roman* Catholicks, in order to discover their secrets. Accordingly *Oates* abjur'd the protestant religion, and enter'd among the jesuits. In 1677 he was sent into *Spain*, thence to *St. Omers*, to the *English* seminary there ; and about the close of the year 1678 return'd to *England*, with the incidents contain'd in the memorial, which *Tongue* had undertaken to present to his Majesty.

The informer declar'd in this writing, that being intrusted by *Strange*, provincial of the jesuits in *England*, to carry letters from *Madrid* to Father *Suinam* an *Irishman*, he had open'd the packet, and read as follows, *viz.* that in *Scotland*, the jesuits endeavour'd to stir up the presbyterians to rebellion, they being inexpressibly aggriev'd by the barbarity of the duke of *Lauderdale*. That in *Valladolid* the *English* students were constrain'd by force, to abjure the oath of allegiance ; and that father *Armstrong* vented the most horrid imprecations, in his sermons against his *Britannick* majesty : That after making these and other discoveries, since his return to *London*, father *Strange* had sent him with a letter to *St. Omers*, in which mention was made of a design to assassinate the king ; that he himself had read, in his voyages several letters relating to the same plot, a design of overturning the constitution, and restoring the *Roman* catholic religion : That in the month of *April* of that year, being return'd to *England*, he had been present at a conference of fifty jesuits, who met at the *white horse* tavern in the *Strand*, where all sign'd their resolution to kill the king ; and the plan of the measures, they were to take for that purpose : That since this time he had again been sent to *St. Omers* from thence in *June* following back into his own country, where he had been inform'd of the contract made with Sir *George Wakeman*, phyician to the Queen, who, for 15000*l.* was to poison the King ; and another engagement of *Grove* and *Pickering*, who were to shoot his majesty. In fine, he had discover'd, that the jesuits had fomented the last wars, and set fire to the city
of

of *London*, by the artifice of father *Strange*, by which the society had got a booty, all charges paid, of fourteen thousand pounds.

This affair was made publick as soon as the council was inform'd of it. I made a numberless multitude of reflections, on the king's refusing to let any search be made, or prosecution be carried on. How suspicious, wou'd I say to my self; is this indifference! What can be the motive of it? This affair concerns the present state of the government, the religion establish'd by law, and even the king's life; and yet the king himself appears cold and indifferent at all these dreadful rumours! He seems so little touch'd with them, that one wou'd conclude they did not once affect him; he himself has therefore spread these reports; knowing that his person is secure from all attacks. But on the other side, can it be probable that he would be an accomplice in such dark, such infamous acts? Is it not more likely, that there really is a design to assassinate his majesty; but that he does not believe any thing of it; And yet, how will it be possible to contradict so many circumstances as are found in *Oate's* memorial? The papists, indeed, require a king who is resolute, active and vigilant. Now *Charles* possesses none of these qualities, but then they all are united in the duke of *York*, who, besides, professes the *Romish* religion openly; whereas the king suits his principles to his interest; not to mention that 'tis well known he has very little regard for religion in general. These considerations might have prompted the papists to conspire against his life, in order to raise the duke of *York* to the throne, who doubtless would be of greater service to 'em, and be absolutely at their disposal. Now, as the king puts the greatest confidence in those very wretches who are the conspirators, hey may easily persuade him, that the plot of which they are accus'd is mere fiction, invented by the protestants to ruin 'em. But be this as it will there is something very unaccountable in this stupid security of the king, which will not permit him to search into the horrors of this mystery of iniquity. In this manner I did argue without being able to fix my thoughts.

In the mean time *Tongue* was not disheartned at the inactivity of the court, but was still fully determin'd to

to pursue his accusations, in spite of the many repulses he had met with. The Lord-high-treasurer, inform'd of the king's thoughts on this head, fancied he had taken sufficient care of himself in having reported the whole to the council; and that after this, the king himself would be responsible for the calamities, which 'twas fear'd his negligence would occasion. In the mean time the informers were very zealous to defeat the visible endeavours which were us'd, to suppress the depositions, or to raise an opinion in the world, that the whole was a forgery, by so unusual, so extraordinary a silence.

Accordingly *Oates* went to Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*, a justice of peace, living in the parish of *St. Martins* in the Fields, and desir'd to take his deposition, by which he affirm'd, that the memorial he brought, contain'd matters of the utmost consequence to the king and government. Dr. *Tongue* was present at the same time, and swore that he himself had presented the like memorial to the king. Upon this assurance the justice administered the oath, of which he gave a certificate. The report of this was soon spread abroad, so that we were afraid it would be productive of ill effects among the people; so that I prevail'd with the council to send for *Tongue* and *Oates* before 'em. After his examination, an apartment, and a table were allow'd them in *White-hall*, and they were order'd a guard for the greater security of their persons. The council met morning and evening, for above a week, on this affair, and a little after they seiz'd Sir *George Wakeman*, physician to the Queen, *Edward Coleman*, secretary to the duke of York, *Richard Langhorn*, lawyer; *Thomas Whitebread* at that time provincial of the jesuits, *John Gawen*, *Anthony Turner*, *William Ireland*, *William Rumley*, *William Marshal*, *James Corker*, *Thomas Pickering*, all popish priests or jesuits. Several letters which *Coleman* had forgot were seiz'd at his house, but he had destroyed a much greater number.

An accident which happen'd soon after astonish'd the publick, who thought it a confirmation of the reality of the plot, and indeed I my self was of the same opinion. Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey* was missing on a sudden, and four days after was found murder'd, and his own sword thrust thro' him, in a ditch by *Primrose-hill*, near *Hampstead*.

stead. The coroner's inquest sat on the body, and the surgeons declar'd that Sir *Edmundbury* had been strangled, and that his own sword had been thrust through his body, some time after his death, since not a single drop of blood was seen to have trickled from the wound. The *Roman* catholicks were suspected to have perpetrated this horrid murder, which by this time made a very great noise. Upon this a proclamation was issued, promising a reward of five hundred pounds, and his majesty's protection, to any one who should discover the assassins.

I never in my life saw the King so uneasy as on this occasion. He had used his utmost endeavours to stifle this affair, and by that means was suspected of being at the head of this detestable enterprize. This was the publick talk ; and it was natural that the proceedings of the council should be taken notice of, as it would be impossible to prevent justice from taking its course. The parliament was now going to meet, and in all probability to take cognizance of a crime which struck at the religion and laws. There was room to fear, that this severe tribunal would make the strictest inquiry into mysteries which were of so horrid a nature, as to excite the most dreadful effects of his zeal. The king foreseeing this fatal discovery, did all that lay in his power to prevent this prosecution from coming before the parliament. The lord treasurer was commanded to be silent on that head ; and in the speech he made at the opening of the session, he delivered himself according to the instructions which had been given him. He declared, that he had been told of a conspiracy carrying on by the jesuits : That he intended to have the criminal judg'd by common law ; that they might expect, from his great affection for the protestant religion, and the love he bore his subjects, all the care and severity which the publick tranquility requir'd, as well as the safety of the church of *England*, which was now in great danger from that detestable enterprize.

The king was so well known, that not the least regard was had to his protestations ; and he might plainly perceive, that he had quite lost the esteem and confidence of the Nation. But he did not seem so much disturbed at
the

the unfavourable opinion his subjects entertained of him, as at the steps the Earl of *Danby* had taken. This statesman, firmly persuaded that the parliament would not fail to take cognizance of this affair, was afraid he should one day be made to answer for a silence, that is ever criminal on such occasions. But notwithstanding the king's prohibition, he communicated *Oate's* memorial to the house of commons. 'This was like a thunder-bolt to the artful monarch; and his favourite, very well pleas'd that he had secured himself from the storm, received with less confusion a very severe reprimand he naturally expected. Both houses were now extremely active. *Oates* was examined, and on his depositions, there was imprisoned in the *Tower* and other goals, twenty six persons all papists, among whom were the Lords *Powis*, *Stafford*, *Arundel of Wardour*, *Peters*, *Bellasis*, and Sir *Henry Tichburn*.

But now one *Bedloe*, formerly an officer in the low-countries, writ to the secretary of state, informing him, that he knew some particulars relating to the plot, and desir'd to be seiz'd. Accordingly he was taken up in *Bristol*, and being brought to *London*, the sixth of *November*, an apartment was given him in *White-hall*. A guard was appointed for his security; and a pension assigned him for his subsistence. He was examined by both secretaries of state. He then declared, that he was born a protestant, but had been overpersuaded, by the solicitations of the jesuits, to turn *Roman* catholick: That Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey* had been assassinated in *Somerset* house, where the queen kept her court. The day after this deposition, *Bedloe* appear'd before the lords, and nam'd among other accomplices, *Walsh* and *Phare*, both jesuits, who he declared told him, that lord *Bellasis* was to command in the *north*, lord *Powis* in *south Wales*, and the lord *Arundel of Wardour* was appointed to issue the several commissions necessary for that purpose. On these depositions the king, at the request of both houses, published a proclamation, for seizing of *Walsh*, *Phare*, *Conyers*, *Stimonds*, *Prichard* and *Castaway*, who were all fled. *Bedloe* was examin'd a second time before the lords, when he declared, that the jesuits of *Doway* had first acquainted him with this plot; and oblig'd him to take the sacrament

crament four times, on which occasion he swore inviolable secrecy: That being afterwards admitted into their confidence, he had discovered the names of the Noblemen appointed to superintend the whole; the number of forces which were to be raised in the kingdom, besides ten thousand men that were expected from *Flanders*: That the enterprize had been revealed, almost at the very instant it was to have been executed: That *Phaire* had acquainted him with the particulars of the intended massacre; the victims, and the wretches who were to be the actors of the horrid scene: That in case any of the conspirators should be seized, endeavours would be used to make away with him, by setting fire to the prison, or some other method: That he had often been assured, that there was not one papist in *England* of any distinction, but knew of this conspiracy. Lastly, that he was to have carried letters from one army to the other.

Edward Coleman was also examined at the king's-bench bar in *Westminster*, before the lord chief-justice *Scrogs*, *Oates* and *Bedloe* being confronted with the prisoners, charged them as follows. The former declared, that in *November 1677*, he had carried to *St. Omers*, from *Coleman*, letters filled with expressions highly injurious to the king; and that one particularly, written in *Latin* to father *la Chaise* confessor to *Lewis XIV.* by way of thanks for ten thousand pounds sterling which that jesuit had remitted; express'd, that this sum should be employed in getting proper emissaries for killing the king: That *Coleman*, in presence of this deponent, had approv'd of this abominable design, which had been concerted the *April* before: That in *August* following, the prisoner was present at an assembly of jesuits and benedictins, who were called together, purposely to consider of methods how to raise a rebellion in *Ireland*: That he had made the company present agree to the assassination of the duke of *Ormond*: That another time this deponent, had heard *Coleman* declare, that two hundred thousand pounds sterling had been collected for this rebellion. That the prisoner was privy to the design of sending four assassins to *Windsor*, and to the contract which had been made with *Sir George Wakeman*; and that he (the prisoner)

ner) had advised the augmenting the reward to fifteen thousand pounds. *Bedloe* assured farther, that he had seen *Coleman's* commission, appointing him secretary of state, signed by father *Paul Oliva* general of the jesuits, and approved by a brief from the Pope. This deponent added, that he owed this last discovery to Sir *Henry Tichburne*, who had brought commissions from *Rome* for divers lords, among which was that of *Coleman*. That he himself (*Bedloe*) had carried the 24th or 25th of *May* foregoing, a packet to *Paris*; to the Monastery of the *English* friars, that the letters contained in it, gave advice of the receiving of a sum design'd for the executing of this plot against the government and the church of *England*. The letters written by *Coleman* to father *la Chaise*, and the pope's nuncio at *Brussels* were produc'd, containing the particulars of the enterprize; the methods of putting it in execution, and the desire of a speedy assistance.

The prisoner made but a very weak defence, so was found guilty; and the next day was sentenc'd to be drawn, hang'd and quarter'd, which accordingly was executed at *Tyburn*, where he protested his innocence to the last gasp. This last circumstance filled me with horror, I not conceiving how it was thus possible for a wretch to die with a lie in his mouth.

But *Oates* and *Bedloe* went further, for they accus'd the queen before the king and council, of being an accomplice in Sir *George Wakeman's* conspiracy; nevertheless, this accusation was stifled by his majesty's authority. The commons, however, address'd the king, to remove the queen, and her domesticks from *Whitehall*. His majesty was highly exasperated against *Oates*, but the house of commons protect'd him, and required that he should be set at liberty, and a moderate pension settled upon him.

Some days after, there were brought to the sessions in the *Old Baily*, *John Fenwick*, *William Ireland*, *Thomas Pickering*, Jesuits, and *John Grove* a lay-brother. The three last were immediately tried, but *Fenwick's* trial was put off, because of the absence of some witnesses. *Oates* depos'd, that they had been present in the great assembly held *April 24*; that they had signed the resolution to kill the king; and had bound themselves to perpetrate this horrid act,

by

by the sacrament which father *Barton* the jesuit had administered to them; that they had appointed *Grove* and *Pickering* to kill the king, for which each was to have fifteen hundred pounds; that they used often to walk in the park with screw-barrelled pistols; that one day the flint of *Pickering's* pistol being loose, he thereby lost the opportunity of shooting the king, for which he was severely punished; that *Grove* and one *Smith* were appointed to collect *St. Peter's* penny, and that this deponent (*Oates*) had seen their register.

Bedloe, on the other side, declared, that he had been the messenger of the society five years; that he had the secret of opening letters, and by this means found that all related to the plot; that he had heard several of the conspirators declare, that their design was to extirpate to the very last of the Hereticks in *England*; that about the end of *August* 1678, *Ireland*, *Pickering* and *Grove*, had concerted (in father *Harcourt's* lodgings) upon the murder projected by the assassins of *Windsor*; that *Conyers*, a *Benedictine* Monk, was to make one; and that the blow should, if possible, be given at *New-Market*, when the king was walking out: That in this assembly of the conspirators, a resolution was made to take off several noblemen, and among the rest the dukes of *Buckingham* and *Ormond*, and the earl of *Shaftsbury* and *Offory*. The persons accused firmly denied the crimes laid to their charge, but nevertheless they were sentenced to die.

As the storm gathered more and more every day, the court was in the greater perplexity upon that account. A little after the council caused one *Miles Praunce* a silversmith to be seiz'd. He was charg'd with having a hand in the murder of Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*; and was brought before the committee appointed by the house, before their breaking up. These published his deposition, which contained a very particular account of the abovementioned execrable murder; and in consequence of them, seiz'd father *Girald* and *Kelly*, two *Irish* priests; *Robert Green* keeper of the cushions in the queen's chapel; *Laurence Hill*, servant to Dr. *Godwin*, treasurer of the chapel, and *Henry Berry*, porter to *Somerset* house. All were put to death that could be met with.

Stephen

Stephen Dugdale, servant to the lord *Aston*, was thrown into prison for refusing to take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. 'Twas thought this man would make great discoveries, but he denied at first his having any knowledge of this conspiracy. At last, after a long examination, being stung with remorse, he confessed that *Evans*, a jesuit belonging to lord *Aston's* family, had told him in *London*, that a resolution was taken to murder the king; that he (*Dugdale*) received the letters, and had consented that his name should be made use of, in order to carry on this correspondence with the greater secrecy; that *Evans* and *Gawen*, both jesuits, had also prompted him to undertake the assassination, promising, in case he committed the murder, to canonize him; that since that time, the lord *Stafford* had promis'd him five hundred pounds upon the same account. This deponent accused also *Vavassor*, *Giffard* and *Lewesson*, all three jesuits, and one *Breadstreet*, a priest. As there was a suspicion, that the court had projected the whole, the king was indispensably obliged to prosecute the conspirators; and accordingly a proclamation was issued for seizing those newly impeach'd, but most of them fled.

However, father *Giffard* was seiz'd; and who should this be, but the very jesuit I had known at *St. Cloud*, who had so speciously endeavoured to dispel my melancholy, and at last had carried off the lovely *Cecilia* I was to marry. Heavens! how great was my astonishment, when I cast my eyes on that execrable villain. Wretch! says I to him with a furious tone, (not reflecting that these transports were indecent in one who acted as a judge upon this occasion) after-betraying me in *France*, art thou come over into *England* to betray the king and nation? What punishment could be severe enough for one who has acted in so horrid a scene? The jesuit however appear'd unmov'd at my just resentments, and answer'd very calmly, that the crime he might have been guilty of with regard to me, had nothing to do with the conspiracy laid to his charge; that he had carried off *Cecilia* by the king's authority, which justified sufficiently his conduct on that occasion. That with respect to the plot for which he was seiz'd, he was innocent of it, and hoped I would be so just, as not to suffer my former prejudices to influence my

opinion on this occasion. He still continued to deny the crimes laid to his charge, but was nevertheless confin'd close prisoner.

I was very solicitous to know what he had done with *Cecilia*, for my heart had still some remains of tenderness for that engaging creature. Accordingly I obtain'd leave to visit him in prison. His resolution had now abandon'd him, so that I found him abject and submissive. He beg'd me to save his life, which it was not in my power to do. Wretches often stifle the checks of conscience, whilst they have an opportunity of committing vice with impunity; it even grows habitual to them; and actions of the blackest dye are considered as slight errors, by persons who have totally abandoned virtue. However, these guilty souls are no sooner exposed to punishment, but conscience awakes in them with unusual transports, and she at last receives, tho' too late, her empire; 'tis then they feel ten thousand stings, and the remembrance of their past crimes is the most cruel punishment. Such was the state of father *Giffard's* mind, and the pangs it suffer'd forc'd him to reveal it to me. His soul was all tumult, so that the sight of him inspired detestation of the guilt, and pity for the offender. I have merited, says he, death but too justly. Ten thousand could never, never cleanse my soul, which is polluted with the foulest crimes. This is not a time for me to dissemble. I began my wretched courses in my youth, by joining in the abominable debaucheries of a wealthy nobleman; and this execrable commerce continued some years. After the example of *Caligula*, I committed incest with my sisters; and, under the habit of a jesuit, I corrupted youth, with the care of whom I was entrusted in various colleges in *France*. I had a contempt for all religion, and made it serve only as a cloak to the most execrable designs. Tortured with the fears of divine justice, I delivered myself from these importunate reproaches, by persuading myself, or at least endeavouring to do so, that there was no God; and have since lived in this impious belief, as you might judge by the libertine subjects I discoursed with you upon at *St. Cloud*. When I introduced you to Mr. R—'s house, I myself was distractedly in love with his amiable daughter, the charming *Cecilia*. Common decency kept me at first within due bounds, but the

the instant I saw you going to possess this treasure, my rage and vengeance had no bounds. I therefore was resolutely determined to carry her off; and I executed my design very advantageously, under the shadow of the royal authority, and a false zeal for religion. I was commanded to shut her up in a convent, but that was far from my intention; I designing to carry her either into *England* or *Holland*, and, after abjuring my religion to marry her. Her great disinclination to take the veil, favoured my design. After opposing it some time, she at last began, seemingly at least, to approve it, when her father overtook us. Seeing him, I bid my accomplices shoot him dead, and they obeyed immediately. *Cecilia*, after this, considering me as the murderer of her father, conceiv'd an invincible aversion to me. She threatned to divulge all my guilt, and all the intreaties I made use of could not prevail with her to change her resolution. Finding I now had no longer any hopes, I was fully determined to enjoy her, at least, before I let her go. I employed all the efforts imaginable to make her comply with my will, but all in vain. I afterwards threatned her in the most severe terms, but to no purpose. At last, I was fully determined to force her; and for that purpose carried her to a lone house, there to spend the night. About midnight I entered her chamber, and arm'd with a dagger, gave her the choice, either to comply with my passion, or receive a cruel death at my hands. Life is preferable to all things, and infinitely dear to all sorts of creatures. The lovely *Cecilia* imagined she would save it by sacrificing her honour; however, I had no sooner satiated my lust, but I stabbed her in cold blood. I left in one of her wounds the instrument of my barbarous cruelty; and seeing the great effusion of blood, and herself pale and breathless, I shew'd her to all my accomplices; and ordered the master of the house to bury that unfortunate maiden; beseeching him, for the honour of the young lady's family, not to divulge the manner of her death, for fear, as I speciously told him, the body should be treated with ignominy by the magistrates. After perpetrating this villany, I return'd immediately to *St. Cloud*, where I revealed the whole to my superior. You would naturally imagine that I should have been punished very severely for it, but 'twas far otherwise; it

being a law among us to punish slight errors only ; for as to enormous crimes, they are buried in the deepest oblivion, to preserve the honour of the society. If there is any danger of the secular arm interfering, then the offender is sent away. In this view, my superior advised me to go upon a mission into *England*, in order to make my peace with heaven. I accepted of this employment with inexpressible pleasure, and accordingly embark'd for *England*, before *Cecilia's* murder was divulged. Since that I have been inform'd, that the beautiful *Cecilia* did not die of her wounds, but return'd back to her mother. In fine, that she left the kingdom with the greatest part of her fortune, but whither she retir'd no one could tell. The jesuit then cried out, suffer me to live, notwithstanding the mighty crimes I have committed ; for now I begin to acknowledge the existence and justice of the Almighty, and possibly may obtain his pardon by my repentance.

Wretch, says I to him, thy life is not in my power, for were it so, I would give it thee ; fully persuaded, that it would be impossible to suit better thy punishment to thy guilt, than by permitting thee to drag the horrid weight of that criminal life thou so meanly suest for ; but the laws will never suffer so vile a monster as thou art to enjoy the light of the sun. Life is a present made by heaven, which those who abuse it are unworthy of. Prepare thyself for the most cruel chastisements, the most terrible death. But since thou hast discovered to me so vast a scene of horror, satisfy my curiosity, by discovering to me the particulars of the conspiracy.

At this question, gazing about with wild distraction, and at last fixing his eyes on me, since we are alone, said he, I will confess to you that this conspiracy is too real, and that it was first set on foot by the k — himself, and the duke of Y —, in the view of extirpating heresy, and introducing a despotick form of government. The affair was compleated in some neighbouring courts, and especially in *Rome*. Father *Oliva*, our general, is the soul of this intrigue. The design at first was entirely to make the king absolute, and to establish popery in *England* ; but the directors saw with indignation, the timidity, uncertainty and fickle temper of the king. They observed, that this prince was totally unfix'd with

with regard to religion; and were afraid that should he be raised to despotick power, he then would refuse to destroy the church of *England*. From these considerations, a design was form'd to assassinate him, and to set the duke of Y— on the throne; his great zeal for popery being so well known. Besides, this prince has all the qualities requisite for promoting the vast projects of the holy see. But the utmost endeavours are used to persuade the king, that the last part of the conspiracy is a mere chimera; and his fear lest the accomplices should accuse him of being the contriver of it, is a curb to him, and keeps him from searching to the bottom of this mystery. By the way, added he, we all bound ourselves to a most inviolable secrecy, by the most horrid oaths; so that you must not wonder to hear me deny to the last gasp, the truth of what I now reveal to you in private. I also would advise you, not to make an ill use of what I have now discovered to you, for in that case be assured your life would be in danger. You would run the hazard of being murdered, even in the palace of *Pigmalion* himself; and tho' you should be secured by an hundred gates of iron, you would not escape the vengeance of the conspirators, in case you should ever blab what I have told you.

My wife, who, as I before observed, was in the queen's service, made a discovery, which agreed in every point with father *Giffard*'s declaration. The king had that very day a secret interview with the duke his brother, in her majesty's apartment. What am I to think, says the k— of the plot that is carrying on against my life? What motives can the catholicks have to proceed to such abominable lengths? 'Tis for their sakes I have made myself suspected, and even odious to my subjects. By the generous protection I indulged them, I have drawn upon myself part of the publick hatred, which before was levelled against them intirely. The nation in general distrusts me; and is ripe for rebellion. The presbyterians are formidable by their number; they seek only my ruin, and will revenge the cruelties I exercised against them, merely out of complaisance to the catholicks; but how am I rewarded? by the blackest perfidy. Those whom I considered as my friends, and would have raised on the ruin of their adversaries; for whose sake I have put all that is dear to me at

stake, and hazard all things; these ungrateful wretches betray me, and have form'd a design to take away my life. My brother, nay even my consort, are accused of having a hand in this unnatural plot! What am I to think of all this? Alas! how wretched is my condition! I was ten thousand times more happy in my exile. When will my calamities end? The nation vents the most severe complaints; its indignation breaks forth on all occasions against my ministers; and perhaps a sudden revolution may bring my head, as well as that of my royal father, to a scaffold.

The k — spoke these words with unusual emotion; and as for the q —, who was present at this discourse, she did not make a word of answer; however, the duke of r — observed with a soft tone of voice, that the execrable design of assassinating his majesty, could be no other than mere calumny, invented by the hereticks; that as to himself, he was wholly innocent of it; and thought it necessary to observe, that he was full as unfortunate as his majesty; that he was no less the object of the publick hatred; and therefore, in order to lay the storm which was gathering, he was determin'd, in case his majesty thought proper, to leave the kingdom. The king consented to it, and accordingly his royal highness went to *Brussels* a few days after. In the same conference he told his majesty, that it was absolutely his interest to be as tender as possible to the conspirators, and the motives of the conspiracy; adding, that a discovery on this occasion would utterly ruin his majesty, the nation being but too much exasperated against him, and the greatest part of his ministers.

Mrs. *Cleveland* had heard all these particulars, she being in the next room, and accordingly gave me an account of the whole that evening. After comparing these things with those father *Giffard* had inform'd me of, I was compleat master of the whole intrigue. I then perceiv'd the motive of the king's tenderness towards such of the conspirators as were of the *Romish* religion; but this fill'd me with the deepest disquietudes, and perplexed me very much.

The king had been vastly kind to me, and I owed the splendid fortune I now enjoy to his liberality. As this prince possessed, notwithstanding all his errors, a thousand virtues, he had always been dear to me. My gratitude was

so strong, that I thought I could expose myself to the greatest dangers, to secure, if possible, his majesty's person. I resolv'd therefore to speak to him with freedom, and to give my opinion on the methods I thought most conducive to his safety. As his majesty had always condescended to hear me with a peculiar indulgence, I said to him one day, royal sir, I dare flatter myself that I am one of your most affectionate and most faithful subjects. 'Tis with the utmost regret I see the calamities with which you are surrounded. You cannot but be sensible of the present ill posture of affairs; the fatal dispositions of the people, and the treachery of those who falsely call themselves your friends: but evilcounsellors and indiscreet enterprizes have plung'd you into these fatal extremes. Let us therefore search out some expedient to extricate you; an expedient that may be honourable; and consequently agreeable to your majesty. The absence of the duke of Y—— has already produced a happy change in the minds of the nation; make, therefore, royal sir, a fresh effort, in order to recover entirely the esteem and confidence of your subjects. Now I humbly conceive, that the best expedient on this occasion, will be to change the ministry. By this means you will content the publick, and silence the murmurs of the parliament. Form a new council of persons of known honour and integrity; change also (if I may presume to express myself with so much freedom) your own conduct: impute, royal sir, to the zeal I have for your welfare, what I now speak freely, and without the least disguise. 'Tis publickly known, that you keep several mistresses, who are so insatiably greedy, that they quite drain your treasury, and put you out of a condition to relieve your real and immediate wants. I therefore humbly beseech your majesty to make a better use of the subsidies which your parliament allows with so much reluctance. Lay aside the project you had meditated, of raising yourself to despotick power; a project so strongly promoted by your criminal flatterers. Only make the justice and obligation of the regal dignity the standard of your conduct, and you then will obtain all you can wish for. You have lost, royal sir, the affection of your subjects, by the profusion with which you have la-

Wished your treasury, and your too haughty behaviour. Change but your views, and you will recover your former credit. Make it your study to search for and reward persons of virtue and talents; and by this means you will soon gain a sufficient number of faithful servants and friends, who will make your interest their care, by procuring the felicity of your people. Remove from your person and your councils, a set of artful, corrupt wretches, who have led you insensibly to the very brink of the precipice. May I presume to add with the same liberty, that God is just; and that he punishes those who forsake or despise him, without excepting the greatest kings. Taught by the duke of *Buckingham*, you have imbibed lessons of impiety, which have prov'd of fatal consequence. The jesuits, royal sir, have taught you to make a monstrous mixture of two religions diametrically opposite in their nature. Now what fruits did you propose to reap from this conduct? Did you think it was possible to impose long on an intelligent nation, which watches so very narrowly over the least steps taken by their sovereign? Ought you not to have dreaded all that happened to you, in case this dark mystery should happen to be discovered? Had your majesty but followed the wise and prudent counsel of lord *Clarendon*, you would not then be reduced to this fatal extremity. You would then have reign'd in peace, and with all the authority which our laws allow a monarch! but alas! in all probability the calamities of the *Stuart* family were not to end with the murder of your royal father. I therefore humbly beseech your majesty, to take a strong, a generous resolution, to listen only hereafter to the counsels which virtue may inspire, for she will never deceive you.

I perceived that the king was not pleased at my discourse; and therefore put an end to my remonstrances, for fear of exasperating, instead of correcting him. Monarchs, in general, care to hearken to such things only as soothe their passions, and consequently are offended with freedom of speech. Accustomed to flattery, every thing ingenuous appears dry and bitter to them. King *Charles* was no ways exempt from this frailty; but the ill situation of his affairs at that time, would not permit him to check me. He therefore thanked me with a modest air, and declared that he would follow the plan I had trac'd to him:

that

that he was very unhappy in not having till now met with a friend, or a soul generous enough to instruct him in the knowledge of virtue and his true interest: that the earl of *Clarendon* had doubtless given him the best counsels, but that he had always frown'd at him on those occasions: that I spake with as much liberty as he had done, but softned my counsels with a modesty which made them graceful; and that the advantage of them was very palpable. Saying these words, his majesty embraced me with the utmost tenderness. I then told him what I had heard from father *Giffard*, which surprized him very much. 'Tis of the utmost consequence to your majesty's welfare, said I, that you take off that dangerous, that abominable wretch; otherwise he may disclose this dark scene of iniquity to the publick, and therefore you must prevent him. He is guilty of numberless crimes, the least of which would deserve death. You bear the sword, in order to execute justice, and 'tis your majesty's interest to exercise it secretly on this occasion. Employ therefore, some faithful domestick, to rid yourself and the world of the greatest of villains.

Immediately the king resolved to dispatch this wretch by poison, which accordingly was executed before the meeting of the parliament: A death doubtless infinitely too soft for so execrable a villain.

The very day after this, the king form'd a new council, consisting of thirty members, chosen from among the chief officers of the crown, from the several degrees of the nobility, and even from the house of commons. But the greatest surprize in this change, was to see the earl of *Shaftsbury* made president of the council. The applauses the city of *London* and the whole nation broke into on this occasion, was a strong proof of the satisfaction it gave them. The king did not fail to make advantage of this mysterious change; however, the people had been so often deceiv'd, that this news, so far from removing their suspicions, was looked upon as an artifice employed by the court, in order to carry on their attempts with the greater security; for it was not believed, that the king would sacrifice sincerely his own private designs, for the sake of the publick welfare. Nevertheless, this change in

the ministry, and the choice now made, was very grateful to all who had a sincere affection for the king.

A discovery that was soon made, strengthened this prejudice, and furnish'd the enemies of the court with a fresh subject of alarms. The house of a citizen of *London* was set on fire, and his maid-servant seiz'd upon suspicion. Being brought before commissioners appointed for that purpose, she confess'd, that she herself had set fire to that house, at the instigation of one *Stubbs* a *Roman* catholick, who had rewarded her with five hundred pounds. *Stubbs* corroborated this deposition, adding, that he had been corrupted by father *Giffard* his confessor; upon that jesuit's assuring, that the setting fire to a protestant's house was a meritorious deed. The prisoners declar'd farther, that the *English* papists waited only the arrival of three score thousand men from *France*, in order to excite a general insurrection in all parts of the kingdom. 'Tis much easier to conceive than express the effect this discovery produced. Every one remembred the dreadful fire of *London* in 1666, which consum'd upwards of thirteen thousand houses. Now this second attempt excited the horror and indignation of the publick against the *Roman* catholicks. Father *Giffard* was less unhappy than he deserv'd, by being only poison'd in prison.

The commons earnestly besought the king, to give orders for the execution of *Pickering*, and the other popish priests then under sentence of death; and in order to secure the protestant religion, it was resolv'd, that the right which the duke of *York* had to the succession, prompted the papists to all the dark designs they had attempted. A resolution had already been taken to exclude that prince from the throne, which alarm'd the king very much. Had he not been so universally defam'd, my counsels would have been of service to him; and this was the only card left him to play, with any appearance of success. He order'd the lord chancellor to make an offer in his name, for the security of the church of *England*, and the constitution, viz. to enact, that a popish king of *England* should be permitted to promote none but protestants to benefices and dignities in the church. That no *Roman* catholick should be allowed a seat in either house of parliament:

ment: That no person possess'd of offices of trust, either in the courts of judicature, the privy council, or the chancery, should be remov'd without the authority of parliament, as also the lord lieutenants of the several counties. All things that had the least relation to the court were suspected. All these statutes were look'd upon as so many snares; and notice was taken how often they had been infring'd in the two preceding reigns. No safety appeared but in the projected exclusion; so that the commons, without debating on what his majesty had offered, prepared the bill, in order to stop the enterprizes of the papists. After this, they went upon the exclusion bill. This open'd with a minute relation of the conspiracy. 'Twas added in it, that *James* duke of *York*, seduced by the *Roman* catholicks, professed their religion publickly, carried on a criminal correspondence with the pope and other powers, who were enemies to the protestants; and that he formed a detestable enterprize, in the hopes of being soon rais'd to the throne. Upon this account 'twas required, that it should be enacted by the authority of the king, lords and commons, that *James* duke of *York*, of *Albany* and *Ulster*, should be incapable of succeeding to the imperial crown of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*; that after the king's death, or in case of resignation, the throne should devolve to the next heir, to the exclusion of the said duke, who by this act was considered as dead: That the duke and his adherents should be declared guilty of high treason, in case the least endeavours should be used, by their influence; to put that prince in possession of any of the three kingdoms.

Cleveland, said the king when he heard this news, you see how insufficient your counsels are. I am highly exasperated at the proceedings of the parliament. I would rather lose my crown, than suffer such insults, and so manifest a contempt of my authority. Think therefore of a more effectual expedient than those you have hinted to me on other occasions. This reproach which I no ways deserved, exasperated me very much. If my counsels, replied I, have been insufficient, your majesty is not to blame me, but your base flatterers. Had I been listned to, before it was too late, all the sinister accidents which have since happened would have been prevented. My
counsels

counsels were considered as philosophical dreams, as platonick ideas, tho' they would have been productive of the greatest benefits had they been followed. Now, when things are brought to the last extremities, my advice is asked. I deliver my sentiments with freedom, and propose such methods as appear to me most secure, most honourable and most advantageous. Possibly your majesty may approve them from necessity: but, if you don't reap all the advantages you might from them, is that my fault? Surely, royal Sir, 'tis rather that of your favourites, who have reduced you to the sad condition you are now in, and I cannot think of any method to extricate you from it. What you say, replied the king, is very true, but how must I act? 'Tis impossible for me to stop the proceedings of the parliament any otherwise than by proroguing it, and accordingly he did so.

These animosities had like to have occasion'd a great revolution in *Scotland*. The duke of *Lauderdale* govern'd that kingdom in quality of his majesty's high commissioner. This nobleman had taken care to bribe the parliament of that kingdom, and by that means had established an arbitrary power in it. His chief aim was to extirpate the presbyterians; and those unfortunate victims suffered a very severe persecution for several years. But now, the withdrawing of the duke of *York* began to revive their hopes. They appointed duke *Hamilton*, and some other lords to carry their complaints to the court in *London*. The cause was pleaded in full council; and the tyranny of the ministry, the infraction of the laws and other grievances, were so manifestly proved, that the members promised to see justice done, and to change the ministry there. The king did not open his lips whilst the affair was debating; but afterwards approved the judgment of the council, and seem'd to abandon the interest of the duke of *Lauderdale*. Being afterwards alone with his majesty, I desired to know what opinion he entertain'd of his favourite after what he had now heard. What would you have me say to him, replied the king; the *Scots* charge him with a thousand crimes committed against them, but I don't find they accuse him of wronging me?

Whilst the council was endeavouring to do justice to the *Scots*, the malecontents, either out of diffidence, or

from an excess of hatred against their persecutors, resolved to take advantage of the troubles which broke out in *England*, in order to revenge themselves. Accordingly they took up arms, and Dr. *Sharp* Archbishop of *St. Andrews* fell the first victim of their rage, they murdered him in the most barbarous manner. This was the signal for the insurrection, and in a few days six thousand men were got together. These seizing upon *Glasgow*, and the several cities in the neighbourhood, made a most dreadful havock.

This news redoubled the alarms of his majesty, and upon that he immediately sent the duke of *Monmouth* against the *Scots* rebels. His grace marched some *English* regiments that were on the frontiers into *Scotland*, where a body of troops were also assembled. The duke set out with his army, which was far from considerable, against the rebels, which he defeated the 22d of *June*. Of these, eight hundred were kill'd, and twelve hundred taken prisoners. Several of them were afterwards executed, among whom were some ministers, who had been very zealous on this occasion. A great number of prisoners were transported into the *American* colonies. The duke of *Monmouth* obtain'd afterwards a general pardon in favour of the *Scots*, which he published; with leave for them to meet together to solemnize divine service. However, they soon fell again into their former unhappy circumstances, by the fall of that nobleman. Upon this their churches were shut up; the officers, gentlemen and ministers were excepted out of the general pardon; and all the presbyterians of that kingdom were obliged to find sureties for their good behaviour.

Upon the duke of *Monmouth's* return from his expedition, the partizans of the duke of *York* accused him of despising the orders of the king his father, in the view of engaging the affections of the people. His majesty being now prejudic'd against him, said the moment he saw the duke, with an air of coldness and indifference; that had he gain'd this victory, he would not have encumbered himself with prisoners. The duke, who in all probability was nettled very much, replied with too haughty a tone, that he could not prevail with himself to murder so many people in cold blood; that being the office of the executioner.

Monmouth,

Monmouth, after his coming out of the palace at *Whitehall*, met me in the alleys near the *Mall*. The instant he perceiv'd me, he came up very hastily, and told me all that had pass'd. The reader may have observed an invariable sincerity in all my actions; accordingly I spoke very frankly to his grace. I told him plainly, that the answer he made the king was too abrupt; and that it charg'd his majesty, who was naturally of a human disposition, with cruelty; that the near relation he bore to him, (that of a son) ought to have made him show greater respect to a father, who loved him with the utmost tenderness: In a word that his too rash answer would very probably hasten the disgrace with which he was threatned. The duke seem'd no ways inclin'd to listen to these remonstrances. Distracted by the ill offices which the partisans of the duke of *York* had done him, he answered me very haughtily, that he was too long acquainted with my censorious temper; that I ought to address him with more respect; that my behaviour shew'd evidently my descent; that *Oliver Cromwel* had barbarously murdered king *Charles*, after having gained the confidence of the nation, by an outward shew of wisdom, altogether as insincere as that I affected. These insulting expressions exasperated me: *Monmouth*, says I, you wound me in the most tender part; had any man but the son of my king, spoke in such insolent terms, I would have punished him that moment for it. Tho' I am the son of a traitor and tyrant, I yet can confine myself to the bounds of fidelity and duty; and would to God your designs were not of a more dangerous tendency than mine! I endeavour much more to be really virtuous, than to appear so; and this circumstance makes a prodigious difference between you and me. The duke, without making one word of answer, gave me a strong box of the ear. So outrageous an affront swell'd me to fury. Wretch! says I to him, drawing my sword, thy blood shall atone for the honour thou endeavourest to rob me of. Immediately I rush'd upon him, and provok'd him to draw also. Now it happen'd that an officer who had gone at some distance from us, as soon as we began our conference, came up at the noise; and seiz'd me as I was going to stab my enemy, who refus'd to draw. Cowards are generally cruel; and this was the character

rafter of *Monmouth*, who did not save the prisoners in *Scotland* out of humanity, but merely from a political view. The duke no sooner saw I was disarm'd, but he fell upon me with his cane, and endeavoured to smite me in the face. On the other side, his servants and mine were fighting; and did not leave off till they saw *Monmouth* go away with his friend, who carried off my sword.

I now was frantick almost to despair, and had never been seiz'd with such violent agitations. Honour call'd upon me to challenge *Monmouth*, and I was fixed in that resolution. Accordingly I sent a Gentleman, who declared that I desired to fight him, and bid him name the time and place. However, I took a very wrong step, in not acquainting the King with it: But my enemy was base enough to do this, firmly persuaded that his Majesty would lay his commands upon us not to fight: and this was the very screen he wanted. Nevertheless, the king disapprov'd of his son's conduct, insomuch, that he reprimanded him very strongly upon that account, and threatned him with the most severe effects of his indignation: At the same time he was pleas'd to send me one of his confidants, who told me, that he would oblige the duke of *Monmouth* to give me satisfaction before the whole court; but that he was highly displeas'd at my having sent him a challenge; and therefore forbid the consequences; giving me his royal word, that he himself would take care I should have satisfaction. At the same time he ordered me to return to court; declaring, that the instant I appeared there, I should be highly satisfied with the protection he would indulge me.

I desir'd the gentleman to tell his majesty, that I was infinitely oblig'd to him for this testimony he was oblig'd to honour me with, of the continuance of his favour; but humbly besought him to let me keep from court. I added, that the duke of *Monmouth's* making an apology for the affront, was not atonement sufficient; that I was too generous to take the law of him; but that the same principle would oblige me to venture my life, in order to recover my honour: That I could never believe his majesty would condemn the resentment I so justly entertain'd, and therefore I entreated him with all the most profound humility, not to prescribe limits

to my revenge, since the duke's behaviour was so very irregular. The king a little after sent me word, that he hop'd I would be satisfied, now he had commanded *Monmouth* to depart the kingdom, and had remov'd him from the post of captain-general.

Had I been ignorant of the real cause of this duke's disgrace, I should have been infinitely more affected with the interest his majesty seem'd to take in my cause, tho' to the prejudice of his own son; but I am sensible, that this revolution was owing to an unforeseen accident. The king had been seiz'd with so violent a fever at *Windsor*, that the physicians were afraid his life was in danger. The earl of *Essex* and the Lord *Halifax*, enemies to the duke of *Monmouth*, endeavoured to secure themselves from his hatred, by prevailing on the king to recall the duke of *York*. The intrigue was carried on with so much secrecy and dispatch, that the Prince appear'd at court, before the contrary party had any advice of his return. However, as the king was out of danger, the council thought it absolutely necessary, that the duke of *York* should return to *Brussels*, for fear lest his presence should make both the Nation and the parliament murmur.

However, the duke did not leave the kingdom, till he had got *Monmouth* banish'd to *Holland*, *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, earl of *Shaftsbury*, being in *Monmouth's* interest, shar'd in his disgrace. It may not be improper to give you a short draught of his character, as it will give you a better idea of the genius of the court. In 1670, the king took him into the ministry and his greatest confidence, and in 1672, created him earl of *Shaftsbury*. He was a man of prodigious wit, capacity and understanding, and had the art of winning the confidence of all with whom he transacted, and of conducting the most important enterprizes. He was by principle a Deist. When the troubles first broke out in the late reign, he was a great stickler for king *Charles I.* but afterwards became a very zealous parliamentarian, and at last my father's greatest confident. *Charles* the second being restored, *Southampton*, lord high treasurer, whose niece he had married, brought him to court, where his extraordinary merit blotted out the prejudices which his sickleness had made

made the world entertain. Sir *Orlando Bridgman* being dismissed the post of lord chancellor, *Shaftsbury* was raised to that dignity. In 1663, he openly favour'd the enemies of the court; self-interest obliging him to abandon that of his Sovereign. This nobleman knew the king's great weakness; and as he had been careless of his own welfare in the most important occasion possible, he had the ingratitude to abandon his most affectionate ministers to the hatred of the people. *Shaftsbury*, who was odious to the parliament, was supposed to be at the head of all the court enterprizes. He saw the storm which was gathering over his head, and was afraid that the house of commons would make him the principal object of their vengeance. Being thus apprehensive that the king would abandon him, he endeavoured secretly to provide for his own safety. Accordingly, an affair coming upon the carpet, in which the court stood in need of all his credit; he declared strongly against lord *Clifford*, at that time high-treasurer, who proposed to the house of peers the establishing of a perpetual fund; the design of which was, that they might be in a capacity, hereafter, to act without the concurrence of the house of commons. But the chancellor immediately refuted lord *Clifford's* proposal; and shew'd, that this plan was ridiculous and impracticable; would destroy the constitution, overturn the laws, bring the kingdom into the most dreadful confusion, and ruin the king and all the royal family. A little after this, the seals were taken from him, in opposition to the rules of the most just politicks; but the obstinate proceeding of the house of commons exasperated the king in a violent degree, insomuch that 'twas impossible for him to suppress his anger any longer; firmly persuaded, that his favourite had betray'd all his secrets, and fomented the animosity of the commons.

After very warm debates about the interpretation of a law of *Edward III.* the earl of *Shaftsbury*, and three other noblemen were sent to the Tower. These three, who were *Buckingham*, *Salisbury*, and *Wharton*, soon obtain'd their liberty; but *Shaftsbury* continued thirteen months there, fully resolved not to implore his majesty's clemency; but at last he ask'd pardon upon his knees in the house of lords, both for the fault he had committed, and the obstinacy

stinacy with which he denied it. In 1679 he recovered his credit at court, but the duke of *Monmouth's* disgrace occasioned his fall a few months after, which was owing to the great zeal he discovered for the interest of the people.

The King was, about this time, in a very unhappy situation. The parliament, by the vigour with which they supported religion and the laws, gave him inexpressible uneasiness; and the dispositions of the people were such, that it was very much the interest of the court not to exasperate them still more. Now nothing could be so proper to quiet them, as to sacrifice to their hatred the conspirators whom I have so often mentioned. Accordingly the king resolved to do this, and the following persons were try'd and sentenced to die, *viz. Thomas Whitebread*, Provincial of the jesuits in *England*; *William Harcourt*, rector of *London*; *John Fenwick*, procurator of the jesuits in this kingdom; *John Gawen*, and *Anthony Turner*, popish priests, and *Richard Langhorn*, a Roman Catholick, and a celebrated lawyer, to whom the pope had granted a patent, after the revolution should take place, for the post of attorney general. *Whitebread* had fled, and most of the rest were executed the 20th of *June*, 1679; but *Langhorn* was not put to death till the 14th of *July* following.

The publick considered, as an action of the blackest dye, the protestation which the abovementioned criminals made of their innocence, even in their expiring moments, and that with the most horrid imprecations. This is a manifest proof, that the oath of a dying man is not always to be depended upon, especially if it clashes with facts that are universally known, the confession whereof would blast his reputation to all succeeding ages. Religion and integrity seldom get the better on this occasion. Posterity, no doubt, will see a great number of memorials, which will exhibit many proofs of what I have here advanced, with regard to the false oaths taken by the conspirators before their death.

At that time, the house of commons were very vigorous in their prosecution of the earl of *Danby*, whom they suspected very much, because of the great favour the king shew'd him. His conduct was enquired into, and he was charg'd with male-administration. They accused him, with

with having declared in full council, *That a new proclamation of the king, was of greater authority than an old act of parliament*: However, his impeachment was dropp'd, because that nobleman, contrary to his majesty's express command, acquainted the house with several important particulars relating to the conspiracy. By this means, the earl made himself odious to the *Roman* catholicks, whom he opposed to the utmost of his power, in the hopes of making the king strike into such a course, as would be truly for his interest, and the advantage of his kingdoms. His great intimacy with the prince of *Orange*, and the hatred he openly discovered for *France*, animated the partizans of that court against him. Things were at that time in so great a ferment, and the animosity between the court and the house of commons was carried to so prodigious a height, that people did not know how to act. The negotiations which Mr. *Montague*, the *English* Embassador in *France*, had been carrying on in that kingdom, prompted the house of commons to revive their impeachment of the earl of *Danby*. Without descending to the particulars of these inveterate disputes, the remembrance of which is so fresh, I shall observe, that after several examinations, the earl of *Danby*, possibly, out of regard to the king, being unwilling to clear himself by producing his majesty's orders for all he had done, suffered himself to be committed to the tower, where he lay four or five years, in spite of the peers, who did their utmost endeavours, from time to time, to get him released.

During this interval, a thousand attempts were made, to oblige *Oates* and *Bedloe* to retract what they had declared with regard to the plot; but all in vain. A project was formed, in order to cast the odium of it upon the Presbyterians, and that by a gathering which was made from house to house, in favour of *Oates* and *Bedloe*, upon pretence that the court allowance was not sufficient for their subsistence. The artifice was universally suspected, so that the collectors were treated with the utmost disdain. Had these collected a considerable sum, a report would immediately have been spread, that they had been hired by the Presbyterians to slander the Papists.

The conspirators employ'd also one *Reading*, a Counsellor, to corrupt *Bedloe*, and engage him to retract what he
had

had sworn against the lords imprisoned in the *Tower*, especially the lords *Peters*, *Powis*, *Stafford*, and Sir *Henry Tichburne*. However, *Bedloe* contrived matters so artfully, that he caught *Reading* in the very snare he had laid for him. He hid two persons in the room in which they had their conference, by which means the bribery was discovered. *Reading*, after playing these tricks, was sentenced to pay a fine of a thousand pound, to stand in the pillory, and be imprisoned for twelve months.

New engines were daily set at work to get the lords out of the *Tower*, and in this view, *Price* and *Tasborough* were employ'd to corrupt *Dugdale*. This man complied with their desires, and gave them a paper, in which he confess'd, that he had charged the *Roman* catholicks unjustly, with having a hand in the conspiracy; and that the whole was a meer chimera. A considerable sum was promised him for making this declaration; but at last, they began to suspect *Dugdale*'s fidelity, and thereupon they went and accused him of having offered to recant; but the former had laid his schemes so well, that he discovered the artifices of those two wretches, who were thereupon committed to prison.

All these projects being defeated, a new one was form'd. 'Twas to ruin the earl of *Shaftsbury*; and to charge the dukes of *Monmouth* and *Buckingham*, the earls of *Essex* and *Hallifax*, several of the most considerable merchants of the city, and myself, with the horrid design of assassinating the king. One *Dangerfield*, who lay in prison for debt, was released by lady *Powis*, and afterwards hired to run about from tavern to tavern, to spread reports, and copies of letters, as tho' the greatest lords and others, who had appeared most active in their endeavours to discover the famous conspiracy, had themselves writ them. I did not escape on this occasion, for the villains counterfeited my hand, and coat of arms; and writ letters in my name, which gave occasion to a report, that I was engaged in a horrid plot, and one of the principal conspirators. These were said to be forty in number, of whom there were so many lists, and in each list eight hundred names. The letters and lists were to be laid privately in the houses of the persons named, which were afterwards to be searched, upon pretence of some conspiracy. Could it have been possible

possible to invent a more horrid imposture? *Dangerfield* was presented to the duke of *York*, who at first believed all he discovered to him. The duke after giving him twenty guineas, carried him to the king, to whom *Dangerfield* told all the instructions which lady *Powis* had given him. He accused the lords *Grey* and *Howard*, the dukes of *Monmouth*, *Buckingham*, and several others, and took care not to omit me. His Majesty ordered the informer forty pounds. 'T would be endless to mention the many villains who were set at work in this dark accusation, but at last, the whole was found to be a trick. Without descending to particulars, I shall only observe, that *Dangerfield*, fearing that lady would deceive him, and thereby bring him to the ignominious death he deserved, confess'd the whole intrigue to Sir *Robert Clayton*, lord mayor of *London*, and to several other persons of quality and figure. The lord *Castlemain*, and several of the accomplices were seized. Lady *Powis* was thrown into the *Tower*, and charged with high-treason, viz. with a design to assassinate the king. This horrid design being discovered, it reflected shame on those who had invented it. The duke of *York* was more contemn'd than before, and the king was generally censured, for abetting an intrigue of so dark and detestable a nature.

My wife, whom I have not mentioned since the conference above recited between the king and the duke of *York*, fell about this time into a deep melancholy. Since our return to *England*, she had brought me two daughters more. My sons had distinguished themselves in their several employments. The eldest then but seventeen, was made an officer in *Monmouth's* regiment, which at that time was in *France*. My son had contracted an intimate friendship with one of the king's pages, with whom he went to the regiment. This page, whose name was Mr. *Ch* ———, was a very handsome youth, and promised great things. I may be allowed to digress a little upon his account, persuaded that the particulars I shall relate will not be disagreeable to the reader. The king's favourite mistress being one evening at the play-house, in a splendid dishabille, struck a rich banker, who wish'd earnestly to be admitted to the Sultana, and for that purpose made very large offers. The lady laugh'd at it at first, but the banker,

being

being smit more and more with her charms, went so far at last, as to offer ten thousand pounds sterling, for only two hours correspondence. The offer was accepted; the banker was to come at the hour appointed with a note of that value, to be pay'd by a merchant she named, and signed by him; and upon that condition the lover was to stay with her the time he desired. The banker came, and put the note into the hands of the D ——— s, who laid it under her bolster. The hours being spent to no purpose, she routed the banker from her bed; had him turn'd out of the house, and sent for young *Ch* ——— the page abovementioned. 'Twas about three in the morning when he waited upon her, not knowing upon what account. The Du ——— s did not part with him till about seven or eight, and at his taking leave made him a present of the note. That very day he went and receiv'd the money; and after paying some few small debts, he, as one who knew the value of money, put the rest to interest. The commerce between the Du ——— s and our beautiful page was afterwards carried on for some time; but being afterwards whisper'd to the king, his majesty contriv'd matters so, that he had like to have surpriz'd our knight-errant in his dalliances. *Charles II.* discover'd his resentment no otherwise, than by banishing his page to *France*, where a captain's company was given him in *Monmouth's* regiment. And as for the Du ——— s she soon reingratiated herself into the favour of her sovereign, who was not over-delicate in those matters. My eldest son, as was observed above, went with *Ch* ——— ill to their regiment; and these two young officers, who were already friends, contracted a still greater intimacy; applied themselves very assiduously to the military profession, and learnt all that is necessary to form the great captain.

My youngest son was still one of the king's pages. I had the strictest eye over his conduct; and, with his majesty's permission, he applied himself to all those arts and sciences which finish the Gentleman. He learnt the languages with wonderful facility. He was as well acquainted at sixteen years of age with philosophy, law, and the interests of the several princes of *Europe* as old men who had spent their lives in those studies: In a word he was a prodigy in literature. My dear wife and I were forever
 thanking

thanking heaven upon that account; and in all the uneasinesses which the publick affairs brought upon me (and these could not but be great, considering how much I panted for retirement) *Fanny* endeavoured to divert me, by relating a thousand witty particulars of our dear *Billy*, for so my youngest son was call'd. But this worthy, this virtuous woman, was at last seized with the deepest melancholy. This I was not immediately sensible of, because she had always made it her study to please me on all occasions. But I observed, that her endeavours in this particular began to slacken; however, I did not once mention it to her for some weeks. At last, she grew so very melancholy, and vented such frequent, such deep sighs, that I thought proper to enquire into the cause of them. Do you no longer love me, dearest *Fanny*, says I one day; is your heart chang'd with regard to me? Tell me, oh tell me, in what I have offended you. You are fixed in thought, you sigh; you now gaze at me, (and that but seldom) with mournful, dying glances. You no longer discover that warm, that lively passion which was always the delight of my soul. You grow so very wan and thin, that 'tis scarce possible to know you. By all that's dear, by our sweet children, I conjure you to unfold your heart; tell me the of your grief, and be persuaded that I love you as tenderly, as on our bridal day. Nay, I protest I love you still better; and that if you don't acquaint me with the motives of your disquietudes, I shall die. For these three weeks that I have suppress'd my just and reasonable curiosity, I have felt unnumber'd pangs. Will you destroy me by your silence; do you no longer repose that confidence in me, which you have so constantly indulged me since our reconciliation. Alas! my *Fanny*, I am no longer the dear object of your affections, whereas I had flattered myself—— No longer dear to me, do you say, replied *Fanny*, alas! too cruel, too dear Husband!—— She then flew into my arms, being scarce able to pronounce those words, and shed a flood of tears she could not stop. Her cheek seem'd glued to mine; she press'd me in her arms for near a quarter of an hour, venting the deepest sighs, pouring forth incessant tears; and sometimes darting the most tender glances, without being able to pronounce a single word articulately. At last, seeing
the

the affliction I was in, she made an effort to calm me, sobbing bitterly at the same time ; *Cleveland*, my dear *Cleveland*, says she, suffer my tears to flow, you afterwards shall know the reason of my grief. Having mixed my sighs with hers, and given way to tears, which my dear, dear wife's affliction forced from me, I stay'd till she might be able to speak to me. At last, her transports being calm'd, she spoke as follows. Thou best of husbands do not add, by suspecting my love to you, afflictions to those with which I have been so long tortured. Possibly it might have been better, had I discovered the cause of them sooner: But dreading lest you should betray as much weakness as myself, I would not trouble you with the relation of a dream I had about four or five weeks ago. You may remember we were then in the country, and that *Billy* came to visit us there ; bringing you at the same time some orders from his majesty. As we were just sitting down to dinner, the famous lawyer arrived, who had educated our son. He din'd with us, and you cannot have forgot that we discours'd upon a multitude of things ; and the admirable answers our dear *Billy* made to every question that was ask'd him, in a manner far above what could have been expected from his years. I will confess, that I thought myself thrice happy in being mother to so promising a youth. This you and I discoursed of when we were alone ; and both of us could not forbear expatiating on the beautiful person, and particularly on the wonderful perfections of this young creature's mind. I thought myself the happiest mother in the world, and possibly was too vain on this occasion. Alas ! the very night of that day, being in a dream, methought our darling son was brought, (heaven divert the omen !) methought *Billy* was brought to me, wounded all over his body. I started from my sleep in the deepest agonies ; I complain'd, I sigh'd bitterly, and so loud that you wak'd. You may remember that I falter'd in my answer, and as tho' I had been but half asleep ; and immediately resolv'd not to acquaint you with my dream. Since that time I have us'd my utmost endeavours to drive it away from my mind ; and I have said a thousand times to myself, that 'twas no more than a chimera form'd by my disturbed imagination. But I in vain attempt to banish

nish the thoughts of it, and for that purpose indulge myself in every kind of diversion; for *Billy* is eternally present to my imagination, and methinks I see him all pale; the blood streaming from his wounds, and yielding up his last gasp. Saying these words she sigh'd and wept more bitterly than before; so that 'twas impossible for me, notwithstanding my violent struggles, to forbear echoing to her groans. I ransacked my imagination for the most delightful ideas, in order to dispel the gloom which this sad relation had spread over my soul. Let us, thou best of women, says I, fly from the court, and the troublesome, tho' honourable employments, which have engaged our stay in it. 'Tis there that the never-ending talk of plots and assassinations have filled you with the most gloomy ideas; and hence arose your sad dream. Let us withdraw, with our dear *Billy*, to our estate in the country; there, restored to ourselves, we alone shall form the dear object of each others care. Thou wise lord *Clarendon*! had I but taken due notice of thy counsel — Saying these words I fainted away; and my wife, deeply afflicted as she was, succoured me to the utmost of her power; so that I recovered by little and little, and found myself in her arms. At this instant, *Billy*, our darling son, came to me with a message from his majesty. My dear *Fanny* and I grasped him alternately in our arms, and caressed him with the utmost transports. He was surpriz'd to see me so fond, because I always had put on a serious air before him; fearing he would grow vain, in case I should allow him too much familiarity. But now he asked me with the most respectful earnestness, why I indulged him such unusual caresses, which he was persuaded were unmerited. As the king came unexpectedly into the room, I had not an opportunity of answering his modest question. His majesty had done so before; when finding Mrs. *Cleveland* and I very melancholy, he was pleased to enquire into the cause of it, and whether it would not be in his power to remedy it. As I was going to answer, and afterwards to beg leave that I might retire from court, a great many noblemen came in, which obliged us to discourse on other matters.

My wife withdrew to another room, with his majesty's leave, and took our son with her. I did not afterwards

join in the conversation, so deep was the anguish with which I was seiz'd at the relation of that dream; and tho' I was persuaded that all dreams do not end like that I related before, I yet knew that it possibly might, and so could not remove the thoughts of it from my mind. The king and the noblemen who attended him, were all this time searching for expedients to suspend the meeting of the parliament. Their secret view was to establish arbitrary power; and afterwards to destroy, with greater ease, the protestant religion. The publick had long suspected this, and their suspicions soon rose to demonstration. But now the alarm became general; and the numberless satyrs and other severe pieces which were published, prov'd that the storm was near at hand. The counties were perpetually addressing the king, in order that he might call the parliament together; but the answers his majesty return'd, so far from calming the fears with regard to the danger, serv'd only to increase them. *Charles II.* trod in the very same steps his immediate predecessors had done; and look'd upon the prescribing of limits to the duration of parliaments as an infringement of the royal prerogative. This king was as ignorant of his true interest as his father and grandfather; and like them he endeavoured to retrench the liberty and privileges of the subject. He published a proclamation forbidding all persons under the most severe penalties, to speak, to complain, much less to write concerning the government. However, this was all to no purpose, for the addressees were more numerous, the defenders of the people's rights did not fear his menaces, and their zeal prompted them to search out and publish the secrets and conduct of the *Roman* catholicks.

The odious changes which were made in the ministry, increased the just alarms and animosity of the publick. The earl of *Shaftsbury* was to resign his employment of president of the council to the earl of *Radnor*. All the former ministers were recall'd to their employments, and the duke of *York* had orders to come immediately to court. However, he did not continue long there, his presence being so disagreeable, not to say odious, that his majesty sought some honourable way by which he might dismiss him; and this he did by sending him to *Scotland*, with the stile and title of his majesty's high commissioner in that kingdom.

kingdom. This employment did not prevent the duke from carrying on his own affairs in *England*; and gave him an opportunity of gaining a great number of partizans in *Scotland*, who might be of great service to him in time to come.

As the king dreaded his parliament, he resolved to prorogue it, which the council, who foresaw the fatal consequences that would attend this design, endeavoured to hinder, and to intimidate the king. However, all their representations were fruitless, and his majesty made no other answer than that *'Twas his Will*. This despotick tone surpriz'd, but did not frighten those who sincerely loved their country. Sir *William Temple* distinguished himself by the strength and boldness of his remonstrances. I myself observed to his majesty, that a council was of no manner of use to him, since he would neither ask its advice, nor follow its decisions; and that no *English* monarch had ever found his advantage in such a conduct. The king did not give the least attention to all we could say; and there is no doubt, but that the frankness and sincerity with which I spoke to him, was the cause of my disgrace.

The moment I perceiv'd that his majesty no longer indulged me the shining marks of his favour he had shewn me all the time I had continued in his service, I took a firm resolution to lay down my employments, and retire from court. I first acquainted Mrs. *Cleveland* with it, who immediately said, that she had always been afraid of proposing it to me, but was now overjoy'd at what I told her. However, she conjured me to weigh well my design before I put it in execution. I answer'd, that I had considered it long before, and my opinion was, that as his majesty was so much chang'd with regard to me, 'twould be prudent and honourable in me to desire leave to resign, and to give up my employments, and not expose myself to the displeasure of seeing them wrested out of my hands. I also confessed to my wife, that her dream gave me continual uneasiness; and that it tortured me perpetually, tho' I had not once mentioned this, since her revealing it to me; but had assum'd an exterior tranquility, purposely not to give her pain. That after I had obtained leave for us to retire from court,

we would go into the country to our estate, far removed from the tumults of a court, which, perhaps, was the most vicious in the world. That we would take our dear *Billy* with us, who should pursue his studies under my eye : that the face of affairs might be changed, and the crown devolve to a more virtuous monarch, perhaps to the prince of *Orange*, who at that time had a double title to it : that in this case, our dear son might make himself known to the new monarch, who doubtless would give him some post, the moment he found the great talents he possess'd. To conclude, that I resolv'd, the first time the council met, to beg a private audience of his majesty, when I would beg leave to retire from court.

The council meeting the very next day, I besought his majesty to indulge me a quarter of an hour's audience. If 'tis in the design, replied the king, of tutoring me, I will not grant it, otherwise follow me. Being come into his closet I threw myself at his feet, and thanked him for his great beneficence to me, since my return to *England*. After this, I begg'd him to permit me to withdraw from the council, to let me go into the country, and there live on the estate of my children, in order that I might give them such an education as would make them good christians and faithful subjects to his majesty : that whatever I had been so free as to declare at any time, either in council or in private to his majesty, was ever dictated by conscience, and in a sincere view of serving him. And that in case I had incurr'd his displeasure upon any account, I humbly begg'd his pardon.

The king, who had ordered me to rise, the moment I fell at his feet, told me with an air of indifference, if you want to retire, you may. Your son *William* shall soon be sensible of my affection. I expect daily to hear of the death of an old officer ; and the instant I receive that news, my page shall succeed to his employment, which is one of the most distinguished in the kingdom ; yourself may exercise it till such time as your son is of an age to take it upon himself. I threw myself at the king's feet to thank him for his goodness, but besought him to suffer me, in the mean time, to take my son along with me. Perhaps, said I, he may swerve from his duty, when he is no longer under my eye. I shall even take the freedom to acquaint
your

your majesty, that a dream I have heard makes me tremble for my son's life. How, a dream! says the king, commanding me to rise. Immediately I told his majesty my wife's dream, at which he burst out a laughing. I took you, said he, for a philosopher, but find you have all the weakness of a woman. *Cleveland*, retire whenever you think proper, but as for *William*, he shall stay with me; and be assured that I'll make his fortune. He is so very promising a youth, that I am this instant endeavouring at it; and let me tell you, since you don't know it, all dreams are untruths. I again implored the king to let me take my son with me, but to no purpose, and then his majesty withdrew.

'Twas soon blaz'd throughout *London*, that my wife and I had leave to retire from court. At the same time, the earl of *Essex* resigned his post of first lord of the treasury. The lords *Hallifax*, *Russell*, *Cavendish*, Sir *William Temple*, *Capel* and *Powel*, knights, &c. desired also to lay down, and their request was immediately granted. And now the king having thus got rid of a sett of ministers who were obnoxious to him, imagined he might put his projects in execution without the least obstacle. He then abandoned himself intirely to the conduct of the duke of *York*, and saw, as it were, only with his eyes. His brother put the administration into the hands of the earl of *Sunderland*, *Hyde*, and *Godolphin*. The duke soon left *Scotland*, and appeared again at court in greater splendor than ever.

In the mean time the earl of *Shaftsbury* and his friends were not idle. For some time they had spread a report, that Mrs. *Walters* or *Barlow*, mother to the duke of *Monmouth*, had been married to the king; and that the marriage contract was in the hands of Sir *Gilbert Gerrard*. This report had a very great effect upon the nation, and every one talked of *Monmouth's* right to the crown; and the proofs of it were daily pretended to be made in pamphlets. The court thought it necessary, nay, of the utmost consequence, to destroy these prejudices the nation now entertained. Accordingly his majesty, in an extraordinary council, made a solemn declaration, that this marriage was a mere forgery of his enemies. Sir *Gilbert* was examin'd, and made oath, that he knew nothing of such a

contract, or such a marriage. Afterwards these several particulars were printed.

I had now been above three months with my wife at our country-seat, about twenty miles from *London*. I used to send the faithful *Dring* twice a week to court to inquire after my son's health. We corresponded by letter on the most serious subjects, as religion, morality, and the present state of affairs. The fire, the vivacity and judgment which appeared in all his letters, gave me inexpressible satisfaction. This recall'd to my remembrance my wife's sad dream; and I trembled when I thought of losing, in so fatal a manner, a treasure that was so dear to me. For this reason I was ever revolving, whether there might not be a possibility of my getting him away privately from the king; and I at last imagined, I had hit upon an expedient; but I suspended the execution of it till the solemnization of a court-festival, that was to be ten days after, which was the last time my son was to serve as page. But this delay proved fatal as the reader will soon find.

Before the festival, there was an order to try all such persons as were imprisoned upon account of the late conspiracy. The court had bribed the jury, by which means the court party were victorious; the earl of *Castlemain* and the rest of the prisoners were declared *not guilty*; and even a *French* woman, one *Celier*, whom lady *Powis* had employed to bribe *Dangersfield*. The grand jury brought in the bill preferred against that lady, *Ignoramus*. However, notwithstanding this, the court did not succeed in their measures.

As great preparations were making for the festival above-mentioned, I sent the faithful *Dring* two days sooner than ordinary, with a long, serious letter. I observed to him, the artifice I intended to employ, in order to get my son from the king; I told him what he should say to his majesty, in case he would not consent to his leaving him. The turn I had given to the affair was such, that I was firmly persuaded it could not but succeed; and I told him farther, in my letter, that imagining he would not have leisure to write to me during the court diversions, I had sent *Dring* two days sooner than ordinary, and should be very impatient till he was returned;
that

that I could not account for the uneasiness I felt, but that I should not be easy till I saw him arrived safe in my house; and lastly, that his mother and I should implore heaven incessantly for his preservation. *Dring* set out with my letter, and being got within a few miles of *London*, news was brought, that the king was at *Windso*r. Accordingly *Dring* made for that town, and was soon informed, that his majesty was hunting; and that my son, being in waiting, was obliged to attend him. This *Dring* gave me an account of by a particular messenger, in order that, in case my son could not have an opportunity of sending an answer by him the next day, I might not be impatient at his stay. The messenger arrived about ten in the evening. My wife and I having gone to bed early, had been deeply tortured in our minds, but did not mention this to one another. At last my sorrow burst from me, when I cried, dearest *Fanny*, what ails you? Alas! answered she, with tears, what ails you? Your dream, says I, afflicts me more than ever. I began to slumber, when methought I saw *Billy* stabb'd to the heart. My son, cried she, in a feeble tone of voice, is dead; immediately I rose; rung for my servants, who bringing in a light, Heavens! in how deplorable a condition did I find my wife? a corps could not be paler, and she seemed quite breathless. Racked with unexpressible pangs, I bedewed her cheeks with my tears; I gave her heartshorn; rubb'd her lips and temples with spirits, when, at last, she half opened her eyes and whispered——— *Billy* is dead! She now fell into very strong convulsions, when I took her in my arms, beseeching her to put her trust in the Almighty, and to consider these dreams as an almost necessary consequence of perpetual gloomy thoughts. Alas! said she, dear *Cleveland*! every thing was too plain in my dream; and that which you just now told me resembles it too much, for us ever to flatter ourselves, that we shall again see our much lov'd son. He is no more. Dear *Billy*! I shall never see thee again. I let her weep, holding her still fast clasp'd in my arms: And I had as much need of succour as she, but nevertheless I put the utmost constraint upon myself. In this manner we spent the whole night. Some of my servants were gone to call a physician. About nine next morning, one came and whispered me in the ear, that *Dring*

was returned; that he begg'd to speak with me, but desired I would not mention a word of his arrival to his lady. These mysterious precautions, in the sad circumstances we were in, persuaded me, that my wife's dream and mine were but too true. After intreating the physician and the waiting woman to give my poor distracted wife all the comfort possible, I left the room (upon some excuse I made) and went into that where *Dring* waited for me. The moment he saw me, he fell at my feet, clasping my knees: Surely, cried he, never were parents more wretched! — His heart was so full, that he could not go on. I had just spirits enough left to throw myself into an easy chair, where I was seized with a shivering all over me. The physician finding my wife a little better, was in search of me, to acquaint me with it. Upon his coming in, he found me in such a dreadful agony, and my blood in so violent a ferment, that he was obliged to call for help; and after I was a little recovered he took ten or twelve ounces of blood from me. I now began to breathe, and seeing *Dring*, who by this time was come to himself, I bid him draw near to the couch, on which they had laid me. Being seated, after the room was clear, *Dring*, says I, my son, my dear *Billy*, is dead; heaven! did'st thou bless me with this treasure, only to snatch him so soon from me? Gracious God, thy will be done, but O indulge me an extraordinary support on this mournful occasion! Thou seest how greatly I stand in need of thy assistance; do not refuse it me; and also fortify the soul of my poor unhappy wife. Merciful Creator! have mercy upon us. After this ejaculation, I asked *Dring* whether my suspicions with regard to my dear son's death, were not true? Alas! Sir, replied he, they are but too much so; your excellent son is dead; and my heart is ready to burst, when I inform you, that he was murdered. His majesty, after his return from hunting, read some time at a window; and then, laying down the book, threw himself on a couch, covered with his cloak, in order to take a little rest. Having slept about half an hour, he rose, left his cloak on the couch, and went into an apartment where some of his favourites waited his coming. Your son, after the king was gone, wrapp'd himself in his majesty's cloak; and
throwing

throwing himself on the couch, covered his face with the sheet. About an hour after, a person unknown went up to one of the courtiers, and enquired where his majesty was. The nobleman, taking this fellow for an officer of the household, told him very imprudently, that the king was asleep in such a room, which he shew'd him. The wretch had no sooner heard this, than he went into it, upon pretence, that he had some business with his majesty. Several persons saw him go into the room, but no one took the least notice of it. The assassin, seeing a man asleep on the bed, cut his throat, imagining, in all probability, that 'twas the king; and after stabbing him in several parts of his body, took his opportunity, and got away unperceived. Not long after, your dear son was found dead, weltering in his gore. The news of it struck me with the utmost horror, and I am now returned, to acquaint you with this sad catastrophe. The earl of D —, your faithful friend, seeing me, at midnight, in the room where this horrid murder was committed, where he came, in order to inquire into this dreadful murder, desired me, with tears in his eyes, to set out immediately, and inform you of what happened. He bid me advise you in his name to come to court, as soon as possible, to sue for justice at his majesty's hands; and to beg him to give orders for making the strictest search after the assassin.

Dring had no sooner ended, but I was seized with the deepest affliction. I had my own sorrows to support; and those with which I figur'd to myself Mrs. *Cleveland* would be oppress'd, increased my agonies. I had spent near an hour in search of such expressions as might be capable of comforting my dear wife; when I saw her come into the room, supported by her two waiting-maids; and coming near the couch, my dear, says she, we now have occasion for uncommon strength of mind and resolution. Hearing that *Dring* was come back, and that he had been shut up above an hour with you, one of my women stole softly to your chamber door, and over-hearing you, came and told me all. You may think this was a clap of thunder to me; this you will believe; and when you call to mind the strong affection I had for *Billy*, you will not wonder at the tortures I felt when I heard how barbarously he had been murder'd. But as I had long

prepared myself for this dismal scene, methinks, now I have heard it, heaven has indulged me an unusual strength of mind. By this you find that I have heard of our dear son's tragical end: However, as *Billy* was so virtuous a youth, we ought to consider his death as a felicity; to him, I mean; for he died before his mind could be sullied by the wickedness of his fellow-creatures. Let us, my dear husband, draw down upon the rest of our children a peculiar blessing from the Almighty, by our implicit submission to his will.

This resolution of Mrs. *Cleveland* appeared to me so wonderful, knowing the strong love she bore to our dear *Billy*, that I will confess, it was of prodigious consolation to me. Nevertheless, I was seized with a violent fever, which prevented my going to *London*. The earl of *D——*, the faithful friend, of whom *Dring* spoke to me, hearing of my indisposition, came and visited me in the country, four days after the murder. The tender things he said to my wife and me touched my very soul. He added, that finding I did not come, he had obtained a private audience of his majesty, on which occasion he besought him, in my name, to give immediate orders for making a strict search after the murderer. That the king answered, he was deeply affected with your son's death, and had already given an order for making of the strictest search. However, replied the earl, I don't believe his m——y, for I myself set several spies about the court, charging them to enquire, whether the k—— had given any such orders; and so far from it, I have been assured, that he had forbid any person to make the least mention of the murder. Many people, continued his lordship, believe, that the ruffian fancied that 'twas the king he murder'd; but I myself am of a different opinion, because his m——y seemed so very cold and indifferent in the affair, that I am firmly persuaded, he knew the whole secret of it. I believe, my dear friends, added the earl (looking mournfully on me and my wife) I believe it will be to no purpose for you to make any search; and would therefore have you leave to time the discovery of so detestable a crime. Pass your days in the place where you now reside, in peace and tranquility; and resolve with yourselves never to appear in a court, where vice reigns in
fo

so barefaced a manner. Affairs may very possibly take a quite different turn; and we, perhaps, may soon see virtue and probity prevail in it. The papists are so strongly supported by the duke of *York*, that there is no doubt but the spirit of the nation will be roused at last. 'Tis very probable, that the duke will succeed his brother, and then the former will not fail to set every engine at work, in order to destroy the protestant religion, and subject *England* once more to the papal see. The duke will ruin himself by his ill conduct; for the *English* have too strong an aversion to the *Romish* superstitions, to suffer theirs to be oppressed. 'Tis evident to me, that what I now hint to you is founded on reason; but how so great a change will be brought about, I am not able to tell you.

The earl, after asking what we intended to do, said no more. We then besought him to give orders for our son's burial, the instant he was got to *Windsor*, whither he said he would go immediately; but we found this was an unnecessary request, he having already done *Billy* that last mournful office. He afterwards conjured us to be as easy as we possibly could, under this dismal loss; and to bestow our whole care upon the education of the rest of our children; my lord, said my wife to him, you are sensible, that our beautiful son possessed unnumbered virtues, and, consequently, the fine things we expected from so lovely a bloom; you know how dear he was to us, and how respectfully he always behav'd towards us. For these five or six weeks, Mr. *Cleveland* and I have had the most dreadful omens of this sad separation; we were oppressed with the reflection; and you perceive my husband's affliction; but as for myself, added she, I feel myself supported by an Almighty hand; and I hope that Mr. *Cleveland*, by an intire submission to the will of heaven, will recover his health, and be restored to the serenity of mind, as becomes a christian. His lordship admiring the great resolution and constancy, or rather, the grace of God in her, exhorted me to imitate the excellent example she set me.

The earl set out that very day, and came within six miles of *Windsor*, that he might arrive there the next morning early, in order to wait upon the king at his *Levee*.

My fever was so very violent, that 'twas some time before the physicians could allay it, and it tormented me near two months. I was strongly possess'd with the opinion, that my wife's tranquility was merely specious; and I will be so weak as to confess that this reflection retarded my cure. But observing afterwards that she looked better, (her perpetual exhortations to me to resign myself to providence, making an impression on my mind) I made an effort with myself, and the fever leaving me, I at last was quite recovered. My eldest son who, whilst all these melancholy incidents happened, was in *France*, desired leave to go for *England*, which being granted, and landing at *Dover*, he rode post to my seat. All three burst into tears the instant he came into the room, and the sight of them awak'd the sad remembrance of dear, dear *Billy*. However, the joy we felt at our clasping him in our arms, dispelled our first sorrow; and we were infinitely pleas'd when every moment discovered some lovely quality in him. After having spent a fortnight with us, one evening as we were walking together, he began to make very solid reflections on the state of *England* at that time. Having ended them, I had flattered myself, says he, with the hopes, that the king would have caus'd a thorough search to be made after the wretch who murdered my brother; but I don't find he once stirr'd in the affair, nor even made you the least compliment of condolence on that occasion. I cannot prevail with myself to serve any longer a master of so insensible and hard hearted a temper; and therefore I beseech you good Sir, to consent to my going into *Holland*, there to seek for employment. You have, continued my son, several friends who have great authority in that country, and 'tis in your power to recommend me to them. It may perhaps be an easy matter for me to obtain, by their interest, from the prince of *Orange*, a company in one of the *English* regiments; and I promise you, Sir, to behave myself in such a manner, as shall never give you the least uneasiness. I shall often have an opportunity to pay you my respects. In case you indulge me my request, I will send back my commission to my colonel, and direct it to my worthy friend captain *Churchill*, to put it into that officer's hands.

I answered my son, that as this affair deserved the most serious attention, I would consider it with his mother, and advised him to open it to her. At last, Mrs. *Cleveland* and I having weighed the reasons *pro* and *con*, we gave our consent; and at the same time promis'd to allow him such a sum annually, as should enable him to make a considerable figure. As I had had a considerable share in the negotiation of the prince of *Orange's* marriage, and was firmly persuaded, that his highness had a great value for me, I took the liberty to write to him, to desire his favour in promoting my son, who was one and twenty, to some post in the army. His highness was very gracious on this occasion, and did me the honour to answer me himself; telling me that a company was at his service. I afterwards got my son's discharge without any difficulty; after which he went into *Holland*, with the special leave of his majesty, who possibly was very glad to get rid of an officer, whose sight might recal to his memory a great many unpleasing thoughts.

B O O K X.

BEING determined not to go to *London*, so long as the feuds should subsist between the king and people; and that persons of honour and integrity should forbear going to court, notwithstanding the employments they held there, I retired to *Devonshire*. I there took possession of the lands which lord *Terwill* had superintended ever since the death of his father. His lordship had always punctually remitted the revenues of them to me, and I found every part of the estate in good order and condition. My wife and I express'd the deep sense we had of our great obligations to him upon that account, and I believe he could not accuse us of ingratitude.

Thus having taken possession of this rich inheritance, and made some new and very necessary regulations with the tenants, I had a prodigious desire to go and visit the sepulchre of my dear mother, and the caves which had served as an asylum, in my tender years, to my innocence and virtue. My wife was extremely desirous of accompanying

panying me; but as she had laboured for some time under an hectic fever, and the fatigue of the journey would be very great, I was afraid to take her along with me, especially as it might be of dangerous consequence, to revive the remembrance of her own misfortunes, and those of my family, by the sight of a place in which we had pass'd so many melancholy hours.

I took no one alone with me but the faithful *Dring*, and *James*, who was better acquainted than myself with the subterraneous passages of *Rumney-hole*. As 'twas above five and thirty years since I had lived there, I had but a very confused idea of it. *James*, who was our guide, carried us first to the solitary place in which I had spent so many years. Do I then see once more, cried I, as we advanced towards it, the only spot in the world, in which I met virtue and tranquility? Why did I not breathe my last in these ever-peaceful retirements, in some corner of this ever-winding rock? What a multitude of calamities should I then have avoided? 'Tis here the ashes of my virtuous mother are deposited; a mother, whose precepts and example inspired my soul with a love for virtue, and an abhorrence of vice. These reflections forced a multitude of sighs from me. For some moments I was in a perplexity, which it is easier to conceive than express; however, a few solid reflections gave some ease to my mind. My complaints, said I to myself, are in vain; and it does not become a wise man and a christian, to grieve for things which are irrecoverably lost. My mother is no longer among the living, so that my groans cannot be of service to her. We were born to die. The same decree which gives us birth, calls us, at the expiration of a certain term of years, to the grave. 'Tis certain, that divine justice raises those to infinite and eternal bliss in heaven, who have lived a life of virtue here below. This is a never-failing spring of consolation; and nothing can be better adapted to soothe the numberless sorrows we feel in all reverses of fortune. Let me, then, leave a solitude, which affects me so strongly, that sense and reason are scarce able to triumph over human weakness. These last words awak'd too strongly the remembrance of my dear mother. My son's death now painted itself, and in the most gloomy colours, in my imagination; the various

ous calamities of my life crowded upon it; the cruel blows I had received from fortune, and the dark malice of my fellow creatures; all these rose in my fancy with so much violence, that I would have fled, had I not been held down by some unknown power, from my dear ill-fated mother's grave.

I sat some time upon it, quite lost in thought, when on a sudden I heard a most grievous moan issue from the deepest part of the cave. Some unhappy wretch, says I, to my servants, is here bewailing, as I do, the rigour of his fate. Let us, says I, give him consolation, for he seems to be in great want of it. 'Tis good, and even pleasant, to assist those, who often have no other support than their virtue; nay, we are on some occasions bound by the laws of humanity to succour one who is oppressed with guilt. Saying this, my two servants and I advanced towards the place whence the voice came. After we had walk'd some time in these caves, we heard the following words pronounc'd distinctly. Kings are the most ungrateful of men. This I shall incessantly repeat; and they on the other side, will never cease to repay with ingratitude the most important services. I had relied entirely upon virtue, but it is a mere phantom, an empty name.

We now were got to the place where this unfortunate man lay, and by the light of a torch which *James* carried before me, I perceiv'd a man in a very splendid dress, who the moment he had ended these bitter wailings, plung'd a dagger into his bosom. He was extended on the ground, and his blood issued from the wound in great abundance. What calamity, says I to the gentleman, could prompt you to kill yourself? Is it not the indication of a greater soul to submit patiently to ill fortune, than to put an end to it by self-murder? He made no answer, but moved his hand, to signify that he did not desire any assistance. However, *Dring* stopp'd the blood, whilst I held the unhappy gentleman's hands, ordering, at the same time, *James* to go immediately for the first surgeon he could meet with. A little after, our patient fainted away, but we recover'd him by our care, and the help of a smelling-bottle which *Dring* always carried about him. At last, throwing his distracted glances quite round him; how cruel you are, says he, with a feeble, dying

ing voice ! Why will you recal to life an unhappy wretch, to whom that celestial present is now unsupportable ? Suffer me to bury my calamities in the gloom of this cave. I used all the arguments possible to persuade him to live ; I set before him the heinousness of self-murder, and the dreadful consequences ; however, he persisted in his resolution of dying.

James, at his leaving the valley, happened very fortunately to meet with a surgeon, who was going to wait upon a gentleman in the neighbourhood. After promising that he should be amply rewarded for his pains, he brought him to us, having first obliged him to swear secrecy. The wound did not prove mortal, so that this man, who was a very able artist, promised to cure his patient in a very few days. I was very well pleased with *James's* foresight, and I myself obliged the surgeon to make a most solemn promise not to reveal what he saw and heard. I then gave him ten guineas, and promised him three times that sum, as soon as the gentleman should be compleatly recovered.

I left *Rumney-hole*, very late at night, and a little before we had carried the unhappy gentleman to his apartment, which happened to be the same lord *Axminster* had tenanted, there we met with a young gentlewoman of exquisite beauty, a governess, and two servants. There was no need of our exhorting them to take the utmost care of the patient : for their tears, their assiduity, their affliction, and alarms, plainly shewed that they were deeply afflicted at the lamentable condition to which he was reduced.

The moment I was got home, my first care was to send them all such provisions as they might want. The next day the surgeon came early to my house, according to my desire, when we set out again for *Rumney-hole*, accompanied by *Dring* and *James*. Our patient seemed pretty easy in his mind ; and as his wound was not dangerous, and that his weakness was wholly owing to the vast quantity of blood he had lost ; a little after his wound was dress'd, and he had taken some rest, I besought him to relate his misfortunes, but with no other view than to relieve them, in case this were in my power. This place, says I, you live in, was the asylum of lord *Axminster* and
his

his family. There his excellent lady breathed her last : Here I myself was first sensible to the tender passion of love. *Cromwell's* unparallel'd cruelty, forc'd my mother to shelter herself in the dreadful subterraneous cavities of this rock. I came yesterday, purposely to visit once again the grave of the best, the dearest, and most virtuous of mothers. Your sad wailings drew me to the place where you lay. I highly satisfied that it has been in my power to succour you, I now conjure you to give me another satisfaction, and that is, to inform me who you are ; the motives of your dismal complaints, which prompted you yesterday to lay violent hands on yourself. What reason soever you may have had to conceal your calamities from the rest of the world, be assured that you may reveal them to me without the least danger. I will do every thing in my power to sooth your afflictions ; and as I myself have laboured under unparallel'd misfortunes, nothing shall be wanting on my side to procure you all the ease possible.

He was silent for some moments, as tho' he reflected on the offer I made him. At last, after telling me in the most obliging terms, that the generosity I had shew'd him, would not suffer him to conceal, what he till then had desired to keep from the knowledge of all ; I am persuaded, added he, that as soon as I have informed you who I am, viz. *H* —, Earl of *R* —, you will say to yourself, I already know the greatest part of his story. I therefore shall not descend to numberless particulars of my life, which would be as unpleasant for me to relate as for you to hear. My father, to ingratiate himself early with king *Charles* the second, turned *Roman* catholic, and had me educated in the same principles. He committed me to the care of an ecclesiastic, a person of strict honour and integrity, who taught me two or three general maxims, which I always thought very judicious. The maxims were these, Fear God ; serve the king, so long as he shall keep his coronation oath, and conform to the laws of the land ; and lastly, do as you would be done by. After that these excellent maxims had been strongly inculcated into my mind ; that the full extent of them had been explained to me, and I had finished my studies with success, my father sent me to travel. I already was tolerably well acquainted with the
genius

genius and interests of the several nations of *Europe*; and I endeavoured to improve this knowledge, by attending carefully to the several things I saw and heard in the countries thro' which I travelled. I visited *Holland, Germany, France, Spain, and Italy.*

Being thoroughly acquainted with the different characters of these five nations, I endeavoured to unite them in myself, to be slow in resolving; to give my mind a just and solid turn of thinking; to be either humble or haughty as occasions might require; to appear grave and reserved to every one, and to dissemble whenever it might be necessary.

I had left *England* upwards of three years, and these I had employ'd in visiting the first four countries above-mentioned. When I arriv'd in *Rome*, I there met with Sir — C —, whom you cannot but have heard of, and with applause. He discovered a singular merit, and I may say, a superiority of genius from his tender years: but the vivacity of his temper, which was inclined to gallantry, engaged him in an intrigue with a lady of distinction of this city, which proved of fatal consequence to both. The lady made the first overtures, and told him what he was to do, in order to get secretly into her apartment. He made me the confident of his amour, and I supplanted him by coming half an hour before his arrival. I found the lady, who had not the least suspicion of the artifice; and immediately put out a dim wax-light that was in the apartment. At the time appointed, Sir — C — comes, knocks softly at the door, and not being admitted, began to call aloud, so that the lady, who knew his voice but too well, did not know what to do. A moment after, the lady's husband came and thunder'd at the door, where spying the knight, and taking him for a thief, both drew their swords. Hearing this noise, I ran to the fire and lighted the wax-light, when opening the door, I saw a gentleman, a stranger to me; and immediately Sir — C — gave his enemy a full thrust, and laid him at his feet. I forgot to observe, that the lady had fainted away, which I observed as I pass'd by the bed with the lighted taper. Thou hast betray'd me, says Sir — C —, the instant he saw me; however, I pardon thee. The dead man there is certainly the lady's husband
who

who undoubtedly had heard of my intrigue with his wife. How ridiculous is all this, and indeed, why should he be vexed at my sharing with him the favours of the beautiful *Marcelli*? May all jealous-pated wretches meet with a like fate. This was the first wish that wicked woman made, when she saw her husband lying dead on the floor, the moment she revived. Let us fly, says I, to the knight, as soon as possible, otherwise we shall be seized by the magistrates. But you must take me with you, says the cruel female; but first, says she, to Sir—C—, take this box of jewels, and my self will take the other, which is full of gold, so that we shall have money enough for a very long journey. I went and took my coach, where I waited for the knight and his chaste mistress, at a place we had agreed upon without the city. After this, I ordered my valet-de-chambre to pack up my things, pay my debts, and to set out for *Venice*, where he should soon hear of me.

This adventure taught me, when I grew more advanced in years, to have a due respect for the marriage-state; and the danger to which we were exposed, raised the most serious reflections in my mind, with regard to the wild frenzies of youth. Whilst I was making these, the Lady was applauding to me her conjugal virtues; and observing how ridiculous it was in a man to put a restraint upon his wife. As for the knight, he bestow'd the highest encomiums on these beautiful virtuous sentiments.

We got out of the pope's territories, and when we were got within some distance from *Naples*, I begg'd Sir—C—, to leave that vile woman. I gave him a good many reasons in *English*, why it was proper for him to do this, and ended them in these words; in case we should be found in her company, we shall certainly be thought guilty of the crime you have committed. We shall certainly be pursued, and in case we are seen together, what defence shall we be able to make?

These were very strong reasons; nevertheless, my friend was so deeply smitten with the charms of this creature, that he could not approve of them. So far from it, he resolv'd to marry her; and expatiating on the merits of the lady, he thought that the marrying her would be the greatest happiness. Finding all my arguments were to

no purpose, I resolv'd to abandon him. Accordingly I ordered the coach and horses to be got ready, and finding my knight inflexible I took my leave of Sir — C — with an air of the utmost dissatisfaction. A moment after I was got into the coach, he ran to me, when he conjured me in the most affectionate terms to stay till the next day; declaring that it would be necessary for him to be allowed that time, in order to weigh deliberately the counsel I had given him. I yielded to his request, and for fear lest my friend should again be captivated by the destructive charms of that infamous wretch, I employed a stratagem. I myself carried to the inquisition a fatal instrument, in the view of ridding our selves of this odious woman; having first given orders that every thing should be ready for our departure at my return! The lady was gone to mass. I told the knight in few words, what I had done to extricate us; declaring that we must set out that moment. Let us then go, says he; but I'll carry away with me some token of the beautiful *Marcelli*. Upon this he took the two boxes, and tho' I earnestly besought him to leave one behind, he would not listen to me. He told me, smiling, when we were got at some distance, and riding as for life; that the woman who had ensnared me, is, with regard to me a true *Egyptian*, as I am an *Israelite* with regard to her: however, in the place where she now is, has she any occasion for these things? this wealth would have been all lost upon her, and we have a better right to it than the inquisitors, since we were so far in her good graces. Had I left them, continued the knight, in the Inn, would they ever have come to her hands? And all matters duly weigh'd, do not I deserve a reward for delivering her from so brutal a husband. To conclude, dear friend, when this hurry and confusion is over, we'll divide as brethren, since we ran the same risk. The knight spoke all this with so humorous an air, that 'twas impossible for me to be serious. I can assure you, added the earl, that ever since that time Sir — C — has conducted himself with the utmost prudence; and that the reflections he made on this dreadful adventure, have been of the utmost service to him.

We arrived very happily in *Venice*, where I found my valet de chambre, who was impatient at my long stay. We

ask'd

ask'd him whether our adventure had not made some noise in *Rome*? He answered, that the lady was of so abandoned reputation, that no search was made after her husband's murderer, she passing for the most profligate woman in that city. That as the deceas'd lived in *Milan*, his sudden departure from *Rome* had prevented his hearing whether the relations of that unhappy gentleman had caused a search to be made after his infamous wife; however that he congratulated my friend and I for having so happily extricated ourselves from that dangerous adventure.

We left *Venice* the very next day after our arrival in it, and without making any stay on the road, we arrived happily at the *Hague*. I resided in it some time, and discovered myself to *Charles II.* who was there at that time. This happened very luckily to be a little before his restoration, and his majesty, upon his return to *England*, honoured me with an employment at court. The king was then the most amicable (if I may be allowed that epithet) man in the world. He seem'd born to a throne, nature having endued him with all the qualities which form the great monarch. He succeeded to the crown with the almost universal satisfaction of his subjects, who were quite tired out with their late anarchy. But you doubtless, said the earl of R —, are well acquainted with King *Charles's* conduct, so that I shan't repeat to you the mutual dissatisfactions which broke out between his majesty and the nation, the instant almost after his coronation. Immediately after this was solemnized, I beg'd leave of his majesty to return to *Holland*, there to marry Mrs. *W.* with the consent of our parents ——— Here the earl, looking upon me with a very obliging air, cried, with how little reserve, sir, have I told you my story, without knowing what gentleman 'tis I am speaking to? I now am weary, and therefore should be greatly obliged, if you would tell your story. Possibly the knowledge of this may make it necessary for me to inform you of the several transactions of the court, during my employment in it; so that I shall need only to inform you, of the misfortunes which reduced me, by insensible degrees, to the wretched condition in which you now see me.

I intended to give his Lordship a short account of my misfortunes, but the moment I told him my name, he interrupted

interrupted me, and asked with great eagerness, whether (as I could not but have heard, the great share he had had in Lord *Clarendon's* disgrace, whose intimate friend he knew I had been) I could look upon him with any pleasure after this? I don't intend, says he, to expatiate on the great services I did both the King and the nation, for this you must necessarily have heard, since you filled a considerable employment at Court, a few years after I left it; but will only endeavour to prove to you, that I was not so barbarous to your late illustrious friend as you may imagine. A particular pique had exasperated me against Lord *Clarendon*; and when I have told you the motive of it, you perhaps will not censure me so much as you otherwise would have done. I would have begg'd the favour of you, replied I, to clear up that matter to me; but as your Lordship has need of repose, I'll take my leave of you now, and dine with you to morrow in case, my Lord, you judge proper. I'll send in the necessary provisions, and shall be proud to do the same every day, so long as your Lordship shall think fit to stay here. My country seat is not a great way from hence, so that when you shall be in a condition to leave this cavern, I have an apartment in my house at your Lordship's service. There you may live as retired as you please, not to mention that the air is much purer than that of this cave. His Lordship thanked me in general for the offers I made him, and desir'd me to visit him next morning.

As 'twas summer time, I waited upon him very early next day; having before order'd my servants to carry thither a great many things he wanted. I bid the surgeon take all the time necessary for curing his patient; and had the pleasure to hear that the wound was much better, and that his Lordship might be mov'd with safety in a week. I assur'd his Lordship that I sincerely wished his recovery, which gave him no little pleasure; and he afterwards unbosom'd himself to me in a most engaging manner. Sir, said his Lordship, the arguments you employed the day that I stabb'd myself, have made so strong an impression on my mind, that I every day return thanks to Heaven for suffering me to be still ranked among the living, and indulging me time for repentance. As I strive to offer up a sincere one to the supream Judge, I hope that it will be accepted.

His

His Lordship seemed in great emotion at these words. I therefore thought proper, seeing him so well disposed, to interrupt him, by assuring him that I was overjoy'd to find it was in my power to serve him; and would now relate my adventures since he desired it. 'Twill be a prodigious pleasure to me, replied his Lordship; and I expect to hear a series of very surprizing incidents.

I then made him a short relation of my whole life, which the reader has already heard, and therefore shall not repeat them. I expatiated very much on Lord *Clarendon*, and described him in the most pompous terms, if I may be allowed that expression, but without deviating from the truth. I told him the honour his Majesty had done me, in making me a member of the privy Council. I related in few words the several uneasinesses I had met with in his Majesty's service: The resolution I took to leave the Court, and to take my son away, who was one of the King's pages: The leave which was granted me to resign, and the order I receiv'd to leave my son at Court; and lastly, the tragical end of my much-loved son. Thus my Lord, says I, you have heard the adventures of a man, who has a thousand times repented his not following the Earl of *Clarendon's* advice, *viz. To take care how I devoted myself to a Prince, who, upon his accession to the throne, possess'd all the qualities which form the great Monarch; and yet was afterwards so compleatly immers'd in luxury and debauchery, that he lost them all.*

His Lordship having thanked me for this relation, and the great care I took to provide him in all things necessary, had a table spread, with three covers, near his bed-side. He then said, in the most obliging terms, that as he had an earnest desire that the young person I had seen, whose sad story he would tell me, should be acquainted with Mrs. *Cleveland*; she should dine with us, in order that I might be enabled to give a description of her behaviour to my wife. Accordingly he sent for Miss *Lydia*, who indeed appear'd an exquisite beauty. But when she began to join, with the utmost modesty, in the conversation; and display'd her art in the thanks she gave me for the great care I had taken of the Earl of R—— whom I took for her father; I must confess that I was not struck so much with the charms of her person, as with the gracefulness

fulness of her discourse. We din'd in the most agreeable manner, and my dear wife's health was not forgot. Just as we were going to rise from table, a person who had all the air of a gentleman came into the apartment, who saluted the company with a very polite air. He nevertheless seem'd vastly dejected, and had a great scar in his face. He was in a very neat, but plain dress; so that I took him at first for a servant of his Lordship, who soon undeceived me in that particular, by giving his hand to the gentleman. Sit down, said he, by my new friend, who liv'd here many years before us. To him I owe the numberless favours I spoke to you of; whose great sincerity and fidelity has lost him the King's favour, as we did. This gentleman, says the Earl of R—— to me, is Sir C—— whom I mentioned to you in the beginning of my story, and be assur'd he is worthy of your friendship. You see a scar in his face. He owes it to a satyrical expression he let fly against the King, who would not forgive it. Sir C—— was a member of the house of Commons, In the year 1670, he oppos'd the grant of certain taxes; however, the Court-party prevail'd; and all that the Commons could effect, was to get the subsidies assign'd to certain odious inconsiderable funds. A motion was made, to put a tax upon play-houses, to which the King's creatures answered, that the players were in his Majesty's service, and appropriated to his pleasures. Sir C—— asked very humorously, which sex amus'd his Majesty, whether the actors or the actresses? This answer exasperated the King, so that he hired a sett of ruffians, who watching the knight one evening, they fell upon him suddenly, and slit his nose to the bone. The house of Commons were resolv'd to revenge this horrid insult, so they condemn'd the assassins to perpetual banishment, with this clause, that it should not be in the King's power to pardon them. The tyranny of the Court was heartily inveigh'd against on this Occasion: However, the knight thinking it not safe for him to continue any longer in *London*, he disappear'd so completely on a sudden, that no one could give the least account of him. But coming in search of an asylum in this solitude, I happen'd to find the apartment he now lives in, which he was pleas'd to let me share with him; but it

it being too small for both, he directed me to that I now inhabit. We often visit; and the similitude of our calamities has cemented our friendship, and lightened the burden of our evils. But methinks, says the earl, I read in your eyes an impatient desire to know the cause of the strong hatred I owe to Lord *Clarendon*. My aversion was just, according to the maxims of the world, but I certainly carried it too far; and I dare assure you, that I esteem'd that nobleman in my heart. Here follows the cause of my hatred.

One of my relations, and the best friend I had in the world, who had been married about a year, came with his wife, and a lady that was my cousin, to pass some time at a country seat, whither I had carried my wife, who had been out of order four or five days, to take a little air. The ladies us'd to take a walk almost every evening, during which I and my relation received the company that us'd to visit us. One day after we had dined very agreeably, the ladies propos'd to take their usual rambles: But my wife having taken a little physick that day, could not make one among them. The other two ladies, therefore, got into the coach, attended only by one lacquey, and my running footman, who was a very swift-footed fellow. About two hours after their setting out, the latter advanced towards us, almost out of breath, and in a prodigious fright, just as my relation and I, my valet de chambre and steward, were mounting on horseback, to go and meet the ladies. Alas! Sir, says he, Mrs. M. is wounded, and four villains in masks have carried off the young Lady. Let us fly, and see whether we cannot succour the wounded lady. Fir'd at these words, we ran with the swiftest speed, and soon got up with the poor lady who unhappily was breathing her last. My friend was seized with the deepest affliction, as his wife, whom he loved to distraction, and who merited the utmost tenderness, was just ready to lie in. My valet de chambre, who was a person of very good sense, and an excellent surgeon, assuring us that there was a possibility of saving the child, we consented to the operation he propos'd. We had no time to lose, for the mother that moment expired, when an incision being made, the child was sav'd, and that is the sweet young lady that now left the room. Finding it impossible to discover the wretch who had

VOL. II. R murdered

murdered the lady, and carried off my cousin, I order'd my servants to move away the corps and the new-born babe. My valet de chambre attended the sad procession, and I had a very difficult task to keep the distracted husband from killing himself. At last I got him to my house, where I had put him to bed, but he was seized with so violent a fever, that he died two days after, beseeching me, in his expiring moments to make the strictest search after the wretch who had murdered his dear wife, and to see her daughter virtuously brought up. I promis'd solemnly to comply with his desires, and hope I have nothing to reproach myself upon that account.

I now had compliments of condolence made me by multitudes of people, the news of this dismal catastrophe being soon spread abroad. I had examined very closely the coachman and footman, who were present at the murder; but the account they gave me was so prodigiously confus'd, that I did not know what to make of it. At last I began to suspect a young nobleman who us'd to visit me very often, attracted by the charms of my cousin. As he, after this, had not come to my house for a week, my suspicions increased. I enquired of every one who came to see me, whether they had not heard of Sir ——— *Hyde*, but could not get the least information. However, twelve days after the murder my cousin returned to her father's, whither I was come, in order, if possible, to get some farther light into this horrid affair. The young lady bursting into tears, told us, that four horse-men, with masks on, had stopt the coach threatening to shoot the coachman in case he did but turn his head about. One of these wretches, continued she, going to force me out of the coach, Mrs. M—— flung herself upon him; strove all she could to keep me in the coach, and to force his mask off. The villain finding she exerted herself in this manner, was barbarous enough to draw out a dagger and stab her to the heart, and immediately she fell. I myself fainted away, and did not recover till some time after, when I found myself in a room, and Sir ——— *H.* very busy about me. He made such proposals as filled my soul with horror; and finding I still refused to comply with his brutal desires, he threatned to murder me, in case I refus'd. I nevertheless resisted; but I will confess that the fear of death stagger'd my resolution. He
just

just now, continued the lady, turn'd me out of the house, with a thousand insults, and the most harsh language. She could not give the least account of the place to which she had been dragg'd, because they had hood-winked her. Saying these words, she conjur'd us with a flood of tears, to revenge the odium which had been cast on herself and family.

Accordingly, we complain'd of the knight to his majesty, who seem'd to listen to them, and nevertheless Sir ——— H ——— escaped from us. Upon this his estate was seiz'd; and a considerable pension was settled on the complainant, and sentence was pronounced on the knight as guilty of murder and a rape, since which time no one heard what is become of him.

The aversion which I and my whole family entertain'd, was not confin'd merely to Sir ——— H ———, but extended to all of the name of H ———, and consequently to your friend. The king had often endeavour'd to exasperate me against that minister, whom we both hated and fear'd: However, I would not consent to the proposals the king had made me, and even took his part: But after the execrable action committed by his nephew, I acquiesced with whatever his majesty desired. You know, Sir, by the story of that nobleman, what was transacted at that time; the crimes I laid to his charge, and how I was supported by the house of commons in the prosecution. But as the lords required strong proofs to the impeachment, and it being impossible for us to offer any that were valid, I advis'd the king to let *Clarendon* depart the kingdom. Such were the motives of the enmity I bore him; and I submit to your judgment, whether I can justly be accused for it.

My illustrious friend, says I, has now been dead some years, let us not therefore disturb his ashes. I must confess that some specious reasons may be given to justify your animosity; and I pity from my soul any gentleman who may be involved in the sad circumstances to which the brutality of a hair-brain'd wretch reduced you.

I took my leave of the earl for three or four days, being afraid that our conversations, and the relation of incidents which had brought him to the brink of the grave, would retard his cure.

I then got on horseback, and rode away, followed by

my two servants ; but I had not left *Rumney-hole* above a quarter of an hour, before I spied some horsemen, who immediately turn'd out of their road, and rode cross the country in order to come up with me. Two of these left their company, and advancing near, we saluted one another very amicably ; and I enquiring what they wanted ? They answered, my purse. — Says I, gentlemen, I presume you want to make a trial of my courage, merely for diversion sake : However, should you not be what I really take you for, that is, persons of quality, but thieves, this I assure you, gentlemen, I am not easily frightened. Thieves, said one of the company, which by this time had surrounded me ; be not so liberal of your ill language to a sett of honest gentlemen, who content themselves with receiving or taking in a polite way, the half of whatever comes in their way. We exercise our profession in an honourable manner ; and no one can accuse us of having taken above half out of the purse of such persons whose good fortune has directed them to us. We observe the strictest rules of justice, and never suffer any base action to be committed by any of our company. Determine, therefore, speedily ; though we advise you, as friends, to divide with us half the money you may have about you ; especially as this will ease you of half your load.

You are then in earnest, says I, gentlemen ? In down right earnest, answer'd they ; and as we are in a little hurry, we should take it as a favour if you would dispatch. Gentlemen, says I, you must be contented with my note, since it has so happened, but how I cannot guess, that I have not a single cross in my pocket. Name only the sum, and I'll give you my note for it. Very well, replied the civil creatures, make it then for two hundred pounds *Sterling*, and payable in a week. Write down your direction, and some of us will wait upon you at the time appointed : But first swear that you won't seize us, as tho' we were villains who had acted basely by you.

I promised to observe faithfully whatever they should enjoin ; but the difficulty was, how to get pen, ink, and paper ; however, these honest gentlemen, who were used to such adventures, soon furnished me with more than I wanted. Accordingly I drew a note of 200 pounds, payable in a week, desiring them to come and receive

ceive it at my house. They then gave me a small piece of green ribbon, and bid me tie it about my arm, to prevent my being stopp'd by their rear guard, who, they told me, I might very probably meet with. In case you should be stopp'd, said they, only shew the ribbon, and cry, *hopagato*, (I have paid) this being the watch-word for to-day; after which you may go on unmolested. I thank'd the gentlemen for their civility, and left them much better pleased than they were, at receiving my note: However, I did not meet with any of their brethren.

Being returned home, I told Mrs. *Cleveland* my adventure, which was a very whimsical one, and occasioned a great number of reflections. My wife thought I ought to seize those who should come to receive the money; but I could not be of her opinion, persuaded it would be of dangerous consequence, should I seize any of the gang, since the rest would not fail to revenge the death of their companions. Mrs. *Cleveland* immediately agreed with me; and we resolved, so far from breaking my word, to receive them with great civility, in presence of a great many of our neighbours, whom we should invite to dinner, for that purpose.

The day appointed for the payment being come, I got together a considerable number of lords and ladies; when just as we were going to sit down, a servant came and told me, that two strange gentlemen desired to speak with me. Immediately I left my company to wait upon my new guests. However, they were not the same persons who had stopp'd me; but, after saluting me with the utmost politeness, they said, that they brought a note written in my hand, and did not doubt but I would pay the contents of it. I answered them, it should be paid very punctually, and in the mean time, begg'd the favour of them to favour me with their company at dinner. They made some scruple at first, but at last consented to my intreaties. They were extreamly complaisant and well bred; and had made a very great progress in the noblest studies; as appear'd by their relations from the finest authors among the antients; all which they applied in a most agreeable manner. Their conversation was not only solid, but very entertaining, so that they would have been finish'd gentlemen, had not their profession been so irreputable. I introduced them among my friends, as persons

with whom I formerly had been acquainted in *Roan*, and said, that as they had happened to come that way, they had done me the honour to make me a visit. I had acquainted every one of the guests with my late adventure, but not one of them took the least notice of it. About an hour or two after dinner, I paid the two hundred pounds, took my note, and we parted very good friends.

At my return to the company, they were much divided in opinion, with regard to this adventure. Some blamed me for not seizing them, whilst others approved of my conduct, but all in general were astonished at the impudence of these Banditti. Others again were very sorry to see persons, perfectly accomplish'd in every respect, so greatly depraved, as to follow so infamous, and dangerous a course of life. In fine, we diverted ourselves with the high offence those gentlemen took at my calling them thieves.

We now changed the subject of our discourse, upon one of the company's asking me the reason why I frequented subterraneous places so much. This question puzzled me very much, for I was very unwilling to betray my new friend; but I was extricated very happily out of my confusion, by a servant's coming to tell me, that a gentlewoman and a young lady desired to speak with me. Upon my desiring to know their names before I went down to them, I was told that my porter had inquired it; but that the gentlewoman had made no other answer than that I should be very glad to see them. My wife was uneasy at what she heard, fearing that some false friend was going to play me a trick. At last, I went out to the ladies; but heavens! how agreeably was I surpriz'd to see Mrs. *Bridge* and her charming daughter. I flew to them, and after clasping both the mother and daughter for some time in my arms (all of us shedding tears of joy at our being so happy to see one another again after a six years sad separation) I led them to the parlour where my company were sitting. My wife sprung to them with transport, and all four were so overjoyed, in such extasies, that we were scarce able to speak. At last, after I had got a little breath, and recovered from the delightful surprize, at my being again blest with the company of two persons who had always been so dear to me, and whose absence had given me so much uneasiness; I
told

told the company, how nearly related I was to the gentleman and her daughter. Immediately all the ladies paid them their respects, and embracing them tenderly, congratulated them on their safe arrival; the gentlemen were extremely complaisant on this occasion; and all made us a thousand compliments on our propitious meeting. The lady of the greatest distinction in the company rising, obliged all the rest to rise also, she observing, that it would be very proper to leave us; and that we doubtless had a thousand things to say, after so tedious and cruel an absence. I beg'd the company to sit down again, but at the same time was extremely glad to see all the ladies and gentlemen complying with the first motion.

When all the strangers were withdrawn, we again renewed our caresses; and could not forbear expatiating on our happiness in thus enjoying each other's company, after having lost all hopes of ever seeing one another again. We offered up our most unfeigned thanks upon that account, to the supreme Guide and Director of all events.

I told my sister-in-law *Bridge*, that I would not desire her to tell me the several particulars which had happened to her since our parting: that she and her daughter might be assured, that we would never part more: that Mrs. *Bridge* might be persuaded that my dear wife would love her daughter as kindly as if she were her own: that we had been prodigiously griev'd at our sad separation, as that sad accident had frustrated all our designs: that since heaven had brought us again together, it doubtless approved that design, which we would discourse of more fully at a proper time. My wife, transported to see again a person whom she respected so much, and who had contributed so greatly to our reconciliation at *St. Cloud*, would immediately give her a sign of the happy consequences of it. Accordingly she called our two daughters, the oldest of which was four years old, and the youngest three. Mrs. *Bridge* caressed them over and over; and indeed they were such sweet children, that she could hardly have forbore doing so, had they been strangers. They both spoke *French* and *English*, and indeed their wit far outstrip'd their years. She asked them several questions in both those languages; and tho' neither of them was prepared, they both answered with a charming vivacity. At last, as it grew late, I ordered supper to be got ready, and

after spending the remaining part of the evening very agreeably Mrs. *Cleveland* and I conducted our dear friends to the apartment allotted for 'em.

I was so delighted to reflect I had again found a sister of Mrs. *Bridge's* merit, and her amiable daughter, that I could not sleep a great part of the night. My wife was continually wishing me joy on this occasion, and recalled to my memory the many pleasing hours we had spent together. She repeated with peculiar pleasure the many kind, judicious things she had said to her, during our unhappy separation. As she was expatiating upon these particulars, we would break off on a sudden, and cry out, what a sweet creature is that daughter of hers! How many fond wishes did I make at the sight of her! She'll be a charming wife for our dear—— Not so fast, my love, said I; let us hear first what hath befallen them since our separation: That I will desire her mother to inform us tomorrow, when, if every thing is as I hope to find it, and which I am persuaded is really so, from the cheerfulness I perceive in my niece; we then shall see what course it will be proper for us to take, in order to make our son happy with that charming creature.

Our impatience to see one another was so great, that we all rose early, and being got together, we again renewed our fondness. My wife could not bear to have the lovely miss *Betsy* out of her sight. Dear niece, would she say, have you ever thought of us since our absence? Have you sometimes reflected on the anguish with which I was seized, when I saw the merciless pirates tear us from one another? Not a day has passed, ever since that mournful accident, but I have vented a thousand sighs for your mother, for yourself, and for dear Mrs. *Lallin*, whom I long to hear of. Alas! replied my niece, with tears trickling from her eyes; Mrs. *Lallin* is no more: That dear woman died a most cruel death. I don't doubt dear uncle, but you, as well as my dear aunt, (throwing her arms about her neck) will be deeply afflicted at her tragical end; my mother, who will tell you all our sad adventures, will inform you of the death of a woman for whom we had a most tender affection, and who was a perfect image of virtue in this world.

Grieved to the soul at what my niece here hinted to us, I desired her mother to relate all her adventures, and
what

what had befallen them in their captivity. You very justly replied my sister, give the name of captivity to the sad condition we were in immediately after our separation. The ships which took us on the *English* coast, and separated us so very unfortunately, were two of the best in the *French* fleet. The admiral gave 'em liberty to cruise upon the *Dutch*, in order to prejudice their commerce; and indeed their commission was of very great extent. The ship we were put on board of was commanded by a true pyrate, who sailed towards *Barbary*, and threatned very often to sell us for slaves to the infidels. This officer was a hard hearted wretch, whom neither intreaties nor tears could soften. The lieutenant, however treated us with great humanity; and it was not long before Mrs. *Lallin's* wit and beauty made so great an impression on this officer's heart, that he fell distractedly in love with this unfortunate lady; and to this we owe our liberty, and the happiness which was the effect of it. The lieutenant, whose name was *Longchamp*, grieved at the barbarous behaviour of his captain, resolved to rescue us out of his hands, whatever might be the consequence: He was beloved by the whole crew, and had so great an authority, that he could have thrown our persecutor into the sea, if he had thought proper; but he chose rather to get rid of him in a more honourable way. The captain had insulted him so often, that he at last resolved to exasperate him to such a degree as to oblige him to draw. One day the captain declared to us, that as we were near to the coast of *Barbary*, we must prepare ourselves for slavery; and that he was determined to sell us at *St. Croce*; and that in two days he should be paid a good sum of money for us. The emperor of *Morrocco*, says he, (gazing on *Betzy*, with a cruel scoffing air) will be delighted with that pretty little creature. We burst into tears at this news, when the lieutenant, hearing our cries, ran to our cabin to see what was the matter. They are crying; says the brutal captain, because I am going to sell them to the Moors. That shan't be, replied the lieutenant; and I declare to you, that I take these ladies under my protection, or rather that of his majesty. No law will allow you to use in so barbarous a manner, persons well born, whose ill fate it is to fall into your hands. 'Twas very wrong of you to condemn the ship they were in, as lawful prize, since the

English are the king's friends and allies; and that one of the ladies, pointing to Mrs. *Lallin*, is a *French* woman. I advise you, therefore, to show a greater regard to his majesty's ordinances; for otherwise, be assured, that you will be severely punished for infringing them. I'll soon make you, replied the captain, repent your impertinence, and will teach you yourself to obey. Your insolence has too often made you fail in your duty; I have been too indulgent; but am now determined to make you sensible how much I am your superior. I know, answered *Longchamp*, haughtily, the obedience I owe you, when we are to fight the enemies of our country; but then I know, likewise, that I should be an accomplice in the fight both of God and man in your crimes, if I should connive at your oppressing these ladies.

The captain, now swell'd to rage, ran upon deck, to give some orders, and was followed by our generous protector, who declared, that he would soon set us at liberty; or perish in the attempt. Seeing the ship was going to steer towards *Barbary*, he bid the crew not obey the captain, and immediately commanded them to make for *Toulon*. The pilot sided with the lieutenant, when presently there arose a great dispute among the sailors; some, out of fear, were for obeying the captain, whilst others, hating that barbarous wretch, laugh'd at his orders. The noise we heard over our heads fill'd us with terror, when three gentlemen, two of whom were *Hollanders*, and the third a stranger to every body, who had been taken prisoners before us, broke open the cabbins where their arms, and those of the other prisoners were laid. Immediately they seiz'd the first that came to hand, and ran arm'd upon deck, in order to assist the lieutenant. The courage these gentlemen shew'd, engaged the crew to join with the lieutenant. The captain seeing this, runs at *Longchamp*, when immediately a fierce combat ensued between them. At last, the former receiving a full thrust in his body, fell overboard into the sea, and not one of the sailors endeavoured to save him. They all shouted for joy, and seem'd as much delighted as tho' they had gain'd a compleat victory over a barbarous enemy; calling for a thousand blessings on the lieutenant, who, after thanking the three gentlemen for their assistance, came and gave us our liberty in the highest transports of delight, which plainly showed

showed his generosity and greatness of soul, and told us that he would sail for *Toulon*.

As we were agreeably employed in thanking him for his kindness and humanity, a sailor came and said, that the three gentlemen begg'd leave to wait upon the ladies; and especially the stranger, who sent word that he desired that favour for a particular reason. Accordingly they were admitted, when the stranger gazed very attentively upon all of us, and at last fixed his glances, with prodigious earnestness, on Mrs. *Lallin*. Whilst the other two gentlemen were making us the most handsome compliments, I happen'd to call Mrs. *Lallin* by her name, but how great was our astonishment, to see the stranger run to her with open arms and cry; is heaven then so gracious to me, as to bring my sister and me together again, after a twenty years separation; and after we had so long lost all hopes of ever seeing one another again? I have not been able to hear what was become of you, ever since my eldest brother's unhappy affair — And are you then my brother? replied Mrs. *Lallin*, pray what is your christian name? He answered, 'tis *John-Francis*; your's is *Mary-Caroline-Louisa*, and that of our brother was *Peter-Philip*. I broke my left arm, continued he, when I was four years old; see here the marks of it, says he, extending both his arms, his right one being two or three inches longer than the other. You are my brother, relied Mrs. *Lallin*, shedding tears of joy, and clasping him in her arms. I return unfeigned thanks to heaven for thus bringing us together again. And turning about to Mr. *de Longchamp*, I hope, continued she, you will release my brother, who will soon be infinitely dear to me.

The lieutenant, kneeling before Mrs. *Lallin*, told her, that he was the only prisoner now on board the ship; that she had bound him in the strongest chains; that he was captive to her charms, and therefore begg'd she would accept him for a lover, she being as dear to him as his soul. I look upon, continued he, the service I have now done you, as the beginning of my felicity. Condescend, dear lady, says he, to make me compleatly happy; for I shall take the liberty to say, that I am born of a good family, have wealth enough, and love you with an excess of passion. I am surpriz'd Sir, replied Mrs. *Lallin*, how you can love me; for I am neither young nor handsome, and
you

you certainly might meet with a lady who would suit you better, madam, answered the lieutenant, I shall never be happy unless I marry you. Well, Sir, says Mrs. *Lallin*, since you fancy that I shall be able to contribute to your satisfaction, I accept with pleasure the offer you make me, and now confirm it with my hand. We'll conclude every thing as soon as we come to *Toulon*, and in the mean time will study one another's tempers, by which means we shall find whether there is a probability of our living happy together. Dear lady, replied he, crown my wishes immediately. But Mrs. *Lallin* desiring to have a little private conversation with us and her brother, before she gave him a direct answer, Mr. *Longchamp* consented to it, and cried as he withdrew, I earnestly conjure you by all things dear, to obtain the lady's consent.

When we were retired with her brother, she desired him to relate his several adventures, from the time he had left his father's house. Dear sister, says he, I long as much to hear your story, as you do to know mine: But this is not the business at this time, and we may defer it to another day; come, let us talk upon our suitor's affair. I find you have accepted his offer, but that you don't care to marry him till we arrive at *Toulon*. I find by your consent, that you are at liberty to dispose of your heart. But if I may advise, marry him out of hand. I have often heard talk of Mr. *de Longchamp*, and I'll assure you, always in the most advantageous terms. He has a very considerable estate, which will enable you to make a very handsome figure in the world; and as he is born of a very honourable family, and is a gentleman both in his air and conversation, where can you be better match'd? I believe all you say, replied the sister; but methinks you go too fast. She spoke the last words with such an air as obliged me to speak as follows. As 'twould not be above three weeks before we should be settled in *Toulon*, she ought to sacrifice that time to the ardent wishes of our generous deliverer. She still insisted on the formalities required on these occasions, when my daughter said, there is no doubt but your lover form'd this design ever since he first saw you. She had no sooner spoke this, but she opened the cabin door, and calling Mr. *Longchamp*, she asked him upon what terms he intended to marry Mrs.

Lallin?

Lallin? As she is mistress of my heart, replied he, she also shall be mistress of my fortune; and if she will consent, the chaplain of the ship shall marry us immediately, for here are witnesses enough; and I here take heaven to witness, that I will be faithful to her till the time of my death. I make you the same promise, said Mrs. *Lallin*, holding out her hand; and since Mrs. *Bridge*, her amiable daughter, and my brother advise me to accept your offers, I here accept of them with all my heart. May heaven be propitious to our marriage! honour and virtue are dearer to me than life, and this I hope to evince by my whole conduct. This excellent woman seem'd to melt, as she pronounced these words, and one would have imagin'd that she had a fore-knowledge of what would happen to her.

And now Mr. *Longchamp* prepared every thing for the marriage, and as he knew we should not be present at it; he desir'd me to give orders for the dinner, in the mean time; and immediately calling the chief cook, he bid him obey all my commands. I assur'd the bride and bridegroom, that tho' my daughter and I should not be present at the marriage, we nevertheless would implore heaven to bless it, and grant them an uninterrupted series of prosperity.

After we were separated, I took the opportunity, as I gave the cook directions, to view the several parts of the ship. I was surpriz'd at what I saw, and will confess I should never have believ'd, in case I had not been an eye-witness to it, that there could have been so many places for the stowing so prodigious a quantity of provisions. I will assure you that I found wherewithal to make a sumptuous dinner, and took care to provide a handsome entertainment for the whole crew.

After the ceremonies were ended, I went with *Betzy*, and congratulated the new married couple on their marriage. The bride flew to my arms, and clasping me with the utmost tenderness, I hope, saye she, that Mr. *de Longchamp* is as good a man as his countenance seems to promise him, for otherwise I shall be the most unhappy woman in the world. But if he proves what I hope he will, I shall be compleatly happy; especially if I should one day have the good fortune to see again dear Mrs. *Cleveland* and her spouse. Shall we never hear of them? What a pleasure would it be to me, could I know that this amiable couple,

couple, with whom I have had so many happy days, were as blest as I could wish them. If ever you see them again, I beseech you, dear Mrs. *Bridge*, (clasping me again in her arms) to assure them that they are seldom a moment out of my thoughts, and nothing but death can blot them from my memory. The bridegroom came then, and join'd in the conversation. He seem'd to be a man of the utmost merit, vastly polite, and to have an ardent passion for his wife, which gave me inexpressible satisfaction. We din'd, and spent the evening very pleasantly; and after a few ceremonies, put our good friend to bed.

The greatest joy was seen in every part of the ship; and Mr. *Longchamp* gave such good orders, that the soldiers and sailors fuddled themselves without once falling out; a circumstance that seldom happens among that kind of people.

Next morning the new married couple seem'd mighty well pleased with one another, and the sight of them renewed our joys. The crew were regal'd a second time, and behav'd as orderly as the day before. The winds and waves favoured us, and drove us safely towards *Toulon*. Mr. *Longchamp* thought it necessary, before he went on shore, to draw up a relation of the quarrel between the captain and himself, sign'd by the most considerable persons on board the ship. Every one was proud to set their hands on this occasion, but our generous deliverer was contented with a general testimonial; and indeed he had little occasion for it, no man having ever enjoy'd a more universal good reputation.

In a few days we arriv'd in the midst of festivity and delight, at *Toulon*. Being landed, Mr. *de Longchamp* ordered his vale de chambre to wait upon us to his house, which indeed was a very fine one. As for himself, he went to the commissioners of the navy to give in the state of his affairs, and to desire them to give orders for discharging the crew, because the ship wanted to be refitted. Not long after he came home, and hearing that I was enquiring for a lodging in the city, for myself and *Betsy*, till such time as we might have an opportunity of going for *England*; madam, says he to his lady, will you suffer these good friends to live out of our house? Did not you intreat them not to leave you but upon an absolute necessity? Dear Mrs. *Longchamp*, replied she, I think myself so much mistress,

in your house, as to be allowed to take that liberty. I have us'd all the arguments possible, to prevail with them to stay; but they are so hard hearted as to resolve to leave us to morrow, and for very poor reasons. Nay, says I, if they persist in their resolution, I will go and give immediate orders for imprisoning the two *Dutch* gentlemen whom I had set at liberty merely at Mrs. *Bridge's* request. *Betsy* at these words immediately cried out, madam, let us stay here till we get news of my dear uncle *Cleveland*. Where shall we find so excellent a friend as Mrs. *Longchamp*, and in whose acquaintance we have been so long happy? Since her spouse is so urgent, I beg you to acquiesce with his desires. If I yield replied I, to *Betsy*, 'tis not at your intreaties, but out of gratitude for Mr. *Longchamp's* civilities, and the great and continued friendship I have had for his lady. I don't know how I shall do when I leave them to go for *England*; 'twill be death for me to live from them, and the thoughts of our separation tortures me. However, let us not anticipate our afflictions; my daughter and I will enjoy your company as long as we possibly can, upon condition that you'll give us notice of the very instant we begin to be troublesome. That we promise, answer'd both; when Mrs. *Longchamp* throwing her arms about my neck; if you keep your word, added she, nothing but death shall separate us. I then embraced her with the utmost tenderness, and told her, that I would make all the enquiry possible after my brother and dear spouse. If I get any information about them, continued I, and know where they are, we'll then see if it be possible for us to live separate. I must inform you, replied Mrs. *Longchamp*, of a secret, and make a proposal to my dear husband. You are to know, madam, that he has promised me to leave the service, and to spend his days either in this city; or at our country house; and that the proposal I have to make Mr. *Longchamp*, is, that if you get any news of your relations, whom you doubtless then will go to; that my spouse and I may accompany you on that occasion. I consent to this, says Mr. *Longchamp* in the most obliging terms; and be assur'd that I shall take a singular pleasure, and think it a great honour, to visit persons for whom you have so tender an affection. After this we settled the whole matter.

The very next day that Mr. *Longchamp*'s return and his bringing a lady with him whom he had married, were known in *Toulon*, all persons of the greatest distinction in that city, came and paid him their compliments. Every one of the visitants seemed vastly pleased with the easy, polite carriage of the bride, and invitations were made them from every quarter. You will believe that we shared in all their parties of pleasure. These lasted several weeks; but our friend finding that she was breeding, began to lead such a life as suited her condition, for fear of injuring the future infant. Her spouse who now had obtained a discharge from his majesty, after having been applauded for sending his wretch of a captain out of the world, desired us to retire to a country-seat of his about twelve miles from *Toulon*, which we had frequently visited; and to continue there till his wife should be delivered. He said, that he would intreat his most intimate friends to defer the visits they doubtless intended to pay him, till she was up again.

Accordingly we went to his country-seat, which tho' a little antique, yet discovered a magnificence that was greatly pleasing to the eye. We saw but very little company, but Mr. *Longchamp* went almost every week to *Toulon*, but always returned the same evening. In the mean time his lady advanc'd very happily in her pregnancy.

I forgot to observe that Mr. *Lallin* had set out secretly from the country-seat the first time we visited it, and made the best of his way to *Roan*, as he told us at his return from that city. His design in this was, to inquire privately after a certain unhappy affair, in which he had been engaged in his youth. As he had not once revealed the least particular relating to his life, or his design, to his sister; he only left a letter sealed on the table, and directed to Mrs. *Longchamp*, and the contents of it were such, that we did not know what to make of it. These were the words.
 " I beg you dear sister not to be troubled for my absence.
 " I'll endeavour to come back to you, by that time you
 " are delivered; and I hope to appear in such a manner as
 " will give you pleasure. Let not your love for me less-
 " sen during this separation. Heighten that which your
 " spouse already bears me, and recommend me to the fa-
 " vour of the two ladies your excellent friends."

Mrs.:

Mrs. *Longchamp*, my daughter, and I, used frequently to walk in the garden, which indeed was exceedingly pleasant. Whenever her spouse favoured us with his company, he took care to give us all the little diversions that the country could afford. Sometimes we angled, at other times we caught small birds in nets, or rabbits in a little warren, which was just by his house, and surrounded with a beautiful stream. In this manner we pass'd the time very agreeably, and as walking began to be very uneasy to Mrs. *Longchamp*, especially as we had rainy weather, we staid pretty much at home during the last six weeks of her pregnancy.

You may remember, that she was a very devout woman, and a constant observer of the several duties of religion. As soon as she was got into the country, a great number of Monks of all orders, came and visited her and Mr. *Longchamp*. Among the several persons who presented themselves, she pitched upon a jesuit for her confessor; and she frequently told me, that she believed him a person of wonderful piety. Her spouse, to gratify her desire, sent for this jesuit almost every day. The three last days before her delivery, Mr. *Longchamp* desired his superior to permit the confessor to reside in his house, in order that he might be ready to assist his lady in her devotion, in case of an immediate necessity. Mr. *Longchamp* was immediately indulged his request; and accordingly the jesuit came and lodged in the house, there to pray for Mrs. *Longchamp's* happy delivery.

Mr. *Lallin* returned back to us as he had promised in the abovementioned letter; but as he arrived only a moment before the delivery, he had scarce time to embrace his sister. A little after he had left the room, she was delivered of a boy. This gave inexpressible joy to Mr. *Longchamp*, who returned never-ceasing thanks to heaven upon that account, beseeching it to succour both the mother and the babe. He and the jesuit used to walk sometimes, after this, in a room that joined to ours, where I could hear Mr. *Longchamp* ask the ecclesiastic's advice concerning the education he should give his son; expressing a very great uneasiness, that 'twas not in his power to instruct him in all things it would be proper for him to know.

Six days after the birth of the child, the jesuit returned to his convent, whither Mr. *Longchamp* sent a set of splendid.

did ornaments for the altar. Mr. *Lallin* also set out for *Roan*; and all we cou'd learn from him, was, that his affair went on very happily, but that it would be a long time before it would be ended.

'Twou'd take up too many hours, should I relate to you all that happen'd since that time. Mrs. *Longchamp* suckled the child herself, and 'twas the only one they ever had; and indeed, 'twas as beautiful a babe as ever was seen. At eight years of age he had as much wit as a child of sixteen; and he seem'd born to form his parents joy. This engaging couple were blest with perpetual prosperity, and their life was one uninterrupted series of well-judg'd pleasures. Surrounded with a very polite neighbourhood, they visited one another constantly with the most agreeable familiarity, on which occasions they would entertain one another in an elegant, but not profuse manner. My daughter and I were present at all these; and were exceedingly obliged to all parties, for employing their utmost endeavours to make us pass all our hours agreeably. I sent letters to every quarter, to get, if possible, some information of you, but was so unhappy as not to hear of you, till within these six weeks. Hearing in general, that you had chang'd your name, that you had enjoy'd a considerable employment at court, but that you had left it; I told Mr. *Longchamp* and his spouse, that I challenged their promise, and intreated them to go with me into *England*, where I had heard that you led an easy calm life with Mrs. *Cleveland*. The first wish'd me joy for the news I had heard of your being still alive; adding, that they were very sorry to think we should soon be separated, but would be as good as their word; and that they would have the pleasure, especially his spouse, to see once again two persons for whom they had an uncommon value.

We now prepar'd every thing for our departure; and I waited with *Betzy*, to take leave of all our acquaintance, and to return them thanks for all their favours. I can assure you that a multitude of tears were shed on this occasion. The evening before the day we were to set out, Mrs. *Longchamp* went to bed, whilst her husband went to write some letters. We were at that time in the country, and the jesuit (her confessor was come to wish her a good voyage. Mr. *Longchamp* did not go to bed till day-break, when his spouse hearing

hearing him coming, ask'd whether he were out of order? He answered, I am not; but have just ended my letters, and am coming to bed. You jest, replied she, for 'tis not a moment since you left me. They argued the matter so long, that it appeared at last that another man had gone to bed to her. Mr. *Longchamp* did not suspect his wife's fidelity, but run like a madman up and down the house; and flies for consolation, to the jesuit who was not gone to bed. They called for him every where, when at last a groom came, and said, that he was gone away upon a horse he had taken out of the stable; having told him that Mr. *Longchamp* had sent him to *Toulon* with letters which required the utmost dispatch. Mr. *Longchamp* return'd immediately into his bed-chamber, when alas! he saw a most mournful sight. Just as he entered it, his spouse said, that he might remember she had told him on their wedding-day, that honour and virtue were dearer to her than life,; and she no sooner spoke these words, but crying out, lord receive my spirit, she stabb'd herself with a knife to the heart, immediately her husband was going to lay violent hands upon himself, but was prevented by his servants, who threw themselves upon him.

Our apartment was at the other end of the house, where we slept very sweetly, without knowing any thing of this sad catastrophe. At last we were called—Dispense, cried Mrs. *Bridge*, shedding a flood of tears, with my describing to you the agonies with which we were seized. Her daughter had left the room just before she was come to the sad relation of a friend, who could not but be infinitely dear to them.

As for my wife, she fainted away, whom I ran to succour, tho' I was almost as weak as she was, and could not refrain from tears. At last she revived when I did all that lay in my power to cheer her after the doleful story. Alas! said *Fanny*, I had flattered myself with the fond hopes of seeing her here, but now 'twill be impossible. Thou infamous jesuit! detestable brute will heaven suffer thee to die unpunished?

Let us change this conversation, dear *Fanny* says I, and think of the design we lately meditated. Let us deliver ourselves with freedom to my sister *Bridge*, concerning the charming *Betzy*. You cannot but remember, dear sister, that before our sad separation, that we saw with inexpres-

sible

sible pleasure the great fondness which was between our children, the moment they were able to know one another. I have a mind to order my son to come home immediately, and will desire his highness the prince of *Orange's* leave for that purpose. I won't, however, anticipate my son's pleasure, by telling him that you are here; and believe we shall see him in a fortnight at farthest. I figure to myself the joy he will feel to see you here; and I am sure that he loves *Betzy* as dearly as ever, and that his passion for her will increase the moment he sees her.

If my niece has no aversion — Dear brother, reply'd my sister *Bridge*; my daughter has been address'd by a great many suitors of consequence in *France*, who were for marrying her immediately, but she always rejected their importunities: and she has told me a thousand times, when we were alone, that she would never marry any man but her dear cousin; and that in case he were dead, she was fully determined to lead a single life. But possibly, continued she, my nephew's mind may be chang'd; let us therefore suspend our resolution till he comes; and we then shall see what heaven will think fit to ordain, with regard to a union which seems so agreeable to you; and which in all probability, will form my daughter's happiness, and my satisfaction.

My wife was so extremely delighted with this discourse, that she quite recovered from the melancholy into which the relation of the tragical end of so dear a friend had plunged her. *Betzy* coming in that moment, she clasp'd her in her arms, and caress'd her with so much fondness, and asked her so many tender questions, as plainly shew'd the great friendship she had for this young person, who indeed was perfectly handsome, finely shap'd, amiable, and witty as an angel.

I was very urgent with my son to come as soon as possible. In the mean time, I one day related to my sister *Bridge*, all that had happened to us, since we had been cruelly torn asunder. She was deeply afflicted when I told her the tragical end of our dear son *Billy*; and shed an abundance of tears as I told her that deplorable accident, a few particulars of which she had heard before. She had forbore mentioning it to me, for fear of awaking the remembrance of so dismal a scene; and I took an opportunity of acquainting her with it, when my wife and niece were taking a turn in the garden.

Betzy

Betzy was telling her, how *Mr. Lallin*, being at eighteen years of age, distractedly in love with a very beautiful young lady of *Roan*, his cousin, had been affronted by the son of a nobleman, who was in great favour with the king. That exasperated one day at the airs he often gave himself before his relation, he had desired him to behave with more decency; but that the other making a very rude answer, a great quarrel ensued, when both drawing, *Mr. Lallin* killed his rival. That flying away immediately, a prosecution had been carried on against him, but in private. That the father of the deceased dying, no farther search was made after him, but that he had always been afraid of returning home, and therefore entered into the service of *Charles* the eleventh of *Sweden*, by whose mediation, he had obtained a free pardon from the king. That returning to *France* on board a little *Swedish* vessel, which the captain, whom *Mr. Longchamp* kill'd, would fain have had pass'd for a *Hollander*, he had taken him prisoner. That *Mr. Longchamp* having after the death of that captain, married his (*Lallin's*) sister, he had taken the opportunity, whilst he went into the country with his lady, to sue out his pardon. That being at *Roan*, he was greatly surpriz'd to find his cousin still living, who from the time of his absence, was determin'd not to marry; but upon his arrival had consented to be his bride, and at the same time to make him possessor of a very considerable fortune. All this had taken up no little time; but his nuptials were scarce over, before he heard of his sister's melancholy end. This, says *Betzy*, is the history in few words, of *Mr. Lallin*, who, hearing that *Mr. de Longchamp* had died with grief for his wife's untimely end, had been gone to *Toulon*, in order to take care of his infant-nephew's affairs. Immediately after he had completely settled them, we all set out together from *Toulon*, and afterwards went to *Roan*, where we saw his spouse, who, tho' she was forty years old, had still a lively bloom in her complexion. We staid a fortnight at her house, all which time we spent very agreeably; after which, my mother and I set out, in order to unite ourselves to you, the dearest friends we have in the world; and we thank heaven for having brought us so happily together.

Twelve days after I had writ to my son, I received an answer, by which I found that he would set out immediately

diately, and four days after this, *Dring* came one morning very early, and told me that he was arriv'd. Presently I arose, without making the least noise, or waking my wife. I had strictly order'd all my servants, that in case my son would ask whether there were any strangers in the house, to answer that there were none. I soon went to the room where he was, and embrac'd him with the utmost tenderness. He enquired with extreme eagerness after his mother's health; and after telling him that she was well, and would be overjoy'd to see him; I spoke to him in pretty near these words, in order to sound his inclinations.

After the misfortune, my dear son, says I to him, which has befallen us, by our losing your brother, in so tragical a manner, your mother and I are resolved to have you quit the service; to come and live with us, and to procure you such a match as may be agreeable and advantageous to you. Now we have made choice of a young Lady, as lovely and amiable as an angel, extremely witty and virtuous. We think that this match will be very great ——— Alas! replied he, my worthy Sir, don't force me to disobedience. You know the tender passion I have nourished so long in my bosom. I have lost, and that for ever, my dear *Betzy*, my amiable cousin: permit me therefore to live a single life, since that is my firm resolution; I can never be happy now she is gone. If I marry another, we shall both be miserable; and therefore, Sir, as you have always loved me with the most tender affection, would you have me married to a woman whom it will be impossible for me to love?

I answer'd, that 'twas my opinion, the match I propos'd to him would not be so unhappy as he imagin'd; that after he had seen the lady, in case he did not like her, he then might be at his own liberty; that this match had been only projected, but not agreed upon, by the parents on each side, so that nothing would be done without the consent of both parties: That the young lady and her mother were in the house, and not up yet; and therefore that he should go and dress himself in a suitable manner to appear before them, and that I in the mean time would go and acquaint his mother with his arrival. Accordingly I did so; and my wife in the highest transports of joy, threw on her clothes, and sent for him in. I had told her

the artifice I had employed in order to sound the inclinations of our son, who, says I, loves his cousin dearer than ever, but is firmly persuaded he shall never see her more. Our son came in, but in great confusion, and seemingly oppressed with a deep melancholy. His mother who was afflicted at the sight, cried, son, how can you express so much uneasiness at the match which your father proposes to you, when 'tis so very advantageous, and the only thing in the world you desire? What will your dear *Betsy* say, if she hears that you refuse to marry her? *Betsy*, says he, in the utmost transport! Is she here? Let me fly to the enchanting creature, and throw myself at her feet. What! shall I again see that sweet angel and her excellent mother? Dear father, mother, how happy am I? but don't deceive me: Is my *Betsy* still alive?

My wife, overjoy'd to see my son in such raptures, went and awak'd my sister *Bridge* and her daughter, and told them of our son's arrival. They were soon dress'd, and immediately sent for us. At our coming into the room, my son was in great perplexity, for his heart was attracted towards *Betsy*, whilst reason drew him towards her mother. However, they soon put him out of his pain; for both advancing towards him, they threw their arms about his neck, when we heard three voices cry, Heavens! and do I see you again? This was a very tender meeting. Mrs. *Cleveland* embraced them all in the most affectionate manner, when directing herself to our son; how greatly, said she, are you obliged to us, for sending to you in such haste, in order for you to see two ladies who are so dear to us; whose absence we had so often bewail'd, and that without having the least hopes of our ever being so happy as to see them again? But heaven has at last been so gracious as to bring us once more together, and, I hope, never to part. Come, my son, let us give our dear friends time to dress. Possibly said she with a smile, they may think of you, tho' absent. I answer for myself, cried my sister *Bridge*; I also answer for——— how Madam! says her lovely daughter, do you answer for me too?

At our going away my son look'd back twenty times. When we were got alone with him, he fell on his knees, and with the most earnest intreaties conjur'd us to consent to his marriage with his engaging cousin. His mother thereupon

thereupon advis'd him to consult Miss *Bridge* on that matter, to beg her consent, and afterwards to open the affair to her mother; assuring him at the same time, to favour his suit to the utmost of our power.

The mother and daughter came in, and we propos'd a walk in the garden, on which occasion we gave the fond pair an opportunity of pouring out their hearts to each other. They soon agreed matters, when giving each other a promise, their marriage was solemniz'd a few days after, to the great satisfaction of all parties.

The transactions of the year 1683, will furnish the next age with a large field for reflection; and it will be scarce able to come at the source, and discover the truth of an event which happened in *England* at that time. I mean the bloody end of the earl of *Essex*, who having been committed to the *Tower*, was found dead the next day with his throat cut. The same morning the k—— and his brother had been in the *Tower*, to see an experiment of a new invention made on a piece of cannon. There is no doubt but many consequences may be drawn from this circumstance. That very day the lord *Russel* was sentenced to lose his head, for having consented, as was declared in the charge, to surprize the king's guards. But as a gentleman of my acquaintance, a person of perfect honour and abilities, who is now writing the history of *England*, intends to publish some very curious and faithful anecdotes concerning the reign of the two br--th--s, I shall not make any further mention of publick affairs, from the time of my quitting business, and retiring into the country.

During this, I had sent every other day to *Rumney-hole*, to enquire after the earl of R——'s health. I us'd to send him word from time to time, that I would do myself the honour to wait upon him, whenever my presence could be of any service. But at last I sent word by *Dring*, to inform him that I did not dare to visit him with as much freedom as I had done hitherto, because the king and his brother had been told that I often went to those subterraneous places; that spies were abroad, to discover, if possible, the motives of my visits to them; so that I being afraid of discovering him, I begg'd him not to be surpriz'd, if he saw me no more; that those who had desir'd me to be upon my guard, were persons of undoubted

doubted credit; and that if I might advise, he should make choice of some other dwelling, or rather should leave *England*, till a revolution might happen, and that as soon as possible, for fear lest some trick should be plaid him, I having been assur'd that the king and the duke were highly exasperated against him, and were firmly persuaded that 'twas he inhabited these caves. The earl sent word, that he was greatly obliged to me for my advice, and assur'd me that he would leave *Rumney-hole* immediately; and the kingdom soon after; and that he would not fail to acquaint me with the place he should go to.

Three days after I received such news from court as determined me to send *Dring* immediately to the earl. Accordingly he set out for *Rumney-hole*, but alas! what a dismal spectacle did he see at his arrival there! the earl lying with his throat cut in the midst of his servants, who had been all butcher'd, and his amiable cousin lying stabb'd to the heart at the earl's feet. The villains had carried off all his lordship's plate and jewels, and *Dring* observ'd, that the young lady's ear-rings had been forc'd out of her ears, which were all torn. He soon left that fatal spot, and not finding *C* — in his abode, nor any of his furniture remaining, he rode with all speed to give me an account of the sad catastrophe. I at first resolv'd to go in search of the murderers, but the reflections I made, joined to those of my son, obliged me to lay aside that design. I therefore sent only for the surgeon, to inquire whether he could not give me some information of this matter; but I found that he had not been at home for several days; and all I could hear was, that the evening before the murder, he and eight persons more had been seen at a tavern, since which he had disappear'd. This made me conclude, that this wicked wretch, for the sake of the plunder, having overheard some of the instructions I had given the count, had offered his services to the greatest enemies of this nobleman, and that they had procured him the eight villains who were seen with him.

This tragical event rais'd a multitude of reflections in my mind, and I resolv'd never to leave the retir'd life I now followed. The wise counsels which lord *Clarendon* had given me, awak'd again in my remembrance, and confirm'd me in my design. I reproach'd myself a

thousand times for not having followed his prudent hints, for they would have preserved me from innumerable evils. I now intreated my friends, in the most polite terms, never to ask me any questions relating to the court ; for as I was absolutely determined never to go there any more, I did all that lay in my power to forget the past transactions of it. I now therefore applied myself seriously to my studies, and enjoyed inexpressible pleasure in the company of a famous divine, who quite removed all the doubts which the multiplicity of my affairs in *London* had not given me an opportunity to examine.

I used all the arguments possible with my son to engage him to leave the service, and live with me, but he seem'd so averse to my proposal, that I left him at his liberty. However, I begged the prince of *Orange* to permit him to be absent one year, and his highness granted my request ; so that he did not leave us till his wife was happily delivered of a fine boy. She went to *Holland* with him, whence they returned five months after, he having obtained leave to return to *England*, and there continue till after the delivery of his wife, who was four months gone with her second child.

Some days before their arrival, as I was walking in a wood, attended only by *Dring*, a villain shot me in the arm. It happened very luckily that two peasants belonging to a farm of mine, were near us, and these pursuing the wretch who had perpetrated this action, seized him. In the mean time *Dring* endeavoured to stop the blood, when a little after we heard the country fellows coming towards us, and threatening the ruffian very severely. Now, who should this be, but the surgeon whom I had employed at *Rumney-hole*. I ordered the men to bind him, and he was carried to prison. Being examined, he soon confessed that he had been set on by one *Blood*, a jesuit, who had procured him eight villains more, and that these murdered the earl, his cousin, and the servants in the subterraneous abodes. That this *Blood* was a jesuit, and had been set on by the c—rt. He was ask'd where that miscreant liv'd, but as he did not care to answer this question, he was carried to the press, the sight of which terrified him so much, that he soon gave information of his dwelling.

I did not inform any one but my son of this villainous design, and the wound was so very slight, that I easily concealed it from my wife. I gave proper orders for all things, and they were so happily executed, that the jesuit was seized and thrown into prison. The moment I heard of his being seiz'd, I had a great curiosity to see him. But how great will be the reader's astonishment when I tell him this villain was the individual *Gelin*? Is it a phantom, or do I see *Gelin*? says I. 'Tis *Gelin* himself replied he: I once was your friend, but now my crimes have made me your greatest enemy. I was executed in effigy only at *Paris*. I turn'd *Roman* catholick, and after having pass'd thro' my noviceship, I was sent upon a mission into *England*. One day I happened to be stopt by a band of thieves, but having no money about me, one of them promised me my life, provided I would join my self to their gang. This I consented to; and our captain having been taken and hang'd a few days after, we agreed that he among us who should undertake and compleat the boldest action in a week, should be declared our commander. As I speak the *English* tongue in perfection, had been long rambling about *London*, and was perfectly well acquainted with that city; I found means, by the assistance of three of our gang, to carry away from the Tower, the Crown, Scepter and Globe. We were all so unlucky as to be seiz'd as we were coming out of the Tower, when his majesty being desirous of seeing me, I confess'd that crime and a great number of others. I acknowledged that I deserved to die, but that as our gang consisted of five hundred men, who perhaps would, in case I should be executed, murder the king himself; I therefore intreated his majesty to save my life for his own sake. That in case he would grant me a pardon, I possibly might do him signal service; for as I was to be elected captain of the gang, I consequently should have a great number of men under my command. Accordingly his majesty not only pardon'd me, but also gave me a pension of 500 *l.* a year in *Ireland*. Exasperated at the happiness you enjoy'd with Mrs. *Cleveland*, I brought such an affliction upon you as has almost brought you to the grave. 'Twas I murdered your son. Don't interrupt me, said he, seeing all the blood rise in my face: I saw him, continued he, enter into the apartment whither the king was retired. I saw his majesty leave

it; when observing your son go into it, and wrap himself up in the king's cloak, throw himself on the bed, and fall asleep, I sent a dagger to his heart. 'Twas by my directions that the earl, his cousin and servants were murdered. The surgeon serv'd us as a guide to *Rumney-hole*, and was rewarded with the plunder of his dwelling. To conclude, 'twas I, ever-enraged at your happiness, hir'd the surgeon to shoot you; upon the promise of rewarding him with two hundred guineas; but the wretch not having been us'd to such exploits, his hand trembled, and he miss'd his aim. Proceeding from crime to crime, I plunged into so dreadful a condition as is inexpressible. Methinks I am already at hell's mouth; and I suffer beforehand, the torments I have but too justly merited.

I made no answer to this execrable wretch, but shuddering at what I had heard, and casting a stern glance, I left the prison. By order of the parliament he was moved to *Newgate*, where he shot himself.

B O O K XI. and last.

THE reader will suppose that I did not once mention this villain's murdering our dear son to *Mrs. Cleveland*. She, as well as my sister, our son and his wife, never knew him under any character but that of a jesuit, and I was determin'd not to deceive them in that particular, since that would only have set a wound a bleeding, which by this time was pretty well clos'd. I now saw my family in so sweet a tranquillity as charm'd me; and I may affirm, that we possess'd such a calm in our retirement, as we had never before enjoy'd. My daughter-in-law went on very happily in her pregnancy. Her mother, herself and my wife took the utmost care of the education of our daughters. Their wit very much outstripp'd their years. Every thing smil'd about me; and confin'd within our selves, we did not stand in need of any foreign succour. My son, who was compleatly happy in a wife, was passionately fond of study, especially that of History, and whatever related to the science of war. I took a singular pleasure in the study of philosophy, and those tracts of Christian morality, in which our *English* writers have so excell'd.

excell'd. These were our usual employments when we were alone. I appointed *Dring*, who had served me so faithfully, my steward; and I am obliged in justice to own, that he discover'd the utmost probity on all occasions.

For four months after *Blood's* imprisonment, our family seem'd to enjoy a most perfect harmony; and we were happy in the most solid and innocent pleasures. I sometimes us'd to receive letters from some of my intimate friends, who still continued at court; and all congratulated me on the wise resolution I had taken to lead a life of retirement. They acquainted me, without descending to particulars, that the court was still in a dreadful agitation; and that those were thrice happy who had an opportunity of living out of it. I answer'd, that I enjoy'd this felicity in all its extent; but I told a nobleman, to whom I us'd to unbosom myself more than to any other, that my happiness was so very great, I was afraid it would not last. I am afraid that fortune smiles at present, with no other design but to make me more compleatly wretched. My whole life, said I in my letter, has been a continual vicissitude of the deepest anguish, and the most seducing, but at the same time transient joy.

Ever since my reconciliation with my innocent wife, I had always liv'd with her in the most perfect unity. If ever fortune frown'd, the sweetness of my *Fanny's* temper sooth'd every uneasiness. This dear woman divided my afflictions with me, and by that means made them lighter; and whenever my soul was ruffled, she always restored it to its wish'd for calm. Our affections and desires were mutual: studious to please and delight each other, we had the satisfaction to see virtue flourish among us, and to regulate our own conduct, and that of our family. Mrs. *Bridge*, who shar'd our felicity, was ever congratulating us upon it; and blest'd with our condition, we began to obliterate the remembrance of past evils; but alas! fate would not suffer me to end my days so happily. At the time that I seem'd to be best pleas'd with my state, and possibly to be too fond of it, heaven struck me on a sudden, in the person of her who was infinitely dearer to me than myself.

At my return from a two days visit which I had made, in company with my son, to a friend who lived some miles

from us, I found my dear Wife sick a bed, she having taken to it almost ever since our setting out. She would not let any of the servants go and acquaint me with her indisposition, (hoping it would be slight,) and for that reason would willingly have spared me that uneasiness; my sister was sitting by her and holding her hands. The moment she saw me, dear, dear Mr. *Cleveland*, says she, I am so very sick, that I have but one last request to make you: I shall look upon your granting it as a strong proof of the tender affection we have always testified to each other. At these words I drew close to her, I embraced her, but alas! she burnt like fire, a proof, too plain, that she was seized with a violent fever. I was so grieved, that it was impossible for me to utter a word. What I have to request of you, continued she, is, that you'd submit with cheerfulness to the hard trial —— I am so oppressed with sickness, that alas! I have no hopes of recovery; and I even believe my end is very nigh. Remember, my dear spouse, the strength of mind with which I was endued, when I was told the cruel end of our darling son. I earnestly implore heaven to indulge you the same support, when it shall think fit to separate us. Live happy with my survivors, and be assured that your submission to the divine will, will prove the greatest comfort to you. We shall meet again in the mansions of glory, and there enjoy each other to all eternity. To thee, my God, I give my soul! save me by the merits of my blessed saviour! immediately she fell into convulsions, and died in half an hour.

I shall not attempt to describe the agonies with which I was seized. Her death was so unexpected, and I was so little prepared for this cruel separation, that quite distracted with my ideas, I neither spoke, eat nor slept for three days. At last, recovering myself a little, I broke into the most melancholy plaints. My sister *Bridge* and our son and daughter were in the deepest affliction; and 'twas some time before they themselves were able to exhort me to patience and resignation. As I was one morning just wak'd from a sweet sleep, my sister, our son and daughter came into my bed-chamber. My niece came up to my bed, when she spoke thus to me with a most moving air; dear Sir, I am come to beg my own life, and that of the child within me. If you will not grant it at my request, at least

call to mind what my dear aunt intreated of you in her expiring moments; this is a tribute you owe to her memory. Your tears were justly shed at first; for how could you have refrain'd from them on so afflicting an occasion? But now, every thing calls upon you to submit yourself to the will of the Creator. You oppose it, by permitting grief to prey upon you in this manner, and are ungrateful, as it were, to my darling aunt, in not granting what she so earnestly desired. Alas! dear Sir, preserve yourself for the sake of your family, which perhaps is more grieved to see you thus desponding, than at the prodigious loss they have sustained. If you refuse to comply with my desires, I am sure both myself and my child will die, for both our lives depend on your resolution. Saying these words, she threw her arms round my neck, when shedding a flood of tears, I conjure you, said she, dear Sir, be tender of your own life for the sake of your distracted family, by the dear remembrance of my tender aunt! you would envy her felicity, should you wish her to be again among us. She is possessed of never-fading bliss; let us therefore make our selves worthy of sharing it with her, by our resignation to the divine will.

I thought there was so much good sense, and so great a subject for consolation in this advice, and in what my sister and son added, that I desired them to leave me, in order that I might give a scope to my reflections. These were of service to me. Formerly I should have called philosophy to my aid, but on this occasion I had recourse to the gospel. Its instructions, and my submission to the will of heaven sooth'd my affliction, and I began to be something easier in my mind. I then got up, went into my sister's apartment, whither our son and daughter had followed her. I am come, says I, to prove to you that your exhortations have not been in vain. Heaven has heard your groans, and has granted me the support you granted me. I no longer bewail the death of my dear wife; but we will talk for ever of her virtue, her tenderness and sweet disposition. I exhort you all never to forget her, but to mention her often to me. I don't repine at the decree of heaven, but beseech it to support me in this severe trial; and that, satisfied with my resignation, God will please to support us all in the several conditions he may please to allot us. Your observation was very just, dear daughter,

daughter, when you told me that 'twas envying my dear wife's felicity, to wish her again in this frail, sublunary world. Let us firmly resolve to submit ourselves on all occasions to the will of providence; for I am persuaded that the more we resign our selves, our tranquillity will be the greater.

The sad solemnity of my dear wife's funeral being ended, I left the country, the scene of my grief, for some time. We spent three weeks in another retirement, but my daughter-in-law expecting every day, we returned hither, and two days after she was delivered of a daughter.

As I desired to keep my son with me, the better to support me in the grievous loss I had sustained, I humbly desired the prince of *Orange* to prolong the time of his absence. His highness granted it in the most generous manner possible; and at the same time, sent him some very secret commissions of the greatest importance. This prince was perfectly well acquainted with the great abilities and discretion of this young officer. He therefore employed him to transact some affairs which were afterwards of so much service to *Great Britain*, by preserving its religion, laws, and the freedom of Parliaments, and prevented the ambitious designs of *Lewis XIV.* who aspired more than ever to universal monarchy.

I now received letters of condolence from all parts, and even his majesty commanded one to be drawn up in his own name, and signed it himself. The king was pleased to express his sorrow for my great loss, and offered me a very considerable place at court, promising at the same time to take me into his most intimate confidence; and observed that business would alleviate my affliction. He also declared, that my withdrawing, and the lords abovementioned, from Court, had given him the greatest uneasiness; and affirm'd, that those who had succeeded us had not given him one good counsel. That the duke had such an ascendant over him, that he himself only bore the empty title of king: In a word, he made the finest promises imaginable. I took the liberty to answer his majesty, thanking him in the humblest manner, for the regard he was pleas'd to show me, and his affliction for my loss; but assured him, that my wife's sudden and unexpected death had weakened my constitution to so prodigious a degree, that

it would be impossible for me to fulfil the duties of the important employments which his majesty was so gracious as to offer me. That I earnestly besought him to continue his favour to me; and that in case I should be so happy as to recover my health, I would wait upon him, throw myself at his feet, and thank him for his great goodness.

My daughter-in-law being up after her delivery, which, notwithstanding the afflictions we were in, had yet been very happy, came one day into my apartment with her husband. Sir, said she, here's a letter for you from *Germany*: I know the hand, but cannot recollect whose it is. The instant I had opened it, and read the name, I will own that my breast was still capable of receiving a strong sensation of joy. Alas! dear daughter, says I, this letter is from Miss *Cecilia*, daughter to Mr. R——, whom you saw in *France*. 'Tis so, says she; how often have we corresponded together! is it possible for me to have forgot her person, and still remember her hand?

'Twas a very long letter; Miss *Cecilia* told me, that some *English* lords travelling by B——, where she and her mother, her husband and two sons and a daughter, were at that time; she heard them mention me, and the grief in which they had left me, by the unexpected death of Mrs. *Cleveland*. That she was greatly sorry for my having lost so excellent a wife. She afterwards gave me a pretty long account of the usage she had met with from the inhuman *Giffard*; declaring to me, that she chose to die rather than lose her reputation; and that this villain, in the fury of his passion, had stabb'd and left her for dead, because she refused to satiate it. That meeting with immediate succour, the effusion of her blood was stopt; and that she recovered strength enough in a week, so as to be able to go to her mother, who was oppress'd with grief at the sad murder of her husband. At last, continued she, my recovery and intreaties wrought so happy an effect on my mother, as to prevail with her to take the only resolution which could be of advantage to us, in the then deplorable state of the reform'd church in *France*; and this was, to sell by insensible degrees, upon different pretences, her lands, houses, in a word, the greatest part of her effects; to remit the monies to B—— whither we were determin'd to go. Every thing succeeded to our wishes: and we had not been long in that city,

city, before the count of D ——— thought fit to make me his wife. My spouse and I are vastly happy in one another; and I don't doubt but you will take as great a share in my happiness, as I do in your ill fortune. My best respects to Mrs. *Bridge* and her charming daughter, once my correspondent; to her spouse and their two children. You see, Sir, that I interest myself in all that concerns you, and have made a very strict enquiry into every thing. My kindest love to your two daughters, who, I hear, are sweet children. 'Tis but two days since I heard of you, and till then did not know whether you were living. I beg the favour of an answer, in which you will please to give me an account of every thing that has happened since I was torn from you; and be assured, that no one can respect you more than I do. The reason why we did not send to you during your abode at *St. Cloud*, after you was so happily reconciled with your dear spouse, was, because that both my mother and I were of opinion, that 'twas greatly for our interest, not to undeceive the publick with regard to their false opinion of my death; as this gave her a better opportunity to settle her affairs, and to succeed in our design of leaving *France*. Your most humble, &c.

This letter gave me incredible pleasure, and 'twas no small satisfaction to me to find, that she had resisted the brutal fury of *Giffard*, and had preferred death to the loss of her honour. I could not but be astonished at the infamous account the jesuit had given of this virtuous woman's conduct. However, I was determined not to mention a word of this to Miss *Cecilia*, but only to acquaint her with the fate of that infamous wretch.

I spent some days in answering this letter, and did not conceal any of the material things which had happened to me since father *Giffard* had carried her off; a most fatal day, since which I had not, till now, set my eyes upon her. That wretch, said I to her, was sent upon a mission in *England*, by way of punishment for his having stabbed you. When I myself was got into that kingdom, and appointed a member of the privy council, I heard of this detestable miscreant. Accordingly I visited him in prison, when he told me all that had happened to him since his carrying you off; as the murder of your father, his stabbing you, and his flight after that horrid action.

Engaging

Engaging afterwards in the troubles which the papists excited in *England*, he at last was seized by order of parliament; and after examining him, I told his majesty that 'twas his interest to rid himself of that villain as soon as possible. Accordingly, the king had him poisoned that very night, and I am overjoyed to find it has been in my power to revenge you, in some measure, of that villain. To conclude, I gave her a brief relation of all the reader has seen in these memoirs, and assured her, that I should have the highest esteem for her so long as I lived. I concluded, with wishing her and her family an uninterrupted series of prosperity. My daughter-in-law wrote also a long letter to her, and begg'd her to renew a correspondence which had given her so much pleasure. The countess (*Miss Cecilia*) was greatly pleased with the offer, and these two amiable persons wrote to one another very regularly.

My dear wife died in 1684, on which occasion I took a firm resolution never to engage any more in state affairs. I had found so great an uneasiness in them, that I was absolutely determined (the thought of which gave me the highest pleasure) to spend the remainder of my days in obscurity, preferring it infinitely to the vain glitter of courts. My friends used to write very often to me, and the accounts I received from them confirmed me in my resolution. There was so great a division between the king and parliament, the whigs and the tories, that the parties were still in an open war. The jesuits, by their arts, animated them, and created feuds among families. My friends would have informed me of all things, but I earnestly intreated them not to mention any particulars of that kind, I having made a vow never to engage again in publick business.

The king invited me over and over to court, assuring me again, that I should be his confident; and that he stood in the greatest need of my counsel, and would follow it in all points, firmly persuaded of my fidelity and my good intentions to serve him. 'Twas in the beginning of the year 1685 that his majesty himself wrote to me, on which occasion he repeated his desire for me to come to court. After reading the contents of his letter, I thought that as I was born his subject, I could no longer refuse his request.

Accordingly

Accordingly I resolved to go for *London*, to know what commands his majesty had for me, leaving the care of my family to Mrs. *Bridge* and her daughter. During this my son travelled quite through *England*, the motive of which was unknown to me.

I arrived in *London*, when the first thing I heard was, that the evening before, viz. *Sunday* the first of *February* 1685, the king being prevented from walking in his garden as usual, upon account of a hurt in his leg, had been taken ill in his laboratory, in which he took greater delight than became a sovereign prince. Being at the dutchess of *Portsmouth's* in the evening, he ordered some soup to be got for him; but finding it too strong, he drank but little of it. His physician being sent for, found him speechless. The king was afterwards seized with an apoplectick fit; his face turn'd back, and his features were distorted. He then was blooded, when he recovered, but was so weak, that the physicians declared a second fit would carry him off. Accordingly it seized the king on the *Thursday* following, and the day after (*February* 6) he expired about noon.

The instant I heard of his majesty's being seiz'd in the first mentioned manner. I again desired the earl of *R* —, at whose house I arrived very late, to order his servants not to mention my being there. I declared to him with what reluctance I had complied with the king's urgent solicitations, and shewed him the letters. I told him I would wait some days, in order to know whether his majesty had a second fit; but hearing of his death, I again intreated the earl not to take the least notice of my being at his house. I left *London* the *Friday* following, and arrived at my country seat, and never once stirred out of it during all the attempts which were made, in the succeeding reign, to destroy the established religion, and the constitution. King *James* having afterwards abdicated the throne, and the prince of *Orange* succeeding to it, I went to court and paid my compliments. After this I returned once more to my elegant solitude, which I could never be prevailed upon to quit; and there enjoy the most blissful tranquility, after having been so long made the sport of fortune.



